

THE RECORD

1201 Marilla Street

APPEAL

CD189-007(LC)

City Plan Commission

Hearing

05/16/2019

INDEX

1201 Marilla Street CD189-007(LC)

Certificate for Demolition or Removal	Section 1
---------------------------------------	-----------

Landmark Commission Agenda, March 4, 2019	Section 2
---	-----------

Docket Material and Power Point presentation	Section 3
--	-----------

Landmark Commission Minutes, March 4, 2019	Section 4
--	-----------

Transcript of the March 4, 2019 Landmark Commission Hearing	Section 5
---	-----------

Pioneer Cemetery Ordinance	Dallas	Section 6
Landmark Commission Nomination Form		

City of Dallas Demolition Standards	Section 7
Dallas Development Code §51A-4.501(h)(2)(F)	

Correspondence	Section 8
----------------	-----------

SECTION 1

Certificate for Demolition or Removal

1201 Marilla Street
CD189-007(LC)

Certificate for Demolition and Removal (CD) City of Dallas Landmark Commission

CD <u>189</u> - <u>007</u> (LC)
Office Use Only

1. Name of Applicant: Jennifer H. Scripps, Director of the Office of Cultural Affairs

MAILING Address: 1925 Elm Street Suite 400 City Dallas State TX Zip 75201
 Daytime Phone: 214-671-2828 Alternate Phone: _____
 Relationship of Applicant to Owner: The owner is the City of Dallas. Jennifer Scripps is an employee of the City of Dallas.

ADDRESS OF PROPERTY TO BE DEMOLISHED: 1201 Marilla Street Zip 75201
 Historic District: Pioneer Cemetery H-114

RECEIVED BY

FEB 20 2019

Proposed Work:

2. Indicate which demolition standard you are applying (choose ONE option):
- Replace with more appropriate/compatible structure
 - No economically viable use
 - Imminent threat to public health / safety
 - Demolition noncontributing structure because newer than period of significance
 - Intent to apply for certificate of demolition pursuant to 51-A-4.501(i) of the Dallas City Code;

Current Planning

Certificate of Demolition for residential structures with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area pursuant to a court order

3. Describe work and submit required documents for the demolition standard you are applying:
(please see attached checklist)

Disassembly, remove and transfer to the storage on City of Dallas property-The Confederate Monument in Pioneer Cemetery

Application Deadline:
 This form must be completed before the Dallas Landmark Commission can consider the approval of any demolition or removal of a structure within a Historic District. This form along with any supporting documentation **must be filed by the first Thursday of each month by 12:00 Noon so it may be reviewed by the Landmark Commission on the first Monday of the following month, 1500 Marilla 5BN, Dallas, Texas, 75201. (See official calendar for exceptions to deadline and meeting dates).**

Use Section 51A-3.103 OF THE Dallas City Code and the enclosed checklist as a guide to completing the application. Incomplete applications cannot be reviewed and will be returned to you for more information. You are encouraged to contact a Preservation Planner at 214/670-4209 to make sure your application is complete.

Other: In the event of a denial, you have the right to an appeal. You are encouraged to attend the Landmark Commission hearing the first Monday of each month. Information regarding the history of certificates for individual addresses is also available for review.

4. Signature of Applicant: Jennifer Scripps Date: 2/20/19

5. Signature of Owner: [Signature] Date: 2/21/19

(IF NOT APPLICANT)

Review the enclosed Review and Action Form
 Memorandum to the Building Official, a Certificate for Demolition and Removal has been:

- APPROVED.** Please release the building permit.
- APPROVED WITH CONDITIONS.** Please release the building permit in accordance with any conditions.
- DENIED.** Please do not release the building permit or allow work.
- DENIED WITHOUT PREJUDICE..** Please do not release the building permit or allow work.

[Signature] _____ Date 3/6/19

Sustainable Development and Construction

NOTE: THIS APPLICATION WILL EXPIRE 180 DAYS AFTER THE APPROVAL DATE

SECTION 2

Agenda

March 4, 2019

See Pages 7, Item #1

Landmark Commission Agenda
Monday, March 4, 2019

Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).

5. Paint main structure. Brand: Pittsburgh Paint. Color: Main - PPG1041-3 "Billowing Clouds." Trim - PPG1013-6 "Gray Flannel." Accent - PPG1161-4 "Blue Promise"– Approve – Approve specifications dated 3/4/2016 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).

Task Force Recommendation:

1. Remove two windows on the south elevation of main structure – Approve
2. Replace eight aluminum windows with new wood windows on rear of main structure – Approved with conditions - Provide more detail on each window. 1-over-1 is typical, introducing 3-over-1 isn't approved.
3. Replace front and rear entry door with new doors and remove three door openings on rear of main structure. – Deny without prejudice - Deny door selection. Revise door selection as discussed to be period appropriate.
4. Plant twelve boxwood hedges in front yard – Approve - Approve trees in front easement.
5. Paint main structure. Brand: Pittsburgh Paint. Color: Main - PPG1041-3 "Billowing Clouds." Trim - PPG1013-6 "Gray Flannel." Accent - PPG1161-4 "Blue Promise" – Approve - Approve colors.

DISCUSSION ITEMS:

1. 1201 MARILLA ST

Pioneer Cemetery
CD189-007(LC)
Liz Casso

Request:

Remove Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance.

Applicant: City of Dallas - Jennifer Scripps

Application Filed: 02/07/19

Staff Recommendation:

Remove Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance. – Approve – The proposed removal meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to the historic overlay district; it was installed after the period of significance; and removal of the monument will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.

Task Force Recommendation:

Remove Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance - Pending the Task Force on Monday,

Landmark Commission Agenda

Monday, March 4, 2019

March 4, 2019.

2. 5917 REIGER AVE

Junius Heights Historic District
CA189-301(JKA)
Jennifer Anderson

Request:

Install solar panels on roof.

Applicant: Smith, Amy

Application Filed: 02/07/19

Staff Recommendation:

Install solar panels on roof. – Deny without Prejudice – The proposed work does not meet the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(i) because it is inconsistent with preservation criteria Section 6.4 stating that mechanical equipment, skylights, and solar panels on the roof must be set back or screened so that they are not visible to a person standing at ground level on the opposite side of any adjacent right-of-way.

Task Force Recommendation:

Install solar panels on roof – Deny without prejudice - Cannot be visible from the street.

3. 5935 VICTOR ST

Junius Heights Historic District
CA189-300(JKA)
Jennifer Anderson

Request:

Install 7' board-on-board fence in rear and side yards.

Applicant: Mccaffrey, Michael

Application Filed: 02/07/19

Staff Recommendation:

Install 7' board-on-board fence in rear and side yards. – Deny without Prejudice – The proposed work does not meet the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(i) because it is inconsistent with preservation criteria Section 3.6(a)(3) stating that fences in the cornerside yards are not allowed in front of the side façade of the main building unless Landmark Commission determines that more security or screening is necessary.

Task Force Recommendation:

Install 7' board-on-board fence in rear and side yards – Deny without prejudice - The proposed work does not meet the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(i) because it is inconsistent with preservation criteria Section 3.6(a)(3) stating that fences in the corner side yards are not allowed in front of the side facade of the main building unless Landmark Commission determines that more security or screening is necessary.

4. 4803 GASTON AVE

Peak's Suburban Addition Neighborhood Historic District
CA189-304(MP)
Marsha Prior

Request:

1. Replace rear door with wood door. Work initiated without a Certificate of Appropriateness.
2. Remove tree in front yard.
3. Install landscaping in front yard.

Applicant: Moody, Travis

Application Filed: 02/07/19

Staff Recommendation:

1. Replace rear door with wood door. Work initiated

SECTION 3

- Docket Material
- Power Point presentation

**LANDMARK COMMISSION****MARCH 4, 2019**

FILE NUMBER: CD189-007(LC)
LOCATION: 1201 Marilla St (1102 Young St)
STRUCTURE: Non-Contributing
COUNCIL DISTRICT: 2
ZONING: CA-1(A)

PLANNER: Liz Casso
DATE FILED: February 20, 2019
DISTRICT: Pioneer Cemetery (H-114)
MAPSCO: 45-P
CENSUS TRACT: 0204.00

APPLICANT: City of Dallas, Office of Cultural Affairs

REPRESENTATIVE: Jennifer Scripps

OWNER: CITY OF DALLAS

REQUEST:

Remove Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance.

BACKGROUND / HISTORY:

7/1/2002 – Landmark Commission approved the removal of the Texas 36 World War II monument from the cemetery (no case number).

11/4/2002 – Landmark Commission approved installation of a grave marker for Pierre Dusseau (no case number).

7/7/2003 – Landmark Commission approved installation of a grave marker for John W. Lane (no case number).

ANALYSIS:

On February 13, 2019, Dallas City Council voted to move forward with procedures to remove the Confederate Monument from Pioneer Cemetery. Pioneer Cemetery is a City of Dallas landmark, therefore a Certificate of Demolition or Removal from the Landmark Commission is required. This application is for removal of the monument from the cemetery only. It is not a request to demolish or destroy the monument. Should this request be approved, the monument would be removed in pieces and appropriately put into storage.

Pioneer Cemetery was designated a City of Dallas Landmark in 2002. Its designation was intended to honor Dallas' early pioneers buried in the cemetery who contributed to the early development of the city. Pioneer Cemetery includes the remnants of four

separate cemeteries: the Masonic Cemetery, the Odd Fellow's cemetery, the Jewish cemetery and the City cemetery. Notable citizens buried in the cemetery include multiple Dallas mayors like John Crockett, mayor in 1857 and 1859; multiple elected officials like Nicholas Darnell, who was Speaker of the House in 1842 and a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1845, and multiple doctors, etc. The period of significance for the cemetery is 1849, the date of the earliest known burial, to 1921, the date of the last burial.

The Confederate Monument is a feature in the cemetery that was installed there in 1961, after the period of significance for the cemetery. It is located at the southeast corner of the cemetery, in front of the easternmost portion of the Dallas Convention Center. The monument consists of a Confederate soldier facing south on top of the obelisk (based on Robert Hugh Gaston (1844-1862)). At the southwest corner is Jefferson Davis, President of the Southern States of the Confederacy (holding scroll); southeast corner is General Albert Sydney Johnson (hand at waist with short saber); at the northeast is Brigadier-General Stonewall Jackson (holding a hat and a saber) and at the northwest is General Robert E. Lee, commander in chief of the Confederate Army (holding binoculars with long saber.) The monument is marble with a granite base; the dimension of the central figure and obelisk is 60-ft high and the four figures are 19-ft high including the base. There are inscriptions on all four sides of the base of the obelisk and portrait rondel representing General W. T. Cabell on the west side.

The monument was commissioned by the Daughters of the Confederacy and installed in Old City Park in 1896. It was designed by Frank Teich, a San Antonio sculptor, originally from Germany, who is believed to have constructed at least one-third of all Confederate monuments in Texas. Due to the construction of R. L. Thornton Freeway in the 1960s, which erased most of the park, the monument had to be relocated. Pioneer Cemetery was selected as the new location because it had ample space available for the monument, would be more visible to the public brought in by events held at the Memorial Auditorium, and was to be part of a larger plan to restore the neighboring cemetery.

The original portions of the Dallas Convention Center, first opened in 1973, wrapped around the eastern and southern exposures of the monument, essentially blocking off the monument from public view from those directions. Concrete steps and retaining walls were also installed close to the eastern and southern sides of the monument as part of an entrance plaza for the Convention Center.

Although the landmark nomination form makes note of the Confederate Monument and its move near the cemetery, no specific mention of the monument is made in the preservation criteria, with the monument notated oddly as the 'Civil War Memorial' on the Exhibit B, which shows the limits of the historic overlay. While the preservation criteria notes that monuments are protected, there are several monuments and sculptures within the cemetery proper that the language might be referencing instead of just the Confederate Monument.

The Confederate Monument, and the area around the monument may have also been included as part of the historic overlay in an effort to protect unmarked graves like those

unearthed in 1999 when Ceremonial Drive was constructed on the southern side of the cemetery.

While Staff acknowledges the Confederate Monument is an impressive historic sculpture, as well as the oldest piece of city-owned art, it unfortunately is removed from its original historic context (Old City Park), although its placement closer to the burial place of Civil War veterans is admirable. However, Pioneer Cemetery is significant for being a cemetery, and the monument was not part of the original development of the cemetery or part of an overall landscaping or plan for the cemetery.

In addition, guidance from the National Park Service is that if a building is moved into a National Register district or a National Register structure is moved from its original location or context, the structure is automatically considered 'non-contributing.' Regardless of whether the monument has been on site for 58 years, Staff would consider it 'non-contributing' based on that National Park Service guidance. Plus, most City of Dallas historic districts that are also National Register districts encompass 'non-contributing' structures based on age or inappropriate alterations so the inclusion of a 'non-contributing' structure like the Confederate Monument to a local historic overlay district is not unusual or out of the ordinary.

Considering the following facts that the monument is not an original historic feature of the cemetery, was moved to its current location after the cemetery's period of significance, and its removal and storage would not have an adverse impact on the historic character and integrity of historic overlay district, Staff is recommending approval of the Certificate for Demolition or Removal.

STAFF RECOMMENDATION:

Remove Confederate monument from cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance. – Approve – The proposed removal meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to the historic overlay district; it was installed after the period of significance; and removal of the monument will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.

TASK FORCE RECOMMENDATION:

Remove Confederate monument from cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance. – Pending the Task Force meeting on Monday, March 4, 2019.

Staff note: The application for removal of the monument was submitted after the regular Task Force meeting took place at the request of the City Manager's Office. Therefore there is no Task Force recommendation for this item at this time. A special Task Force meeting has been scheduled to take place on March 4th prior to the Landmark Commission public meetings. The Task Force recommendation will be presented to the Landmark Commission during their meetings on March 4th.

**Certificate for Demolition and Removal (CD)
City of Dallas Landmark Commission**

CD 189 - 007 (LC)
 Office Use Only

1. Name of Applicant: Jennifer H. Scripps, Director of the Office of Cultural Affairs
 MAILING Address: 1925 Elm Street Suite 400 City Dallas State TX Zip 75201
 Daytime Phone: 214-671-2828 Alternate Phone: _____
 Relationship of Applicant to Owner: The owner is the City of Dallas. Jennifer Scripps is an employee of the City of Dallas.

ADDRESS OF PROPERTY TO BE DEMOLISHED: 1201 Marilla Street Zip 75201
 Historic District: Pioneer Cemetery H-114

Proposed Work:

RECEIVED BY

2. Indicate which demolition standard you are applying (choose ONE option):
 Replace with more appropriate/compatible structure
 No economically viable use
 Imminent threat to public health / safety
 Demolition noncontributing structure because newer than period of significance
 Intent to apply for certificate of demolition pursuant to 51-A-4.501(i) of the Dallas City Code,
 Certificate of Demolition for residential structures with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area pursuant to a court order

FEB 20 2019

Current Planning

3. Describe work and submit required documents for the demolition standard you are applying:
 (please see attached checklist)

Disassembly, remove and transfer to the storage on City of Dallas property-The Confederate Monument in Pioneer Cemetery

Application Deadline:

This form must be completed before the Dallas Landmark Commission can consider the approval of any demolition or removal of a structure within a Historic District. This form along with any supporting documentation **must be filed by the first Thursday of each month by 12:00 Noon so it may be reviewed by the Landmark Commission on the first Monday of the following month**, 1500 Marilla 5BN, Dallas, Texas, 75201. (See official calendar for exceptions to deadline and meeting dates).

Use Section 51A-3.103 OF THE Dallas City Code and the enclosed checklist as a guide to completing the application. Incomplete applications cannot be reviewed and will be returned to you for more information. You are encouraged to contact a Preservation Planner at 214/670-4209 to make sure your application is complete.

Other: In the event of a denial, you have the right to an appeal. You are encouraged to attend the Landmark Commission hearing the first Monday of each month. Information regarding the history of certificates for individual addresses is also available for review.

4. Signature of Applicant: Jennifer Scripps Date: 2/20/19
 5. Signature of Owner: [Signature] Date: 2/21/19

(IF NOT APPLICANT)

Review the enclosed Review and Action Form

Memorandum to the Building Official, a Certificate for Demolition and Removal has been:

- APPROVED.** Please release the building permit.
- APPROVED WITH CONDITIONS.** Please release the building permit in accordance with any conditions.
- DENIED.** Please do not release the building permit or allow work.
- DENIED WITHOUT PREJUDICE..** Please do not release the building permit or allow work.

 Sustainable Development and Construction Date

NOTE: THIS APPLICATION WILL EXPIRE 180 DAYS AFTER THE APPROVAL DATE

Certificate for Demolition & Removal

City of Dallas Historic Preservation

Rev. 3/27/01, 2-11-02, 1-29-03, 5-1-04, 7-8-04, 2-28-05, 06-05-18

Affidavit

Before me the undersigned on this day personally appeared Joey Zapata, Assistant City Manager who on his or her oath certifies that the statements contained in the application for a certificate of demolition and removal are true and correct to the best of his or her knowledge and that he or she is the owner, principle, or authorized representative of the subject property.

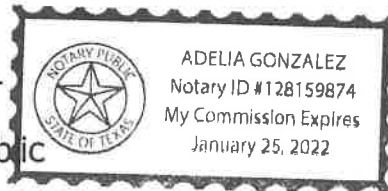
Joey Zapata

Affiant's signature

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 21st day of February, 2019

Adelia Gonzalez

Notary Public



Affidavit

Before me the undersigned on this day personally appeared

Jennifer Scripps who on his or her oath certifies that the statements contained in the application for a certificate of demolition and removal are true and correct to the best of his or her knowledge and that he or she is the owner, principle, or authorized representative of the subject property.

Jennifer Scripps

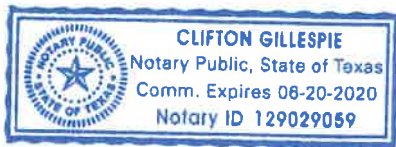
Affiant's signature

State of Texas
County of Dallas

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 20th day of February, 2019

Clifton Gillespie

Notary Public



Memorandum



CITY OF DALLAS

DATE February 20, 2019

TO Kris Sweckard, Director, Sustainable Development & Construction

SUBJECT **Confederate Monument at Pioneer Cemetery Landmark Commission Hearing**

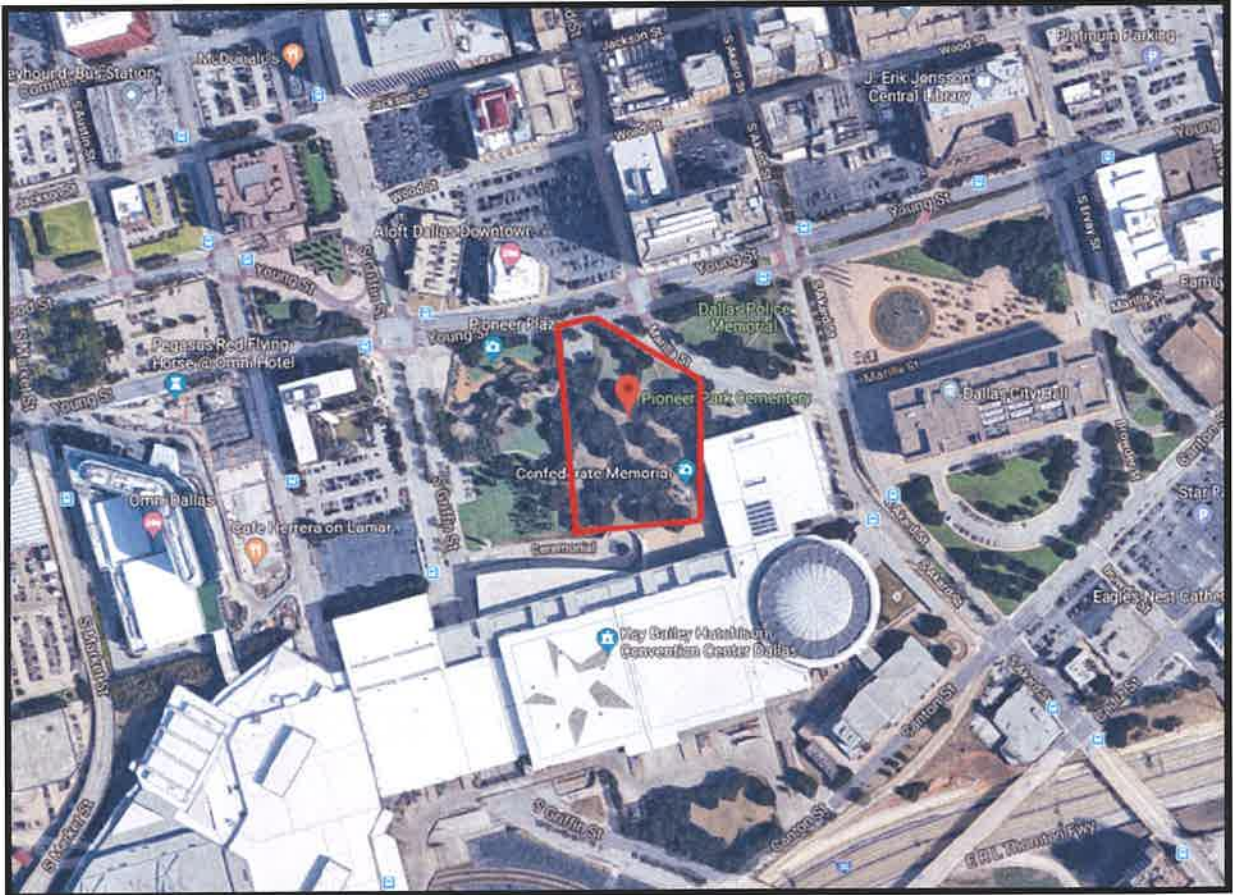
I am requesting that the certificate of demolition and removal for the Confederate Monument at Pioneer Cemetery be scheduled for the Landmark Commission hearing on March 4, 2019.

Please contact me if you have any questions or concerns.

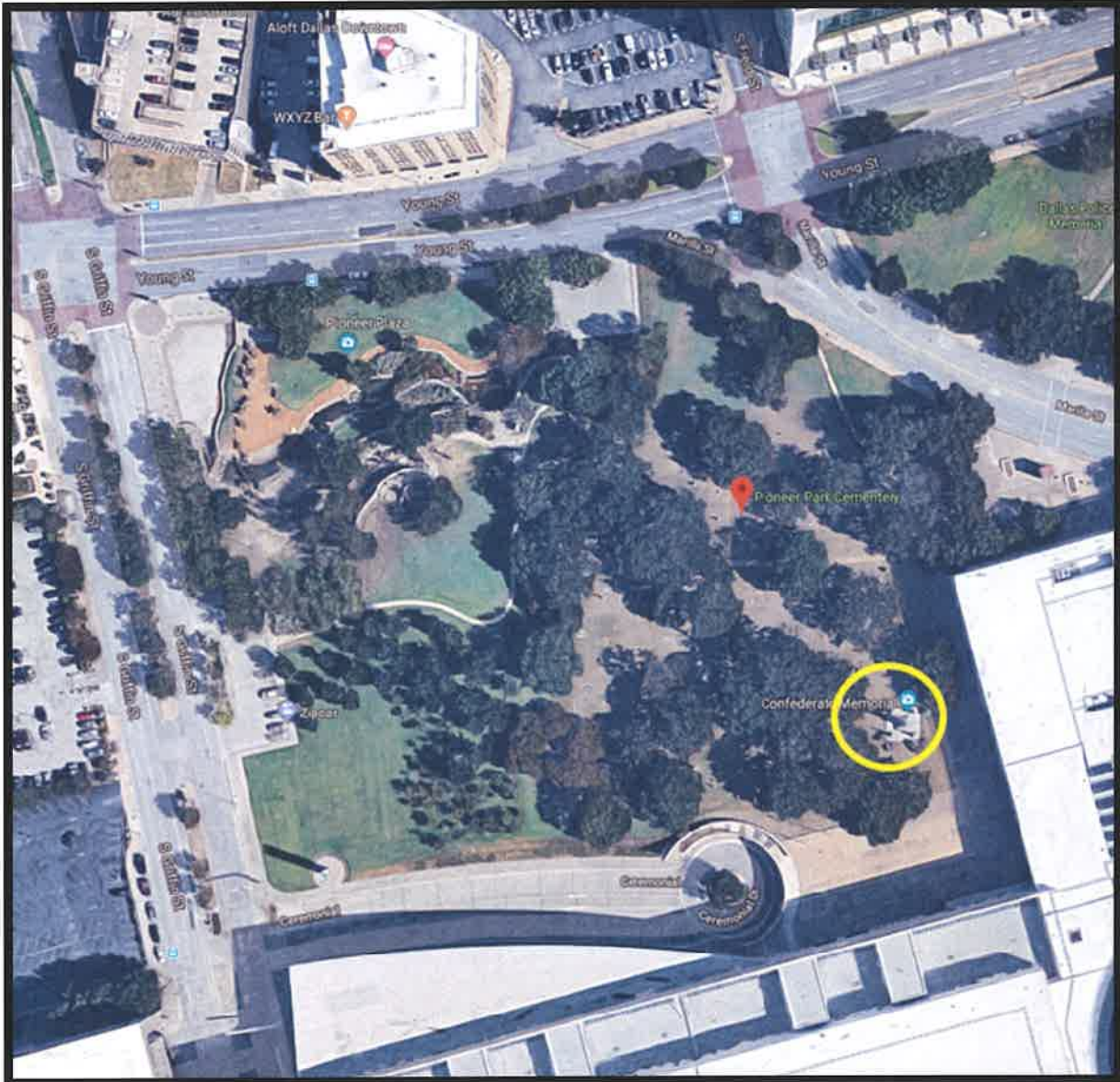
A handwritten signature in blue ink, appearing to read 'Joey Zapata'.

Joey Zapata
Assistant City Manager

c: T C. Broadnax, City Manager
Chris Caso, City Attorney (Interim)
Biliera Johnson, City Secretary
Kimberly Bizer Tolbert, Chief of Staff to the City Manager
Majed A. Al-Ghafry, Assistant City Manager
Jon Fortune, Assistant City Manager
Nadia Chandler Hardy, Assistant City Manager and Chief Resilience Officer
M. Elizabeth Reich, Chief Financial Officer
Laila Alequresh, Chief Innovation Officer



Site Aerial



Close-Up of Site Aerial (Confederate Monument highlighted above in yellow)

24938

021629

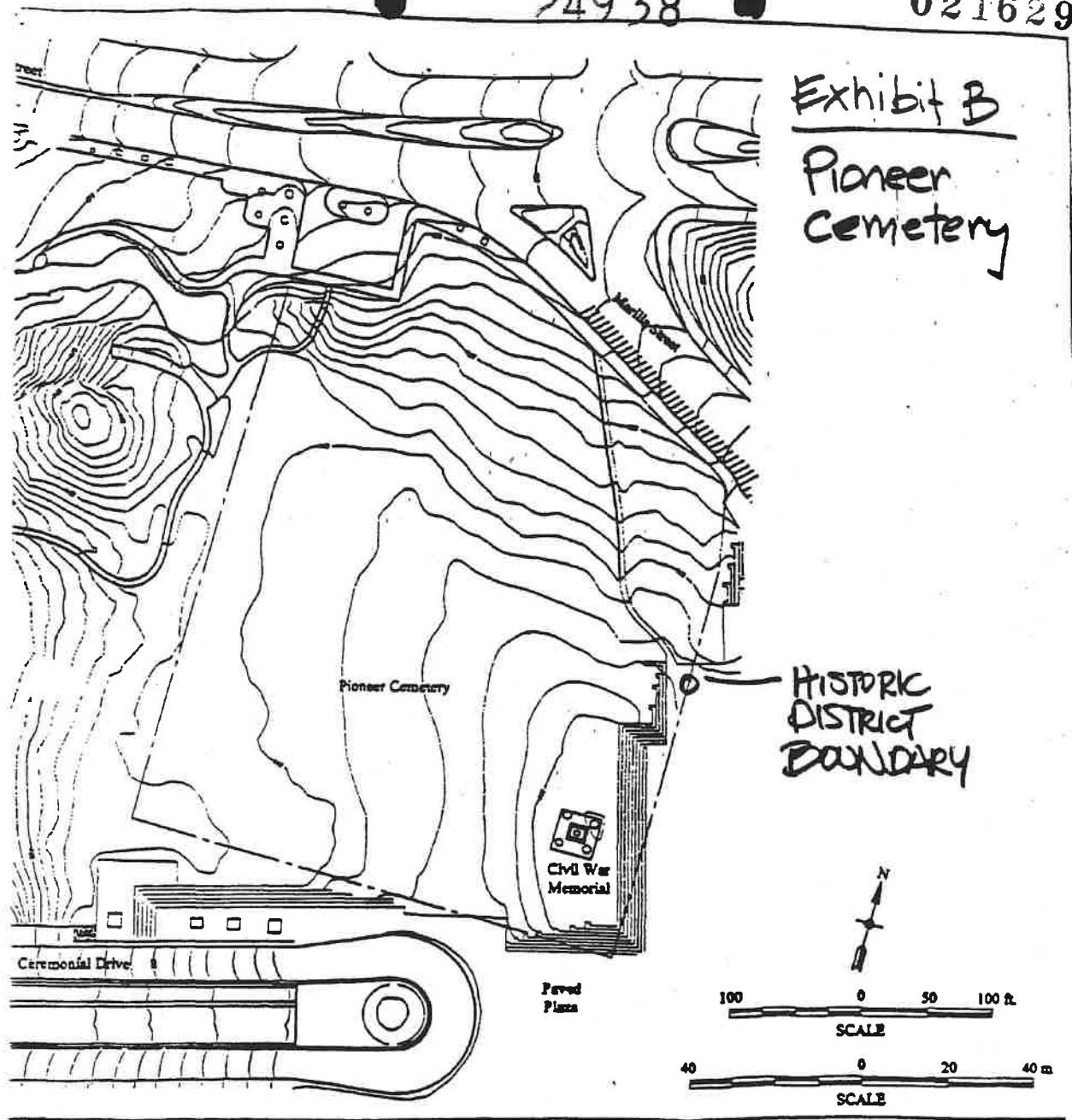


Exhibit B of the Pioneer Cemetery indicating boundary of historic overlay. Confederate Monument notated as 'Civil War Memorial' is located in the lower right hand corner of the overlay.



Existing Confederate Monument (view facing south)



Existing Confederate Monument (view facing west)



Existing Confederate Monument (view facing northwest)



Existing Confederate Monument (view facing east)



Pioneer Cemetery – View facing west from Marilla St



Pioneer Cemetery – View facing south from Marilla & Young St Intersection



Streetscape – Facing Northeast from Marilla Street



Streetscape – Facing Northwest from Marilla Street




Streetscape – Facing Southeast from Marilla Street (across street to the east)



Streetscape – Facing Southwest from Marilla Street (across street to the east)

Silverlake Conservation August 2002		sculpture + architecture
1824 Micheltorena St., Los Angeles CA 90026 voice / fax: 323 669 8229 email: silverlakecons@mindepring.com		
The City of Dallas: Survey of Selected Works		
Accession Number	CD.1896.1	
Title of Work	Confederate Monument	
Artist Name	Frank Teich	
Date of Work	1896	
Dimensions	60 x 30 x 30 feet	
Materials	Marble and granite	
Location	Pioneer Cemetery 1400 Marilla MAPSCO 45P	
Description		



Condition Details

Aesthetic Condition Excellent Good Fair Poor
 Material Stability Excellent Good Fair Poor

Condition Notes

The sculpture is in excellent overall condition given its size, age, and outdoor location. There is a small amount of delaminating stone on the roughly finished band above the inscription. The 4 engraved text panels all have some loss of surface materials which makes them somewhat difficult to read. There are small chips on the engraved inscription on both the front and back of the monument. There is biological growth on many of the elements, notably on undercuts and protected areas such as Robert E. Lee's proper right ear. There are drip marks on all four columns supporting the peripheral figures. There is iron staining on some of the elements. The monument is covered with superficial dirt and grime due to its outdoor location. There appears to be some kind of coating on the polished surfaces.

<p>Structure</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Complete <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Sound <input type="checkbox"/> Loss(es) <input type="checkbox"/> Cracks <input type="checkbox"/> Splits <input type="checkbox"/> Warping/Distortion 	<p>Surface</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input type="checkbox"/> Dents <input type="checkbox"/> Fraying <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Delamination <input type="checkbox"/> Missing Parts <input type="checkbox"/> Loose Parts <input type="checkbox"/> Frozen Parts 	<p>Biological Activity</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Active <input type="checkbox"/> Abandoned <input type="checkbox"/> Insect <input type="checkbox"/> Rodent <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Fungus <input type="checkbox"/> Mold
---	---	---

<p>Chemical</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input type="checkbox"/> Salt Efflorescence <input type="checkbox"/> Staining <input type="checkbox"/> Color Change/Fading <input type="checkbox"/> Embrittlement/Hardening 	<p>Metal</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input type="checkbox"/> Copper Corrosion <input type="checkbox"/> Iron Rust <input type="checkbox"/> Tarnish <input type="checkbox"/> Stainless Steel Rusting
---	---

<p>Surface Coating</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input type="checkbox"/> Blended Wax <input type="checkbox"/> Shattered Wax <input type="checkbox"/> Unsaturated Wax <input type="checkbox"/> Failing Acrylic Lacquer <input type="checkbox"/> Peeling Oil or Lacquer <input type="checkbox"/> Failed unknown coating 	<p>Previous Treatment</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Stable <input type="checkbox"/> Unstable <input type="checkbox"/> Unesthetic <input type="checkbox"/> Inappropriate <input type="checkbox"/> Fading
--	--

Condition Report, 2002

CD189-007(LC)

D1-17

Advertisement  [Hide Details](#)

Dallas Morning News - April 29, 1897 [Browse Issues](#)

Article Type: Advertisement Page: 5 Location: Dallas, Texas

Copyright: © This entire product and/or portions thereof are copyrighted by N

Page 5

< [Previous](#) | Pages | [Next](#) >



1 of 4 matches



City Laws and Official Publications.

PROCLAMATION.

Dallas, Tex., April 29, 1897.—To the people of Dallas: The city **council** having declared to-day, the 29th instant, a holiday, and directed the different departments of the city to take part in the parade incident to the unveiling of the **confederate monument**, and requested the people of the city to observe the day and take part in said ceremonies, I hereby make proclamation of these facts and request the people of Dallas, as far as they can do so, to observe the day as a holiday, and to give their presence and render all the assistance in their power toward making the day a success.

In testimony whereof I have hereto signed my name and have caused the seal of the city to be affixed this 28th day of April, A. D., 1897. **BRYAN T. BARRY**, mayor.
T. L. LAWHON, city secretary.

Dallas Morning News Article, 1897



Image of Confederate Monument when located in Old City Park. The Ambassador Hotel is the red brick building in the background.

Monument Due Move From Park

Dallas' 66-foot Confederate monument will leave its 64-year-old home in City Park soon and move south into the Odd Fellows Cemetery near Dallas Memorial Auditorium.

Construction of R. L. Thornton Freeway through the old park evicted the big stone obelisk—and the City Council Monday will be asked to advertise for bids for the big job of moving the monument, Park Director L. B. Houston said.

The new location in Odd Fellows Cemetery at DeSoto and Masonic "will provide ample space in which to place Confederate monument without molesting in any way any of the graves within the cemetery," said Houston.

"With the additional traffic brought into this area by the Dallas Memorial Auditorium and the recent opening of DeSoto, the monument will be seen now by many visitors," said the park official.

Eventually, the city hopes to have a suitable and attractive city park in the block adjacent to the auditorium and bounded by DeSoto, Marilla and Akard. Dallas owns all of the needed 7.2 acres except 2.5 acres now under negotiation.

Both the Odd Fellows and Masonic cemeteries were turned over to the city but permission was sought, successfully, from the IOOF to install the monument in the proposed location.

The Thomas J. Rusk (Dallas) chapter, Sons of the Republic of Texas, first suggested moving the Confederate monument into Pioneer Cemetery (the old Masonic and Odd Fellows burial grounds).

If the city can acquire five remaining privately owned tracts, it can adorn the block on the downtown side of the auditorium with attractive greenery, other historic monuments, retain the pioneers' graves, and simultaneously provide an appropriate setting for the \$3,500,000 auditorium, Houston added.

The Historical Dallas Morning News

[http://infoweb.newsbank.com/iw-search/we/HistArchive/?p_product=.](http://infoweb.newsbank.com/iw-search/we/HistArchive/?p_product=)

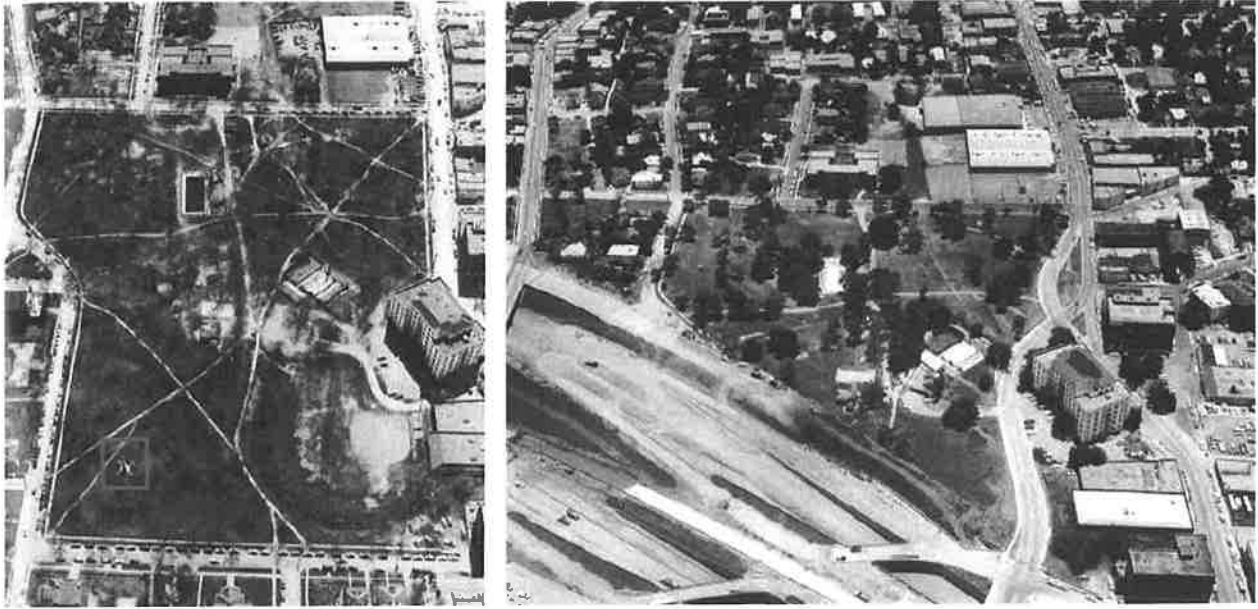
To print, select from the options below. First choose what to print: image only, image and citation, or citation only. Next choose a paper size and page layout, making sure your printer settings match. Then click your browser's Print function.

Headline: Monument due Move from Park; Article Type: News/Opinion
Paper: Dallas Morning News; Date: 04-16-1961; Page: 8; Location: Dallas, Texas

Dallas Morning News Article, 1961

CD189-007(LC)

D1-20



Aerials of Old City Park before and during construction of R. L. Thornton Freeway looking south. The Confederate Monument in its original location was in the northeast corner of the park, notated by the red box.

In 1961, due to plans to construct R.L. Thornton Freeway, the Confederate Monument was moved from the area of Old City Park where it had been for sixty-five years to its present location in Pioneer Park. This sculptor chosen for the monument was Frank Teich from San Antonio. The efforts to raise the sum of \$4500.00 were expanded by the Daughters of the Confederacy. The Dallas UDC Chapter gave concerts, served dinners, and all sorts of events to raise the necessary funds. The monument was dedicated in 1896 with a daylong celebration and parade. The daughter of Jefferson Davis was present for the occasion.²⁷ Over a century later in 1997 the Dallas Chapter 6 of the UDC rededicated the monument that had been restored after so many years of erosion and neglect.²⁸

Reference of the Confederate Monument in the Pioneer Cemetery landmark nomination form.

**PRESERVATION CRITERIA CITED FOR STAFF RECOMMENDATION
Pioneer Cemetery (H-114), Ordinance No. 24938, Exhibit A**

2.0 Definitions

2.12 MONUMENT means a commemorative marker, pylon, or sculpture that memorializes a person, place, or historic event.

4.0 Grave Markers, Monuments, and Tombs

4.1 Existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are protected.

6.0 Protected Features

6.1 The following elements are considered important features and are protected:

(b) Monuments

**DALLAS CITY CODE
Section 51A-4.501. Historic Overlay District**

(g) Certificate of Appropriateness.

(6) Standard certificate of appropriateness review procedure.

(C) Standard for approval. The landmark commission must grant the application if it determines that:

(i) for contributing structures:

(aa) the proposed work is consistent with the regulations contained in this section and the preservation criteria contained in the historic overlay district ordinance;

(bb) the proposed work will not have an adverse effect on the architectural features of the structure;

(cc) the proposed work will not have an adverse effect on the historic overlay district; and

(dd) the proposed work will not have an adverse effect on the future preservation, maintenance and use of the structure or the historic overlay district.

TASK FORCE RECOMMENDATION REPORT
CENTRAL BUSINESS DISTRICT/WEST END/INDIVIDUAL

DATE: 3/4/2019
TIME: 8:30am – 9:00am
MEETING PLACE: Dallas City Hall, 1500 Marilla 5BN

Applicant Name: City of Dallas/ Jennifer Scripps
Address: **1201 Marilla St (H-114; Pioneer Cemetery)**
Date of CA/CD Request: 2/20/2019

RECOMMENDATION:

Approve Approve w/ conditions Deny Deny w/o prejudice
 Comments only

Recommendation / comments/ basis:

COMMENTS THAT THE APPLICATION BE APPROVED AS SUBMITTED
AS THE STRUCTURE IS NON-CONTRIBUTING TO THE OVERLAY DISTRICT;
NEWER THAN THE PERIOD OF HISTORIC SIGNIFICANCE; AND
REMOVAL WILL NOT AFFECT, ADVERSELY, THE HISTORIC CHARACTER
OR INTEGRITY OF THE OVERLAY DISTRICT

Task force members present

<input type="checkbox"/> Gary C. Coffman (Chair)	<input type="checkbox"/> Justin Curtsinger (Vice Chair)	<input type="checkbox"/> VACANT (Ind. Resident)
<input type="checkbox"/> Morgan Harrison	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Charles Neel	<input type="checkbox"/> VACANT (Alternate)
<input type="checkbox"/> Carolina Pace	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> James Adams	<input type="checkbox"/> VACANT (Alternate)

Ex Officio staff members Present Liz Casso

Simply Majority Quorum: yes no (four makes a quorum)

Maker:

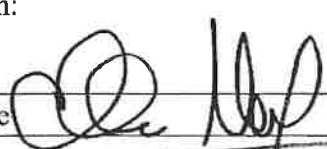
2nd:

Task Force members in favor:

Task Force members opposed:

Basis for opposition:

CHAIR, Task Force



DATE 3/4/2019

The task force recommendation will be reviewed by the Landmark Commission in Room 5ES, starting at 9:00 with a staff briefing.

The Landmark Commission public hearing begins at 1:00 pm in Room 6EN, the Council Chamber, which allows the applicant and citizens to provide public comment.

Discussion Item #1: 1201 Marilla St



Existing Monument (View facing northeast)

District: Pioneer Cemetery (H-114)

Request: Remove Confederate monument from cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance.

Staff Recommendation: Approve

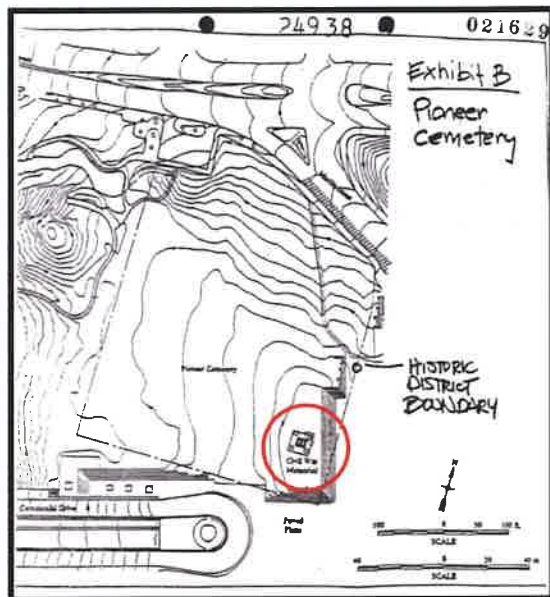
Task Force Recommendation: Pending Task Force Meeting on March 4th



Monument Location



Site Aerial Close-up



Preservation Criteria Exhibit Map



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Existing Monument



View Facing South



View Facing West



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Existing Monument



View Facing Northwest



View Facing East



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Context – Views Into Pioneer Cemetery



View Facing West from Marilla St



View Facing South from Marilla & Young St Intersection



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Historic Images



Postcard Image of Confederate Monument when located in Old City Park. The Ambassador Hotel is the red brick building in the background.



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Historic Aerials of Old City Park Before & During Construction of R. L. Thornton Freeway
(View facing south)

Before



During



The Confederate Monument in its original location was in the northeast corner of the park, notated by the red box.



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Historic Images



Aerial image of Pioneer Cemetery, circa 1965 (view facing northwest)



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Condition Report, 2002

Silverlake Conservation MARCH 2002 sculpture + architecture

1724 McJannet St., Los Angeles CA 90028 phone /fax 323 681 8229 email silverlakeconservation@gmail.com

The City of Dallas: Survey of Selected Works

Accession Number: CD189-1

Title of Work: Confederate Monument

Artist Name: Frank Tait


Date of Work: 1896

Dimensions: 60 x 30 x 30 feet

Materials: Marble and granite

Location: Pioneer Cemetery 1400 Marilla MAPSCO 45P

Description:



Condition Details

Aesthetic Condition: Excellent Good Fair Poor **Material Stability:** Excellent Good Fair Poor

Condition Notes:

The sculpture is in excellent overall condition given its size, age, and outdoor location. There is a small amount of delimiting stone on the roughly finished base above the inscription. The 4 engraved side panels all have some missing on both the front and back of the monument. There is biological growth on many of the elements, notably on undercuts and protected areas such as Robert L. Lee's proper right eye. There are dip marks on all four columns supporting the peripheral figures. There is iron staining on some of the elements. The monument is covered with superficial dirt and grime due to its outdoor location. There appears to be some kind of coating on the polished surfaces.

<p>Structure</p> <p><input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Complete</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Missing</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Cracked</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Loose</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Spalling/Discoloration</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Missing Parts</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Missing Panels</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Missing Plaster</p>	<p>Surface</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Abrasion</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Stain</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Discoloration</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Low</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Surface Pitting</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Chipping/Flaking</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Cracking/Checking</p>	<p>Biological Activity</p> <p><input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Active</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Abundant</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Low</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> None</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Pung</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Mold</p>
<p>Chemical</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Salt Accumulation</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Sealing</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Color Change/Flaking</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Fingerprinting/Handwriting</p>	<p>Material</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Copper Corrosion</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Iron Rust</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Tarnish</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Stainless Steel Rusting</p>	<p>Surface Coating</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Beeswax</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Shellac Wax</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Unseasoned Wax</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Polishing Acrylic Lacquer</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Polishing Oil or Lacquer</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Polished unknown coating</p>
<p>Previous Treatment</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Stable</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Unstable</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Unseasoned</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Inappropriate</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> Polishing</p>		

Condition Report, 2002



DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Standard for approval: The landmark commission shall deny the application unless it makes the following findings:

(D) The landmark Commission must deny an application to demolish or remove a structure that is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historic significance unless it finds that :

- (i) the structure is non-contributing to the historic overlay district;**
- (ii) the structure is newer than the period of significance for the historic overlay district; and**
- (iii) demolition of the structure will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.**

Dallas Development Code: No. 19455, Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D)



City
of
Dallas

DALLAS LANDMARK COMMISSION
CASE #CD189-007(LC)

March 4, 2019

Staff Recommendation:

Remove Confederate monument from cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance.

Approve – The proposed removal meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to the historic overlay district; it was installed after the period of significance; and removal of the monument will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.



SECTION 4

Minutes

March 4, 2019

See Pages 5 - 6, Item #1

Install two flat attached signs on south elevation. – Approve – Approve drawings dated 3/4/19 with the finding the proposed work is consistent with preservation criteria Section 5.6 for signs, Section 51A-7.1005(c) for flat attached signs on Type A facades and meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(i).

9. 509 MAIN ST

West End Historic District
CA189-332(LC)
Liz Casso

Replace windows on Criminal Courts Building. – Approve – Approve drawings and images dated 3/4/19 with the finding the proposed work is consistent with preservation criteria Section 5.0 for construction and renovation and meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(i).

10. 305 S WILLOMET AVE

Winnetka Heights Historic District
CA189-286(MLP)
Melissa Parent

1. Remove two windows on the south elevation of main structure. – Approve – Approve site plan dated 3/4/2019 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).
2. Replace eight aluminum windows with new wood windows on rear of main structure. – Approve – Approve specifications dated 3/4/2019 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).
3. Replace front and rear entry door with new doors and remove three door openings on rear of main structure. – Approve – Approve specifications dated 3/4/2019 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).
4. Plant twelve boxwood hedges in front yard. – Approve – Approve site plan dated 3/4/2019 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).
5. Paint main structure. Brand: Pittsburgh Paint. Color: Main - PPG1041-3 "Billowing Clouds." Trim - PPG1013-6 "Gray Flannel." Accent - PPG1161-4 "Blue Promise"– Approve – Approve specifications dated 3/4/2016 with the finding the proposed work meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(g)(6)(C)(ii).

DISCUSSION ITEMS

1. 1201 MARILLA ST

Pioneer Cemetery
CD189-007(LC)
Liz Casso

Speakers:

For:

Jennifer Scripps, John Fullinwider, Edward M. Sebesta, Gerald Britt, Gary Moore

Against:

Allison Reaves Poggi, Stephen McNallen, Carole Haynes, Judith Edwards, Rosa Rodriguez, Deborah Franklin, Rick Range, Landon

Simmons, Connie Marshall, Warren Johnson, Karen Pieroni, David Preziosi, Joanna Hampton, David Hendricks, James Henderson, Chris Carter, Larry Johnson, Sandra Crenshaw, Tami Brown Rodriguez, Serrano Baldeo

Motion #1

Deny the application to remove the Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because the proposed work does not meet the standard in Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D) in that having been built in 1896, it is not newer than the period of significance for the historic overlay district. This same Dallas City Code specifies that all existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are protected. Protected is defined, within the ordinance, as an architectural or landscape feature that must be retained and maintain its historic appearance, as near as practical in all aspects. Therefore, as a monument, it is protected according to the ordinance.

Maker:	Williams				
Second:	Swann				MOTION FAILED
Results:	6/9				
		Ayes:	-	6	Childers, Flabiano, Richter, Williams Seale, Swann
		Against:	-	9	Amonett, De La Harpe, Hinojosa, Montgomery Payton, Peach, Slade, Spellicy, Strickland
		Absent:	-	0	
		Vacancies:	-	1	Dist. 3

Motion #2

Approve the removal of the Confederate monument from Pioneer Cemetery pursuant to Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to the historic overlay district. The monument was installed after the period of historic significance for the historic overlay district and the removal of the monument will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or integrity of the historic overlay district.

Maker:	Strickland				
Second:	Hinojosa				
Results:	10/5				
		Ayes:	-	10	Amonett, De La Harpe, Hinojosa, Montgomery, Payton, Peach, Richter, Slade, Spellicy, Strickland
		Against:	-	5	Childers, Flabiano, Seale, Swann, Williams
		Absent:	-	0	
		Vacancies:	-	1	Dist. 3

SECTION 5

Transcript of the
March 4, 2019
Landmark Commission
Hearing
1201 Marilla Street
CD189-007(LC)

TRANSCRIPTION OF EXCERPTS OF AUDIO RECORDING

LANDMARK COMMISSION PUBLIC HEARING

CITY OF DALLAS, TEXAS

CASE CD189-007(LC)

1201 MARILLA STREET (PIONEER CEMETERY)

DATE OF HEARING: MARCH 4, 2019

DATE OF TRANSCRIPTION: APRIL 8, 2019

1 T R A N S C R I P T I O N

2 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Landmark Commissioners,
3 I'd like to ask all of you to disclose any ex parte
4 communications that you may have received on any of the
5 cases. And Commissioners, we do not need to hear every
6 single ex parte communication, just that you have
7 received it and that you have turned it in to staff.

8 And I'll go ahead and start us off. Because
9 the Landmark Commission operates in a quasi judicial
10 capacity in regard to applications for demolition or
11 removal cases, any information I obtained outside of the
12 hearing should be disclosed on the record.

13 For the record, I, Katherine Seale,
14 approximately one month ago have received ex parte
15 communication, which I've forwarded on to our city staff
16 and our commission secretary and that has been
17 distributed to the rest of the Landmark Commission.

18 So if anybody else has any ex parte
19 communication they'd like to put on the record, please
20 do so.

21 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Just, or any e-mail we've
22 received?

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Yeah, and you don't need
24 to list the e-mail or the contents, just you want to put
25 into the record that you received something if you have

1 received something.

2 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: And do you want us to
3 state it or just fill it out?

4 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Just state it for the
5 record, correct, Ms. Holmes?

6 COMMISSIONER SLADE: For the record, I, Katy
7 Slade, received an e-mail approximately a week ago about
8 the D-1 case.

9 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Commissioner
10 Flabiano.

11 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Yes, so I, Mattia
12 Flabiano, received approximately a week ago
13 communication regarding D-1, which was forwarded to city
14 staff.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Mr. Childers.

16 COMMISSIONER CHILDERS: I, Sam Childers,
17 received an e-mail correspondence to the city
18 approximately a week ago as well.

19 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Anybody else?
20 Commissioner Payton.

21 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: Yes, I received a
22 phone call approximately one week ago about the
23 memorial.

24 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Okay. At
25 this time we're going to go over, since some of you,

1 this is your first meeting of the commission, we're
2 going to go over some general housekeeping so you know
3 how things are going to run.

4 We have a very full agenda. The Landmark
5 Commission meets once a month and this is our normal
6 regular monthly meeting. So because of that, and we
7 also want to give everybody and opportunity to speak. I
8 just wanted to let you-all know about we've got a lot of
9 items and many of you today aren't here for D-1 and we
10 want to get to everybody.

11 So in light of that, we're asking you-all as
12 speakers to follow the rules of decorum just as you
13 would at any public hearing, be respectful of all
14 people's opinions and time at the microphone.

15 I will be directing security to intervene if
16 any person is acting inappropriately or speaking when
17 they do not have the floor. I think everybody filled
18 out one of these yellow cards.

19 But if you find yourself, that you want to
20 speak and you hadn't planned on it, just go ahead and
21 fill -- you can come down to the podium, we don't want
22 to cut anybody off. But come down to the podium and
23 fill out a yellow card and just leave it with us before
24 you leave.

25 The Landmark Commission will take about a

1 ten-minute break somewhere around 3:30. And now to get
2 into some of the specifics of D-1, which is the request
3 from the City to remove the Confederate Memorial in
4 Pioneer Park.

5 The applicant will have five minutes to
6 present and then we'll take questions from the Landmark
7 Commission. Then public speakers will have one minute
8 to present their opinion and we'll have the clock
9 running for you, so you can keep track of your time.

10 We'll hear first from all of those who are
11 in favor of the City's request, and then we'll hear from
12 all of those who are opposed to the request. And if
13 you-all wouldn't mind, it will help us sort of expedite
14 things, if you know that you're going to speak in favor,
15 then we're going to have a line going so that it will
16 keep us on track today.

17 And then same thing when we hear from those
18 of you who are in opposition, when we call for the
19 opposition, sort of line yourselves up single file.

20 Everyone who wants to speak on the matter
21 will be heard today. We generally have a cap, those
22 speakers, a time cap for 15 minutes per side, but we
23 want to hear from everybody today. So we're going to
24 lift our cap and anybody who would like to speak to the
25 Landmark Commission will have the opportunity to do

1 that.

2 Just a reminder to state your name and
3 address into the microphone before you begin your
4 comments, address the chair, and only the chair. And
5 Commissioners, any questions directed at a public
6 speaker must relate to the three-pronged standard which
7 you'll be making your decision.

8 So with that, if you plan to speak today, if
9 you've signed a yellow card or even if you think you
10 might speak, please stand and raise your right hand so
11 that I may swear you in.

12 Do you swear or affirm to tell truth in your
13 statements and answer any questions by the committee?
14 Thank you. You may be seated.

15 (End of first audio segment at 7:09.)

16 (Beginning of second audio segment at 9:09.)

17 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: So with that, D-1.

18 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Discussion item No. 1,
19 located at 1201 Marilla Street, Pioneer Cemetery,
20 CD189-007(LC). The request is to remove the Confederate
21 monument from Pioneer Cemetery using the standard
22 demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure
23 because it is newer than the period of significance.

24 Staff recommendation; approve. The proposed
25 removal meets the standards in City Code section

1 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to
2 the historic overlay district. It was installed after
3 the period of significance and removal of the monument
4 will not adversely affect the historic character of the
5 property or the integrity of the historic overlay
6 district.

7 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Task force
8 recommendations; comments only, no quorum. Comments;
9 that the application be approved as submitted as the
10 structure is non-contributing to the overlay district;
11 newer than the period of historic significance; and
12 removal will not affect adversely the historic character
13 or integrity of the overlay district.

14 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Now, Ms. Scrips, we're
15 ready for you.

16 MS. SCRIPS: Good afternoon, my name is
17 Jennifer Scrips, I'm the director of the Office of
18 Cultural Affairs for the City of Dallas. Today marks
19 the culmination of about 18 months' worth of work and we
20 are seeking a certificate of removal.

21 I know the word "demolition" is in the name,
22 but I'm joined today by Kay Calose who runs our public
23 art program. We work with certified conservators that
24 meet the national standards and qualified contractors,
25 so this would be a removal in the truest sense.

1 It was placed there in the '60s, almost
2 40 years after the last body and burial occurred in the
3 historic cemetery, and so we feel comfortable that it is
4 non-contributing.

5 And additionally, if you followed the
6 National Park Service's national guidelines, once it's
7 moved, it is also automatically considered
8 non-contributing. So that's the basis for our
9 application.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.
11 Commissioners, questions for the applicants?
12 Commissioner Payton. Commissioner Flabiano.
13 Commissioner Childers.

14 COMMISSIONER CHILDERS: Thank you, Madam
15 Chair. Ms. Scrips, can you refresh my memory, and, for
16 the record, the mayor put together a task force on
17 Confederate monuments. Can you, for the record and to
18 refresh my memory, let us know what the recommendations
19 of that task force was.

20 MS. SCRIPS: Yes, great question. I will
21 read the exact recommendation that was briefed to city
22 council on November 1st, 2017. That was a little over a
23 month I think from when the task force completed their
24 work.

25 Task force recommendation 1-B; that the City

1 of Dallas seek to place the Confederate monument
2 memorial on long-term loan or by donation to a museum,
3 educational institution, or educational site located
4 within North Texas so that it may be preserved and used
5 for educational purposes through display within the full
6 historical context of the Civil War, reconstruction,
7 Lost Cause mythology, and the Jim Crow era.

8 If the City is unsuccessful in its efforts
9 and the statues remain in storage after three years, the
10 city council should revisit this issue.

11 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Swann.

12 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yes, Ms. Scrips. Under
13 ordinance No. 24938, which created the Pioneer Cemetery
14 Landmark District, what kind of monuments are protected?

15 MS. SCRIPS: Are you referring to the
16 definition of monuments? They can be grave markers,
17 monuments, and tombs?

18 COMMISSIONER SWANN: If it's relevant to my
19 question, yes.

20 MS. SCRIPS: It's a little bit unclear. My
21 understanding in the overlay from 2002, they believed
22 they were talking about the monuments that are the grave
23 monuments.

24 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Are you referring to
25 4.1 under preservation criteria, section 4.1?

1 MS. SCRIPS: Yes.

2 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. What's the full
3 wording of that?

4 MS. SCRIPS: It says existing grave markers,
5 monuments, and tombs are protected.

6 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. Is it your
7 position that at the time those words were written the
8 Confederate monument did not exist?

9 MS. SCRIPS: The Confederate monuments
10 obviously existed at that time. We believe that word
11 "monuments" is referring to -- because on the overlay it
12 was actually called the Confederate Memorial, which
13 is -- the Civil War Memorial, excuse me, which is a very
14 misleading name.

15 It is not a Civil War memorial, it is a
16 Confederate monument and there's a difference.

17 And because it's all to the Confederates,
18 not the Civil War, that we believe that the way it was
19 literally drawn in the map from 2002 is also misleading.

20 COMMISSIONER SWANN: But the only
21 qualification that the ordinance makes, and it's quite
22 specific, is existing, correct?

23 MS. SCRIPS: Well, we believe it's
24 non-contributing because it was moved there in 1961.

25 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. And it was moved

1 there for what reason?

2 MS. SCRIPS: Because they built I-30 that
3 took it out of Old City Park.

4 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. So, in other
5 words, it was moved there because, basically because
6 there was a conflict between preservation of the
7 historic resource and an alternative land use; is that
8 correct?

9 MS. SCRIPS: I can't speak to that, in 1961.

10 COMMISSIONER SWANN: I think that describes
11 it pretty well. A freeway is an alternative land use
12 from a public park, correct?

13 MS. SCRIPS: I guess it's an alternative, I
14 don't know that.

15 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Well, I'm addressing
16 this because one of our purposes as the Landmark
17 Commission is to resolve conflicts between the
18 preservation of historic resources and alternative land
19 uses.

20 And of course at that time there was no
21 Landmark Commission, but had there been I think that
22 moving it to a monument with a Confederate soldier at
23 the top to a cemetery that has many, many Confederate
24 dead so noted in it would be quite an appropriate
25 resolution in that kind of conflict.

1 MS. SCRIPS: Well, I have to beg to differ.
2 There's actually a Confederate monument in the
3 Confederate cemetery in Dallas, in South Dallas, which
4 would have been more appropriate if we had sought to put
5 that monument close to the Confederate dead, which we
6 did not do.

7 And The Dallas Morning News article from
8 1962 actually chose this site because of its higher
9 visibility, which is in keeping with the lost cause
10 mythology from the '60s.

11 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. But it doesn't
12 erase the fact that many of the nearest graves are
13 Confederate graves.

14 MS. SCRIPS: We always think of them as
15 Dallas founding families. I can't speak to the number
16 of Confederates.

17 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. All I'm saying
18 is that they are marked with tombstones in the
19 Confederate style that was government issued and their
20 regimental affiliations are noted on their tombstones.
21 Thank you.

22 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Williams.

23 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: Yes. Speaking to
24 the point of it being newer of the period of
25 significance, when was it actually built?

1 MS. SCRIPS: In the 1890s, I want to say
2 1896.

3 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: 1896, according to
4 our materials, which would clearly put it within the
5 period of significance, which ended in 1921.

6 MS. SCRIPS: Right.

7 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: That's my question.

8 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Strickland.

9 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: It was the
10 monument -- to touch upon the last question, it was
11 built in 1896, but it was chosen not to be placed in the
12 Pioneer Park at that time.

13 Do you know, do you have any evidence as to
14 why they chose to place it where they originally chose,
15 as opposed to putting it in the cemetery at that time?

16 MS. SCRIPS: Well, my understanding is the
17 Old City Park location was very much a popular city
18 park. The unveiling was a city holiday, thousands and
19 thousands of people came out for a parade so I think it
20 was just a -- it was a park in the truest sense rather
21 than putting it in a cemetery.

22 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: Follow-up
23 question. There are four -- the memorial we're talking
24 about has four actual people depicted and then it has a
25 center monument to it.

1 Are any of the four people that are depicted
2 in there, could you explain who they are and what is
3 their significance as a pioneer for the City of Dallas?

4 MS. SCRIPS: Great question. They were all
5 leading Confederates, Stonewall Jackson, Robert E. Lee,
6 Albert Sidney Johnson who was a four-star general from
7 Texas, and Rusk -- Jefferson Davis who was the president
8 of the Confederacy.

9 And then the middle one is a Confederate
10 private and he's facing south, which is very typical of
11 these kinds of monuments. To my knowledge, they all
12 have very scant relationships, direct relationships to
13 Dallas.

14 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Any other questions for
15 the applicant? Commissioner Swann.

16 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yes, Ms. Scrips. Are
17 there other monuments or structures that were moved to
18 or constructed within the boundaries of the landmark
19 district subsequent to 1921?

20 MS. SCRIPS: Subsequent to 1921?

21 COMMISSIONER SWANN: After 1921.

22 MS. SCRIPS: Not to my knowledge.

23 COMMISSIONER SWANN: The John Neely Bryan
24 memorial, was that not built after 1921, the one that
25 says 1954 on it?

1 MS. SCRIPS: Again, I'm not an expert on the
2 entire overlay, I'm just -- I can't speak to that. Can
3 somebody else, staff, help me out? I don't know.

4 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Well, it's right in
5 front of the monument and within the landmark boundary,
6 erected to John Neely Bryan in 1954.

7 MS. SCRIPS: I can't speak to that. I'm not
8 here to discuss that. I'm hear to discuss --

9 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Well, if the standard
10 for this is non-contributing based on when it was moved,
11 have we initiated a procedure for removing the John
12 Neely Bryan monument as well?

13 MS. SCRIPS: No. Because I don't think that
14 offends a large portion of the Dallas population.

15 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay, thank you. Now,
16 that's why we are removing the monument.

17 MS. SCRIPS: It's also not property of the
18 City of Dallas. This is property of the City of Dallas
19 art collection so I'm not concerned with that one.

20 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. But thank you
21 for clarifying because this is not apparently a drive to
22 remove non-contributing structures as you define them.
23 It's about something else. It's about --

24 MS. SCRIPS: This is a piece in our public
25 art collection.

1 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. Thank you, Ms.
2 Scripts.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: I'm sorry. Ladies and
4 gentlemen, please hold your applause. Thank you. All
5 right. Other questions? Commissioner Spellicy.

6 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: Before granting the
7 certificate of demo or anything like that, we typically
8 require a structural review of some kind.

9 Also, if we're moving structures within a
10 district or an individual registered landmark, some type
11 of documents that indicate how that's going to occur but
12 still provide preservation, to provide the rest of
13 the -- you get where I'm going. Have you gotten
14 anything that indicates?

15 MS. SCRIPS: I want to make sure, we go
16 through a very prescribed bid process or scope of work.
17 And something like this is obviously very delicate. We
18 will be providing scaffolding around it to protect the
19 surrounding graves. We'll have to get the height to
20 dismantle it.

21 We will work only with qualified bidders.
22 We have a conservator that always helps Kay and her team
23 that adheres to all national guidelines. They're part
24 of the national certification to keep their license as
25 conservators. There's only a handful of people in the

1 North Texas metroplex that are qualified.

2 We adhere to all of those best practices.

3 Again, I really want to stress removal and not
4 demolition.

5 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Montgomery.

6 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: On that issue of
7 removal, Ms. Scrips, that is specifically what we've
8 been asked to issue is a certificate for removal. And
9 you have stated that this piece is part of the City of
10 Dallas art collection.

11 So if we approve removal, is there something
12 in your own paperwork governing the art collection that
13 says you do have to maintain and keep it someplace at
14 least for three years until the city council --

15 MS. SCRIPS: Absolutely. Our public art
16 committee has not de-accessioned it so it's still part
17 of our public art collection and we have a facility at
18 Hensley Air Force Base that is city-owned where it can
19 be held in safekeeping, secured, and so forth.

20 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: So we have some
21 sort of guarantee within your own rules that you can't
22 just go out and take it in the dark of night and destroy
23 it?

24 MS. SCRIPS: Yes. Good question.

25 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Other questions?

1 Commissioner De Le Harpe.

2 COMMISSIONER DE LA HARPE: Thank you. To
3 date are there any valid options for this memorial,
4 where it can go, where it can serve its purpose?

5 MS. SCRIPS: The artist is well known in
6 Texas. We believe he did probably a third of all
7 Confederate monuments in the state of Texas. But we
8 have not had any serious takers to host it, especially
9 given the stipulations of the task force. We would want
10 it to be properly contextualized.

11 And so it's not an insignificant cost to
12 transport it and reassemble it. But we entertain all
13 inquiries as they come in. We've done a lot of
14 outreach, but nothing has really been fruitful.

15 COMMISSIONER DE LA HARPE: Thank you.

16 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Childers.

17 COMMISSIONER CHILDERS: Can you maybe
18 describe a little more of the outreach efforts you've
19 made. Museums? Educational groups? Can you describe a
20 little more.

21 MS. SCRIPS: Yes. So we've had several
22 visits that we've made to other institutions in North
23 Texas. Throughout the original task force that you
24 referenced, there were five or six public meetings. And
25 it definitely generated a lot of PR so we got a lot of

1 inquiries, everything from private collectors, small
2 towns that want these kinds of things.

3 Again, they don't want to do any of the
4 contextualization that we're asking for. There are
5 efforts in South Texas to try to collect some of these
6 statues from across the state. There's some
7 out-of-state entities. It's extremely expensive to
8 start talking about shipping this stuff to Virginia or
9 North Carolina.

10 Most of the large battlefields have room for
11 them, but, again, we haven't had any serious
12 conversations, plus they don't meet the stipulation that
13 it remain in North Texas.

14 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Strickland.

15 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: You mentioned
16 earlier, I just wanted more clarification on the
17 difference between what is a Civil War monument versus
18 what is a Lost Cause mythology and memorial to that,
19 historically speaking.

20 MS. SCRIPS: Thank you for that. I was
21 really struck when you look at the documents that refer
22 to this as a Civil War piece when it is clearly a
23 Confederate piece. If you take a close look, obviously
24 the people depicted are Confederates. All of the
25 inscriptions are to the Confederates.

1 And throughout our research in the original
2 task force work, we were really struck by the pervasive
3 myth of the Lost Cause mythology and the way it both
4 explained the defeat of the South, it explained, or
5 tried to explain, and glorify, why, even though in loss,
6 in losing they were glorious, and I can read you our
7 summary slide, that was presented to council.

8 But, you know, the Confederate Daughters of
9 America, the daughters of the Confederacy, that funded
10 the sculpture was known for that work throughout the
11 country. And so the Lost Cause did become wildly
12 accepted. It was in place exactly in this era.

13 It helped southerners to cope with the
14 social, political, and economic changes after the Civil
15 War, especially in the reconstruction era. It focused
16 on the defense of states rights rather than preservation
17 of slavery as the primary cause that led eleven southern
18 states to secede. All of that has been debunked.

19 It viewed secession as a justifiable
20 constitutional response to northern cultural and
21 economic aggression against the southern way of life.
22 It presented slavery as a benign institution in which
23 the slaves were treated well and cared for and loyal and
24 faithful to their benevolent masters.

25 And it adopted and spread via popular

1 culture like with Gone With the Wind and The Birth of a
2 Nation. The Lost Cause in summary provided the
3 justification and support for the Jim Crow system of
4 rigid segregation which was the South for 100 years
5 after the Civil War.

6 And it's for those reasons that I believe
7 council has instructed staff to continue to proceed.

8 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner, really for
9 all of the commission, just a reminder that you want to
10 direct your questions based on our three-pronged
11 standard.

12 Commissioner Hinojosa.

13 COMMISSIONER HINOJOSA: Ms. Scrips, can you
14 explain again or further what contextualization the City
15 is seeking for this monument. What is that
16 contextualization?

17 MS. SCRIPS: Are you talking about for the
18 original task force recommendation? Because today we're
19 seeking a certificate of removal.

20 COMMISSIONER HINOJOSA: No, I know that.
21 But you keep mentioning contextualization --

22 MS. SCRIPS: If we were to find a partner to
23 put it on display in North Texas, the original task
24 force, wants it displayed with an explanation of the
25 Lost Cause, Jim Crow. It was a full historical context

1 of the Civil War, reconstruction, Lost Cause mythology,
2 and the Jim Crow era.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Other questions?
4 Commissioner Flabiano.

5 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Maybe you can
6 clarify a little bit better. So we have three criteria
7 that we have to address and item 1 is regarding
8 non-contributing to the historic overlay district and
9 item 2 is newer than the period of historic significance
10 for the overlay district and then it will not have an
11 adverse effect if it's removed.

12 So you could -- could you summarize in each
13 one of those the City's --

14 MS. SCRIPS: Sure. So you want to take it
15 one by one?

16 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Yeah, if you could,
17 to recap that before we get into the --

18 MS. SCRIPS: Right. So the first one is
19 that it's non-contributing because it was basically from
20 a -- it was moved there and it's not from the period of
21 significance of the historic overlay district, which was
22 from 1849 to 1921.

23 The second one is that if you read the 2002
24 Pioneer Cemetery overlay application, it's all about the
25 cemetery and the graves there and the historic four

1 cemeteries that were combined into that site.

2 And then the third -- what was the third
3 piece? I'm sorry, I'm not looking at that.

4 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: That the demolition
5 or the removal would not have --

6 MS. SCRIPS: You could remove this and it
7 does not adversely impact what is left, which is the
8 historic cemetery, which is from 1849 to 1921.

9 And furthermore, if you follow the National
10 Historic Registry guideline, by definition of the fact
11 that it has been moved, it can be considered
12 non-contributing; National Park Service.

13 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Thank you.

14 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Other questions for the
15 applicant? Okay. Well, at this time, then, if we would
16 like, we're going to hear from all of those who would
17 like to speak in favor of the application.

18 And if you-all wouldn't mind forming a line
19 down here and we will run the clock so you guys can keep
20 track of your time.

21 And just a reminder, before you begin your
22 comments to state your full name and address into the
23 record.

24 MR. FULLINWIDER: I'm John Fullinwider. I
25 think the staff has done a good job of summarizing how

1 the removal of this monument fits within the guidelines
2 of the commission. So it's within your guidelines to
3 take it down or to leave it standing.

4 You have a choice to remove this monument to
5 slavery, treason, and racism or to let it continue to
6 blight the symbolic landscape of the city. The people
7 of Dallas deserve a public landscape that affirms the
8 full humanity of everyone who lives here, not this
9 godforsaken monument that honors what should be
10 condemned.

11 I hope you'll do the right thing today and
12 approve the permit to remove. Thank you very much.

13 MR. BRITT: Gerald Britt, 1610 South Malcolm
14 X Boulevard. Thank you today for hearing all of us. I
15 want to commend the city staff for getting this right.

16 It is important for us to understand that as
17 of 18 months ago, it was voted upon by the city council
18 that these monuments now stand against city policy.

19 These are images erected in memory of those
20 who fought to maintain a system of chattel slavery.
21 Other states, indeed other civilizations, have rejected
22 any historical premise on which these monstrosities
23 remain in our midst.

24 Should this monument remain, it's only right
25 for us to call for the erection of a monument in memory

1 of Nat Turner.

2 We ask that you help us to be able to get
3 this right, to help the city forge a future in which all
4 the dignity and humanity of all the citizens are
5 recognized and help us to redeem our history. Thank
6 you.

7 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Mr. Britt, did you fill
8 out a form?

9 MR. BRITT: No.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay. Just leave us one
11 before you leave. Thank you.

12 MR. SEBESTA: Ed Sebesta, 1502 Severs. The
13 discussion of the Confederate War Memorial has been
14 mostly on the Confederacy and the Lost Cause, but the
15 history of the monument itself has not been reviewed or
16 considered critically.

17 I've handed out a report on the monument. I
18 am a published author with the University of Texas Press
19 and the University Press of Mississippi. I want to make
20 sure when this commission makes a decision that they're
21 fully informed and later they can't say that didn't
22 know. Thank you.

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Any other
24 speakers in favor of the city's request for removal?
25 Okay. At this time we're going to hear from speakers in

1 opposition to the request.

2 I just want to recognize Ms. Reeves as a
3 former chairman of the Landmark Commission who has sat
4 in our position for many years.

5 MS. REEVES: My name is Allison Reeves, my
6 address is 5927 Bonner, Dallas 75230.

7 I was the chair of the Landmark Commission
8 when the Pioneer Cemetery was designated. I want to
9 make it very clear that the person that led this
10 designation was Frances James.

11 We left one of our landmark meetings at her
12 insistence, walked over to the removal of the sidewalk
13 by the Convention Center and to our surprise we saw 15
14 graves.

15 And I don't know if you know what it's like,
16 they peel a sidewalk back and you can see where those
17 graves are. And my concern is that whatever is going to
18 happen that proper care won't be done to the area that
19 we worked so diligently to get nominated.

20 There are any number of ways of damaging
21 graves. They used to park on those graves.

22 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

23 MR. McNOWLAND: My name is Steven McNowland,
24 I'm a Texan living in California, Post Office Box 445,
25 Nevada City, California. When I became aware of this

1 situation, I knew there was only one thing that I could
2 do even though my wife and I are living on pretty
3 limited incomes. I knew I had to buy a ticket here.

4 I went down to Sacramento, got on that plane
5 and came here to speak against the removal or the
6 molestation, not to mention the destruction of this
7 particular monument.

8 Obviously I feel very strongly about that.
9 Whatever you think about the monument in today's
10 context, it is truly a historical item of significance.
11 As has been pointed out, it was a huge deal when this
12 happened here. It fully warrants your protection.

13 If you destroy it, people of future
14 generations will wonder what were you thinking? Why
15 would you spend, what, I've heard a half-million dollars
16 to remove this statue. I guess that's all I've got to
17 say. Thank you very much.

18 MS. HAYNES: I'm Carol Haynes. Pioneer
19 Cemetery was designated a Dallas landmark in 2002 with a
20 period of significance from 1849 to 1921. Although the
21 Confederate monument was moved to the cemetery in 1961,
22 it was erected in 1896, well within the period of
23 significance.

24 Section 4.1 of the ordinance states that
25 existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are

1 protected. Since the existing ordinance was passed in
2 2002, the Confederate monument would be a protected
3 feature because it was already in the cemetery.

4 The boundary of the cemetery is specifically
5 drawn to take in the Confederate monument at the lower
6 corner of the district and could have easily been left
7 out if the monument was not considered significant to
8 the cemetery or was out of the period of significance.

9 Nowhere in the landmark designation form or
10 ordinances or listing or reference to a non-contributing
11 or out of the period of significance. Allowing a
12 protected element in a historic district to be
13 classified as non-contributing when it clearly is not
14 set is a highly dangerous precedent for the future of
15 landmark districts in Dallas.

16 What historical monuments and name changes
17 would be next? Thank you.

18 MS. BROWN: Hi, my name is Tammy Brown
19 Rodriguez, 1022 Forest Grove Drive. I am adamantly
20 opposed to the removal of this monument, the destruction
21 and the removal of the monument that represented men who
22 were part of protecting Texas from the northerners
23 coming into Texas.

24 Some of these men and their families have
25 lived here. You have descendents. You are

1 discriminating against a segment of history and in that
2 discrimination, which you are mandated not to do, unlike
3 those other monuments that are represented in that same
4 cemetery that you're not taking a look at.

5 And I also want to make clear that there is
6 a House Bill right now, HB262 that is an active
7 legislation to protect every monument to remind us of
8 our history.

9 And that is in the House right now at the
10 Senate and we need to wait. I urge you to wait on this
11 decision until our legislators of Texas make that
12 decision. Because if you don't, this will be an illegal
13 activity. Thank you.

14 MS. EDWARDS: Hi, I'm Judy Edwards, 2308 St.
15 Frances, Dallas. And I'm going to urge you not, please
16 don't, this is our heritage and I'm from Wisconsin. But
17 my family has fought for this nation. These people have
18 fought for this nation. We need to remember this.
19 Thank you.

20 MS. MEDRANO: Hi, good afternoon, my name is
21 Rosa Medrano, 1129 Betterton Circle, Dallas, Texas
22 75203. I'm just against any demolition against history
23 and I would like to give my minute to Larry Johnson.

24 KIMBERLY: Good afternoon, my name is
25 Kimberly and I would also like to yield my time to

1 Mr. Larry Johnson.

2 MR. JOHNSON: My name is Larry Johnson, 214
3 Landis. As a city we have become too comfortable with
4 erasing history in our Dallas landmark districts. Most
5 of the bleeding has been in our African-American
6 districts, Tenth Street and Whitley Place.

7 Today Dallas at large is feeling what we
8 have felt for decades. What Dallas must now learn, we
9 know from experience. We are the residents of the Tenth
10 Street Freedman's Town. Today you-all have the luxury
11 of arguing over symbols of racism. We're fighting
12 racism itself.

13 Discussion item No. 11 on today's agenda is
14 yet another demolition in Tenth Street. Dallas City
15 Code as currently amended allows the City of Dallas to
16 demolish a residential structure of 3,000 square feet or
17 less pursuant to a court order even if it is a protected
18 landmark.

19 All of the residences built by freedmen in
20 our neighborhood are under 3,000 square feet. That is
21 what systematic racism looks like in 2019. We know how
22 it feels when the city makes a new rule or resolution to
23 take away your historic protection.

24 To those who want to take these monuments
25 down, we understand that the monuments are a source of

1 hurt and embarrassment to many. To those who want to
2 keep these monuments up in remembrance of ancestors we
3 also understand that's why we fight for Tenth Street.

4 To both parties we believe we have a
5 solution. We in Tenth Street have the only landmark
6 cemetery in Dallas that is older than this one. In
7 addition to the graves of freedmen our burial ground
8 holds the unmarked graves of slaves. Both cemeteries
9 contain graves that are lost and unknown.

10 We owe these souls a debt of reconciliation
11 and remembrance. To that purpose, we propose a garden
12 of remembrance and reconciliation. It is to be one
13 garden in spirit created in two kindred locations. Each
14 of the two parts respond to the unique character of its
15 place.

16 Before we can create a symbol of
17 reconciliation of the ground, we must undertake a
18 genuine reconciliation of the heart. We can only
19 accomplish this by getting to know one another. We can
20 create a welcoming shared space. There we can bring two
21 parts of historical conversation together to speak one
22 truth.

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

24 MS. FRANKLIN: Hello, I'm Debra P. Franklin
25 and my business is Dr. Graveyard, Franklin Graveyard

1 Preservation.

2 And several Dallas citizens got in touch
3 with me concerning this because they were worried about
4 the possible desecration of any graves that may be or
5 may not be underneath the Confederate monument.

6 And as you already know through the years in
7 1970 and 1999, even back in the 1950s, the four
8 cemeteries have dwindled down because of use of property
9 for the auditorium and the Convention Center here in
10 Dallas.

11 And it seems like anytime that Dallas has
12 encroached onto the Pioneer Cemetery which made up four
13 cemeteries, there continue to be bodies that were found.

14 What I've read is that the Confederate
15 monument was moved in order they were going to remove
16 the graves from South Dallas, the Confederates to be
17 moved, so it was supposed to be an object for a
18 cemetery. I guess that's all.

19 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

20 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Thank you-all for the
21 opportunity. I notice now that instead of a certificate
22 of demolition, they're calling it a certificate of
23 removal. I find that very strange.

24 On your three-pronged matter --

25 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: I'm sorry, could you

1 state your name. We didn't get it.

2 MR. RANGE: I'm sorry, Rick Range.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: And your address?

4 MR. RANGE: 702 Briar Wood Drive, Garland,
5 Texas. My family has lived here since 1890.

6 Anyway, that's a strange wording change
7 there. I find that interesting. On your three prongs,
8 I would like to say real briefly, No. 1, as far as it
9 being non-contributing, the Civil War memorial was a
10 Confederate war memorial.

11 It was moved to a location that contained
12 chock-full of Confederate graves. It was in honor of
13 them so it is contributing to that site.

14 No. 2, the notion about something no longer
15 being historically significant since the last body was
16 buried, where is that written? That is ludicrous on its
17 face. Pioneer Cemetery is historic and it's still
18 historic so that doesn't hold water.

19 And your third thing about detracting from
20 the site, yes, it would detract from the site, those are
21 the oldest sculptures of the City of Dallas, they're
22 beautiful. It would definitely detract.

23 And lastly, I'll just say this will be a
24 total violation of the ordinance protecting the landmark
25 that you-all are sworn to defend. And it's very clear.

1 It says existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are
2 protected and that thing was existing since 1962. It's
3 been there --

4 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Sir, you're over your
5 time, sir. Sir, thank you.

6 MR. RANGE: Vote to defeat.

7 MR. SIMMONS: Landon Simmons, 6913 North
8 River Crossing, China Spring, Texas. I'm for Texas,
9 currently serving on active duty in the U.S. Marines. I
10 have Confederate ancestors by the names of George and
11 Jefferson Simmons. They, too, are veterans. This
12 veterans monument was erected in 1896. In 2002 it was
13 given historical landmark status.

14 Other solutions to vandalism are
15 wrought-iron fencing around structures and especially
16 cemeteries. Another solution is invisible wax coatings
17 which can be applied to most any exterior surface such
18 as stone materials.

19 A hot water pressure washer can easily wash
20 off any sprayed graffiti. Last is the use of cameras.

21 Please recognize the 2002 ordinance that
22 clearly defines this veterans monument being within the
23 boundaries of the Pioneer Park Cemetery. Please carry
24 out your duties and responsibilities, Landmark
25 Commissioners, by recognizing and promoting this well

1 established 1896 veterans monument which falls within
2 the period of significance.

3 Please do not vote to approve the permit of
4 demolition regardless of your personal opinion regarding
5 this monument. I pray to God that one day when I'm old
6 or gone that there may be a Landmark Commission with
7 enough integrity and grit that helps protect Iraq and
8 Afghanistan veterans memorials keeping them protected
9 from the hatred and the ignorance. Please protect this
10 historical landmark, this veterans memorial. Thank you
11 for your time.

12 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

13 MS. MARSHALL: Hi, my name is Connie
14 Marshall and I just want to say, my son is active right
15 now in the U.S. Army in the infantry. And he is serving
16 and protecting every one of you in here.

17 I have a question for you. If they did a
18 monument for his group of men 50 years from now, are
19 you-all going to take that down because you decide you
20 don't like them right now? I just have to know that.

21 And I want you to know there's a World War I
22 monument that was vandalized and trying to be taken
23 down, World War II, this has nothing to do with the
24 Confederacy.

25 They are taking down monuments everywhere.

1 And I have to read this and really think this really
2 pertains to the time we're living in right now.

3 Every record has been destroyed or
4 falsified, every book rewritten, every picture has been
5 repainted, every statue and street building has been
6 renamed.

7 Every date has been altered and the process
8 is continuing day by day and minute by minute. History
9 has stopped. Nothing exists except an endless presence
10 in which the party is always right, George Orwell, 1984.
11 And if we're not living in that right now, I don't know
12 what we're living in.

13 MR. JOHNSON: Hello, Warren Johnson, 3883
14 Turtle Creek Boulevard here in Dallas. Right now
15 historic preservation is all but dead in Dallas. The
16 removal of that fine work of art by renowned sculptor
17 from Lee Park inflicted a serious wound.

18 Removal from the memorial from Pioneer
19 Cemetery will serve the coup de gras to preservation.
20 Historic preservation is now subject to the
21 ever-changing political whims. The very reason this
22 commission was created, to resist that.

23 If you remove this memorial you will weaken
24 this commission. Put all these old Confederate
25 monuments and museums and cemeteries was a rallying cry

1 for the political Taliban, the cultural Taliban. This
2 one is in a cemetery and now it's being targeted for
3 destruction because of politics and fake emergencies.

4 No one can force the city to open a library
5 or a park. But when a city pulls a book or removes a
6 statue already there because the message -- because of a
7 message they gave it, that's a First Amendment issue.

8 Free speech is impacted. Criminal penalties
9 come into play for those responsible for it. Save the
10 city council from this. Save historic preservation in
11 Dallas. Deny the city's request. Thank you.

12 MS. PERONI: Good afternoon, my name is
13 Karen Peroni, 2927 Renaissance Circle in Dallas. I'm
14 speaking as a Dallas city resident of over 30 years and
15 speaking as a private citizen and a registered voter.

16 I'm a descendent of over 40 Confederate
17 soldiers and I also happen to be a member of Dallas 6,
18 that's our monument. I'm begging you not to take it
19 down and read the letter that Dallas Preservation sent
20 you yesterday.

21 It says everything it needs to say and it
22 rebuts everything the city is trying to tell you. So
23 please read their letter from March 3rd. Thank you.

24 MR. PRESIOSI: David Presiosi with
25 Preservation Dallas, 2922 Swiss Avenue. The certificate

1 of demolition request runs counter to the clear language
2 and intent of the Pioneer Cemetery District ordinance
3 and to the city's historic preservation ordinance.

4 The request to reclassify a specifically
5 protected feature of a historic district is as
6 non-contributing when the plain text of the ordinance
7 states that the monument is a protected feature violates
8 important procedural safeguards and endangers landmark
9 districts throughout Dallas.

10 It is our hope that the city would pursue
11 opportunities to further understanding and awareness of
12 the full history and surrounding Dallas's connection to
13 the Civil War and the struggle for civil rights.

14 Whether through efforts to recontextualize
15 the Confederate monument or other meaningful and
16 substantive solutions, we must acknowledge that Dallas
17 has long struggled to be a city for all.

18 Preservation Dallas fully supports greater
19 reflection, education, and opportunities for research on
20 the city's history of racism and segregation and
21 ultimately healing. Thank you.

22 MS. HAMPTON: Members of the commission, my
23 name is Joanna Hampton, 5408 Swiss Avenue. We're all
24 here today because we care about our city and hopefully
25 making our city a better place for all. That is

1 critical.

2 I fully support the comments made by
3 Mr. Johnson and others who are highlighting potential
4 issues with this interpretation of the ordinance that is
5 before you today.

6 I also, similar to Mr. Presiosi, urge the
7 city to pursue opportunities that tell the full history
8 of the city's long connection with the Civil War and the
9 struggle for civil rights.

10 These efforts must be meaningful and
11 substantive solutions, provide for research and
12 reflection, and complete the history that today is only
13 partially told. Thank you for your consideration.

14 MR. HENDRICKS: Good afternoon, my name is
15 David Hendricks and I'm a Dallas native, I'm also a
16 Dallas history buff.

17 One reason is my great, great grandmother is
18 buried in Pioneer Park Cemetery very close to the
19 Confederate Memorial and I don't want anything to happen
20 to her headstone.

21 This monument honors the men who fought to
22 protect their homes and families during the Civil War
23 and many in Pioneer Park Cemetery are veterans from that
24 era. It is clearly within the period of significance
25 for the park. 1896 is well within that date of death of

1 many in the cemetery.

2 If some sort of signage needs to be added
3 for people to view and read that presents a different
4 perspective of the time period, so be it, please do it.
5 I offer additional information about history so people
6 may learn, discuss, or interpret. Just please don't
7 destroy our history in Dallas. Thank you very much.

8 MR. HENDERSON: My name is James Henderson,
9 I live at 10118 Maple Ridge Drive in Dallas. I've lived
10 here since 1964. I'm also vice president and board of
11 director of the Dallas County Farm Bureau.

12 The Texas Farm Bureau has a half-million
13 members in the state of Texas and at the annual
14 convention in Corpus Christi in December, they
15 unanimously voted to -- they voted to protect all the
16 war memorials and landmarks in the state of Texas.

17 So removing this landmark will go against
18 wishes of a great number of Texans. And also, you know,
19 the legislature is having a hearing this afternoon on
20 eminent domain. And the statue was put up in 1896 and
21 it was moved because the freeway had to be built.

22 So there was no choice but to move the
23 monument in 1961 to its current location. So it clearly
24 fits in the landmark rules for preservation. Thank you
25 for your time.

1 MR. MOORE: Thank you. My name is Gary
2 Moore. My wife and I are Vietnam vets who no longer
3 reside in the City of Dallas. We live in Lewisville
4 now. But we came to tell you that the world is
5 watching. The world is seeing everything that the city
6 council does.

7 The world is watching everything that this
8 Landmark Commission does. It is being spread throughout
9 the Web and it will be visible to everyone. Anything
10 that you do to destroy this monument, anything that you
11 have done to continue to keep this going simply means
12 that you're boldly saying and standing in the face of
13 history and saying this history was simply not good
14 enough for me.

15 This history was too nasty. It was too
16 ugly. We want to get rid of it. You did it when you
17 let the city rip out the Robert E. Lee statue and now
18 this is going again. I vote against it. I hope you
19 will vote against it. I hope you will stand tall.
20 Thank you.

21 MR. CARTER: My name is Chris Carter, I live
22 at 9523 Hige Drive here in Dallas. I have attended
23 every city council meeting regarding the Confederate
24 monuments as well as the mayor's task force.

25 In every meeting the public speakers have

1 been five to one against the removal of our Confederate
2 monuments. In the city council, this is not an issue of
3 history, it is not an issue of morality.

4 This is a bunch of young cravenly ambitious
5 city councilmen using these monuments as a political
6 football to further their own political career.

7 They are now attempting to co-op the
8 Landmark Commission, a deliberative, non-political body,
9 to rubber stamp this monument removal so as to
10 circumvent the wishes of the people of Dallas.

11 We have said many times, put this issue to a
12 public referendum and let the people of Dallas decide.
13 You cannot allow the Landmark Commission to be used as a
14 political tool. This is not what it was established
15 for.

16 You must go back to the city council with a
17 firm no. You must say that the Confederate monument is
18 not only a contributing structure, but a relevant
19 integral part of Pioneer Cemetery.

20 The monument is a memorial to the people
21 that settled Dallas most of whom were political -- were
22 Confederate Army veterans. Thank you.

23 MS. CRENSHAW: Sandra Crenshaw, a descendent
24 of Africans who have lived in Texas under all six flags
25 and never were enslaved, but fought in all the wars on

1 this soil.

2 I hope that there are those among you who
3 have families whose blood is soaked in these soils,
4 whose tears and toil built this state and whose dry
5 bones are scattered across the South in unmarked graves
6 in her defense.

7 If not, know that Texas was geographically
8 disconnected from the Union and the only CSA to allow
9 citizens to vote who did so only to keep war from being
10 fought on these soils.

11 Next to the historic overlay is the Memorial
12 Auditorium that is dedicated to all Texans who gave
13 their lives. And to remove those who fought because of
14 events that occurred after their death would be
15 discriminatory and not in line with scripture.

16 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

17 MR. BALGIO: My name is Sirrano Keith
18 Balgio, I'm a Tenth District councilman running for the
19 next election.

20 The proclamation for Memorial Day is that
21 you must honor the soldiers from the North and the
22 South. So why is this not a federal issue? I have no
23 idea. All of you and most of you know this is a
24 political ploy.

25 It is done by councilmembers because they

1 want the right to get bragging rights but has done
2 nothing but defy this community. And you passed the
3 date, you passed the date for the submission.

4 As a councilman, this is supposed to come to
5 me so I can bring you guys in the chamber, we can have a
6 discussion about this. And the three things that you
7 have, it's just excuses.

8 Because Commissioner Williams
9 (indiscernible) and we established this was done for
10 emotional reasons. This was not done for any landmark.
11 They sent this to you because the city council is
12 corrupted. They're trying to corrupt you.

13 So I'm asking you to table this so when the
14 new council comes in we can have an actual discussion.
15 Look at what you're doing. They want you to do this to
16 this community. Don't do it. Table this and let's come
17 back. It's past the date and have the new
18 councilmembers deal with it.

19 You can get this on Sirrano 2019,
20 S-I-R-R-A-N-O, 2019, and I leave the rest of my
21 comments. But this is political, it's not landmark.

22 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Are there any other
23 speakers that would like to speak in opposition? All
24 right. Everybody, I know that at least one of you would
25 like to ask a question of one of our speakers.

1 Commissioner Montgomery.

2 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Yes. I would like
3 to ask a question of the first lady who spoke in
4 opposition, I'm sorry, I didn't get her name, but who
5 was on this commission at the time that this ordinance
6 was passed.

7 MS. REEVES: Oh, woe is me, I was the
8 chairman.

9 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: I'm very pleased
10 for your service. You can take my place today, but I
11 shall sit up here and do my job.

12 MS. REEVES: My name is Allison Reeves.

13 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Allison Reeves,
14 nice to meet you, I'm Evelyn Montgomery. I want to
15 address the third issue by which we're to pass our
16 judgment, which is whether or not the removal or the
17 leaving it there is detrimental to this overlay
18 district.

19 I read through the documentation for the
20 overlay district, including the historical support for
21 why it was an important place to have landmarked. I've
22 been on the committee that does that, the designation
23 committee for several years so I've read a few of these.

24 There was one paragraph about this memorial
25 and it told a bit of its history. It did not give me a

1 strong impression as to whether or not this memorial is
2 very important to this district or were saying this
3 memorial is sort of incidental to this district.

4 It did not tell me anything, whether it was
5 originally viewed as an inherent or important part or
6 not an important part. Do you have any memories that
7 would help me understand better what the intent was?

8 MS. REEVES: When we set up the chairs for
9 the dedication, we set them up in front of the memorial.
10 We didn't discuss it at the landmark level as a
11 Confederate memorial as it clearly says on it that it's
12 Confederate.

13 We considered it as more of a symbol of the
14 families who had given the money to have it built whose
15 families, their husbands, their fathers, their sons,
16 brothers had died and that was a memorial like a
17 tombstone to them. And that's how we felt about it at
18 the time.

19 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Did anyone on the
20 commission have, and I realize it was a long time ago
21 when people did talk about things differently, but they
22 had no suggestion that it was not appropriate to move it
23 into the -- to keep it in the cemetery, maybe there was
24 a reason why some day it needed to go?

25 MS. REEVES: Not at all.

1 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Since it could
2 actually detract from my bothering to read the
3 tombstones and learn about actual --

4 MS. REEVES: At that particular time, we
5 were so incensed that the city -- we had just gotten
6 through Freedman's and walk out of this room and walk
7 over there and see that the city had just paved over and
8 not given a thought to our ancestors' hallowed ground.
9 We were incensed.

10 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Thank you. I knew
11 that you might not have discussed what I wanted to hear
12 but I wanted to know. Thank you.

13 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Swann.

14 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yes, Madam Chair, I
15 don't have a question but as such time as you're ready
16 to entertain a motion, I have a motion.

17 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Oh, thank you. Any other
18 questions for our speakers? I have one. I'm sorry to
19 call you back up, Ms. Reeves.

20 I actually went back this weekend and read
21 all of our nominations for all of our historic
22 cemeteries because they are different.

23 One big difference is we were asked to --
24 the city's application is for non-contributing. And we
25 don't use that word in cemeteries. None of the

1 cemeteries call out contributing or non-contributing.

2 MS. REEVES: That's correct.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Can you tell us why the
4 word "non-contributing" does not exist in our cemetery,
5 in all four of our cemetery landmark districts?

6 MS. REEVES: It's a cemetery. Everything in
7 the cemetery contributes to it.

8 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. And then
9 another thing I guess I noticed in it is they have this
10 issue about the disturbing the ground. And it seems as
11 though all of our cemeteries' preservation criteria on
12 cemeteries talk about desecration of graves and the
13 disturbance of the ground.

14 And this ordinance does the same thing. I
15 would like to ask you, I am making that connection that
16 that is the -- the disturbance of graves would have an
17 adverse effect on a historic district.

18 And you alluded to something that I wasn't
19 aware of. I'm very familiar with when -- with the
20 Freedman's cemetery and how the city, as best we knew,
21 there was 35 documented graves and then we ended up
22 reintering something like 1,800 graves. And it's
23 estimated that there were some 3,000 bodies.

24 MS. REEVES: That's correct.

25 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: So what that means is not

1 only in that cemetery but in all of our cemeteries where
2 we've done work we have found graves where we did not
3 think there were graves.

4 MS. REEVES: Absolutely. That's why we were
5 so shocked when we walked out of here and we found 15
6 graves. And there was a re-interment and at Memorial
7 Auditorium there is a plaque to those graves.

8 My concern about removing anything in a
9 graveyard, especially that size, is that other markers,
10 unmarked graves, there's so much to damage. The unseen
11 can easily be damaged, especially because it's unseen.

12 And I can't tell you how passionate we were
13 almost 20 years ago and I wish I could bring those
14 people back to share their passion with you.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: So what do you say about
16 City's argument that, look, we chose this location
17 because there were no graves there. We didn't have any
18 burials past 1940. Their argument is that they can
19 remove this. There will be obviously disturbance of the
20 soil.

21 But their argument is that it's not going to
22 have an adverse effect on the entire historic strict
23 because there are no graves there. The burials stopped
24 in 1940. This was put in in 1961. And so that's their
25 presupposition for adverse impact.

1 MS. REEVES: Well, I just don't believe
2 that's true. I believe that it was just lawn where they
3 pulled up the concrete for the sidewalk.

4 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Is this where they pulled
5 up this concrete sidewalk that you're talking about, is
6 this near the Civil War or the Confederate Memorial?

7 MS. REEVES: It is probably less than the
8 distance I am from you and then a little bit more and
9 there were no tombstones obvious until the sidewalk was
10 brought up.

11 When they laid the sidewalk, they saw the
12 tombs, the graves. And that's very disappointing that
13 the city would go ahead with that, that it was another
14 time.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay. Thank you.
16 Commissioner Strickland.

17 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: I'm sorry you sat
18 down. I was going to ask you a question and if you
19 could stay for just a moment I believe we have another
20 commissioner who has a question for you.

21 MS. REEVES: Is that just because I'm old
22 and you found the typo?

23 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: My question was,
24 this memorial to the Confederates was moved to Pioneer
25 Park in 1961 so four decades after the last burial.

1 MS. REEVES: When I was in elementary
2 school.

3 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: Do you, the time
4 when you were designating this park, the cemetery, was
5 there evidence that in 1961 when it was moved that any
6 graves in that area were disturbed and why it was
7 selected to be put in this corner?

8 MS. REEVES: That would be a question not
9 for me but for Frances James.

10 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: You didn't have at
11 that time, you don't have any recollection of any
12 disturbance of any graves in that area when they erected
13 the monument to the Confederacy in that corner?

14 MS. REEVES: It would have been something
15 that we would have depended on Frances knowing as the
16 cemetery lady on the commission.

17 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Oh, I'm sorry, if you're
18 going to speak, you have to be called by a commissioner.
19 So Commissioner Strickland.

20 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: Could I call that
21 and repeat the question?

22 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Yeah.

23 MS. JAMES: What happened in 1970, let me
24 get my bearings here.

25 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: 1961 I believe is

1 when I was asking.

2 MS. JAMES: Well, but in '61 when the
3 monument was moved, it was moved because, yes, the
4 highway, but also they wanted to move the graves from
5 the South Dallas Confederate cemetery.

6 But in 1970 they were planning on adding
7 on --

8 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: Let me pause one
9 second. In 1961 when the monument to the Confederacy
10 was moved to Pioneer Park, do you know of evidence of
11 any graves being disturbed in that corner?

12 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Yes. And as a matter of
13 fact I sent a letter, maps, and overlays to Mr. Doty to
14 show that the pictures I had as well as the overlay of
15 the map, the map from the 1950s when they were first
16 wanting to build the auditorium, the Memorial
17 Auditorium.

18 They were trying to get land. And one of
19 them was the two tracts of the Jewish, the benevolent --
20 Hebrew Benevolent Association. And what they did, Judge
21 Sarah T. Hughes, she removed the dedication. Then
22 Dallas bought the property. Then Temple Emanuel, they
23 moved the bodies to Temple Emanuel on Howard Street.

24 Then they used those two tracts for the
25 memorial, but they also used part of the old city

1 cemetery. And when you look at the Confederate
2 monument, it is on the top part of the Odd Fellow
3 cemetery as well as part of the Old City Cemetery.

4 But in 1970 they were wanting to add on for
5 the Convention Center. So what they did, they -- I'm
6 sorry, you-all, I'm not use to talking in front of
7 people, it's usually in the cemetery.

8 The city manager at that time said that the
9 Masonic and Odd Fellows cemetery basically would be
10 fine. But because the Old City -- and this was quoted
11 in the Dallas Morning News newspaper article -- the
12 city, the Old City Cemetery, it just had a few scattered
13 graves, so there really wasn't anything there.

14 I think what he meant was that they were
15 probably the only marked graves. Because they were
16 mostly indigent people. They also had a big -- they
17 were about to have a lawsuit because there were citizens
18 of Dallas that also owned deeds to be buried in the Old
19 City Cemetery.

20 But because I guess they needed the land so
21 badly, the city -- the mayor at the time said we will
22 move the bodies, the dedication will be removed. I
23 can't find any evidence of it. Neither has Frances
24 James.

25 And we're still looking to see if there's

1 any evidence of that.

2 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: So let me just
3 clarify what you said. So there was evidence of them
4 disturbing graves when they chose to place this monument
5 into Pioneer Park at that time.

6 So at this point we have addressed that
7 issue in terms of that corner of any graves that were
8 disturbed.

9 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Yeah. Apparently what
10 happened is that they saw empty land with a few markers.
11 But I did find an article from 1961, I haven't sent it
12 to Mr. Doty as yet. But it has a picture of when they
13 first moved the monument over to have it assembled.

14 And what they were doing, they were using
15 the curbing, which that is what outlines a grave a lot
16 of times so they used granite or marble, marble is what
17 they used or concrete.

18 They had set the statues onto curbing of
19 each grave. One was a Louisa Beaugious and her husband
20 Luke. So I came out yesterday and took pictures. They
21 look like they've been moved. Vandalism started in the
22 cemetery in 1891.

23 So they had a beautiful pedestal type of
24 marker that had a ball and cap on the top, the finial.
25 But now it's just little bitty because I'm sure it was

1 you-all need to do is get an archaeologist or a
2 (indiscernible) or a company like that.

3 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: Thank you.

4 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Spellicy.

5 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: I have a question
6 for the applicant that is directly in alignment with
7 some of these questions. If I ask the applicant a
8 question, however, does that close out the hearing?

9 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: No. You can ask a
10 question of the applicant.

11 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: If possible, then,
12 I'd like to ask Ms. Scrips. I found some of the answers
13 or the discussion around whether or not it would
14 adversely affect the integrity of the historic overlay
15 district.

16 And a cemetery, once you disturb the ground,
17 if in doing so you come upon some of the coffins,
18 unknown tombstones, things like that, which is not
19 something I had considered previously in regards to the
20 integrity of the district, I'm wondering what your
21 response is or what your plan is if there is -- if this
22 is approved, you move forward, the point at which you
23 perhaps come upon something like this that happens,
24 which could potentially then affect the integrity of the
25 district, what is the plan?

1 MS. SCRIPS: Let me be clear. We are very
2 interested in removing this piece and not disturbing any
3 known or unknown burial sites. Everything we've seen
4 leads us to believe that it could be done and removed
5 without.

6 If we were to unexpectedly come across
7 unmarked graves, we would obviously call in the experts
8 that would immediately halt the process and we would
9 follow best practices for how to deal with those if and
10 when that occurred.

11 Again, I have full expectation that the
12 teams that we would hire, the conservators for the
13 piece, the experts for that site would do the work with
14 the full intention not to have that occur.

15 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: So you said that
16 you've seen information that leads you to believe it's
17 possible to achieve this without?

18 MS. SCRIPS: Having walked people through
19 the site ever since we started this in September of 2017
20 and then when we had estimators out there for how the
21 work would occur, we are looking at plans from 2002 when
22 the overlay district was found with what we're seeing.

23 I think we're dealing with hearsay and worst
24 case questions. And of course I can't -- that's
25 speculation.

1 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: Have you discussed a
2 desire to do anything like -- I don't know that the soil
3 would be amenable to ground penetrating radar or
4 anything along those lines.

5 MS. SCRIPS: We have not. Again, we've
6 spent most of our time talking about how you get a large
7 crane to come from the top and build something over the
8 surrounding surface to do as little impact on the
9 surrounding area as possible. We're not coming at it
10 from the side and going up.

11 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Amonett.

12 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: I have a question for
13 you also. It looks to me to be four statues sitting on
14 top of a concrete pad. The concrete pad isn't historic,
15 is it? That was the foundation that was built at the
16 time --

17 MS. SCRIPS: I'm going to ask my public art
18 manager that question. The foundation was from 1961,
19 you are correct.

20 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: So there's no need to
21 even dig. They would just remove those off the concrete
22 pad and the concrete pad could remain, correct?

23 MS. SCRIPS: Yeah.

24 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: And then I just have
25 one question for staff. Do you know of an instance

1 where we've moved an old house to an existing historic
2 district and that old house has become contributing all
3 of a sudden because it was moved into a historic
4 district? Do you know what I'm trying to say?

5 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: I do but I do not have
6 knowledge of such a case.

7 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: Do they automatically
8 become contributing just because they were moved into a
9 historic district?

10 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Generally, no. Generally,
11 we also follow best practices from the National Park
12 Service that says once you remove a historic resource
13 from its original context, it's lost some of its value
14 so it may be non-contributing even in a new district.

15 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: Because of its
16 context.

17 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Right.

18 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: Thank you.

19 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Flabiano.

20 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Yes. And I guess
21 for the, a question for the applicant and then also
22 staff.

23 I know in Tenth Street to salvage some of
24 the remaining homes in that area we actually are looking
25 at allowing those to be moved within a site within the

1 district. And even though those haven't been moved yet,
2 I believe we're allowing that so they would remain
3 contributing.

4 At that, we're doing that over the
5 homeowners who actually own the land who actually want
6 to tear those down. So the commission has a long
7 history of trying to salvage neighborhoods and salvage
8 history within the City of Dallas. And I think we have
9 a good proven record of that.

10 So the question for the applicant is this
11 piece was clearly built within the period of
12 significance. It was only moved because of the freeway.
13 And now it's in an historic district.

14 Is that just splitting hairs or definitions
15 that it was designed and built and just located
16 someplace in the city and now it's in a historic
17 district that it shouldn't be protected, similar to what
18 the houses in Tenth Street that we're trying to as well
19 as preserve that history?

20 MS. SCRIPS: Well, I feel like the rest of
21 the cemetery are cemetery markers and this was a piece
22 built for a completely different purpose. So there's
23 also a difference there that's kind of getting glossed
24 over because it's not a grave site or a burial marker.

25 It's a different piece all together that's

1 part of the city's public art collection that was moved
2 there, so 40 years after they quit interring bodies
3 there. So I do see some bigger difference. I don't see
4 this splitting hairs.

5 COMMISSIONER FLABIANO: Okay. Just wanted a
6 clarification. Thank you.

7 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: I have a question for
8 staff. And it gets back to this non-contributing
9 notion, being moved after the period of significance.
10 So I'm very familiar with the National Park Service
11 guidelines that talks about relocating structures.

12 There's a current debate right now, in fact,
13 there's a proposal within the guidelines to reconsider
14 the general prohibition of relocating structures. And I
15 wondered if the staff was familiar with that debate and
16 what you-all thought about that current conversation
17 that's happening.

18 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: We're only a little bit
19 aware and haven't really jumped into that conversation.
20 Though to that point that Commissioner Flabiano brought
21 up a good point that when you have a historic district
22 like Tenth, it has a number of contributing structures
23 that are moved within the district in order to save
24 them. They're still within the context of the
25 neighborhood.

1 And then you have a situation like this one
2 that parallels that a little bit, the difference being
3 this is not being moved. This monument is not being
4 moved from within its own district. It came from a site
5 that was different from the cemetery.

6 I would think that conversation is an
7 important one to have because you do not want to call
8 buildings non-contributing when you had to adjust their
9 location to save them.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: So the Meadows, the
11 Wilson District we call it, I think more than half of
12 the buildings were moved in. Are those contributing or
13 are those non-contributing?

14 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Those are contributing.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: And in Peak Suburban
16 Historic District I know we moved half a dozen houses.
17 Are those contributing or are those non-contributing?

18 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Without looking at
19 specific.

20 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Is Mr. Anderson's house
21 contributing?

22 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: I'm not sure.

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: I just want to clarify
24 for the record that there's at least four historic
25 districts where we've moved properties in and they are

1 considered contributing. And the national register is
2 actually having this conversation right now.

3 I just pulled this off of a discussion
4 that's happening about the guidelines that this came
5 about after New Orleans in relocating properties after
6 Hurricane Katrina and to avoid the construction of the
7 Veterans Administration hospital that raised this
8 concern about getting rid of that prohibition to
9 consider any house that's been -- any building that's
10 been moved.

11 That's what we're doing is talking about
12 non-contributing and if a property loses its status for
13 being moved. I just wondered. I wanted to hear from
14 staff on that item.

15 Okay. If there aren't any other questions
16 from the Landmark Commission, we're going to close the
17 public hearing, last chance. Commissioner Montgomery.

18 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: I have a question
19 for the gentleman who wishes to speak. And that
20 question begins with, Is what you wish to say answer a
21 question or a comment made by a member of the
22 commission?

23 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Yes, it does.

24 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Then please come
25 tell us what you -- but, please, only if you can stick

1 to something that we have asked about regarding our
2 three reasons for judgment on this.

3 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Yes, ma'am. One of the
4 major topics in all of the meetings has been the cost of
5 removal. Ms. Scrips initially said to the mayor's task
6 force that it would cost \$800,000 just to remove the
7 statues. Now we're down to 480,000 for a total removal.

8 If you have to bring in experts to find
9 graves, we're going way over \$480,000 --

10 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: I don't think the
11 cost, sir, is one of our three considerations.

12 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Yes. Because we're
13 talking about bringing in experts to find these graves.
14 The cost of that is going to be astronomical. We're
15 going over 480,000 --

16 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: We're not allowed
17 to consider the cost in making our --

18 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: But Ms. Montgomery, the
19 people of Dallas care about how much this is going to
20 cost.

21 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: I'm a people of
22 Dallas and I do care too, I just don't think I'm in a
23 position to be able to make a ruling in that area.

24 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: Well, then, please keep in
25 consideration the cost of what's being proposed.

1 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: Thank you for your
2 help.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay. At this time we're
4 going to close the public hearing. I'll be looking for
5 a motion. Commissioner Swann, did you indicate earlier?

6 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yes.

7 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Strickland.

8 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: I also have a
9 motion, but if Mr. Swann has one.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay, multiple motions.
11 Great, you-all stick around for later when we're looking
12 for motions. I want to see the same enthusiasm.
13 Commissioner Swann.

14 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Okay. With regard to
15 discussion of item No. 1, file No. CD189-007(LC),
16 otherwise known as the Confederate monument in the
17 Pioneer Cemetery Landmark District, upon finding that
18 the application does not meet the standard in City Code
19 section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D), specifically that it does
20 not meet romanette iii, demolition of the structure will
21 not adversely affect the historic character of the
22 property or the integrity of the historic overlay
23 district, I move that we approve but with the following
24 four conditions:

25 No. 1. That the statues of Jefferson Davis,

1 Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson, and Albert Sidney
2 Johnston be removed from their pedestals with damage
3 neither to the statues nor to the pedestals.

4 No. 2. That the central obelisk and the
5 four corner pedestals remain standing as they are and
6 that nothing be subtracted from them.

7 No. 3. That all elements formerly
8 constituting the Confederate monument remain in
9 unrestricted public view at the Pioneer Cemetery
10 Landmark District and within view of each other and
11 secured against damage of any kind.

12 No. 4. That an ad hoc committee of the
13 Landmark Commission ensure that actions taken within the
14 Pioneer Cemetery Landmark District or involving any
15 elements formerly constituting the Confederate monument;
16 A, meet the criteria established by the ordinance
17 creating the Pioneer Cemetery Landmark District; B,
18 uphold mission, purpose, and powers of the Landmark
19 Commission; C, address the concerns brought forth by the
20 city council; D, serve to increase public knowledge of
21 Jim Crow oppression in Dallas; and E, not adversely
22 affect the historic overlay district.

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
24 Swann. Do we have a second? Counsel.

25 MR. BURGESS: Yeah, Madam Chair, Casey

1 Burgess, City Attorney's office. This is an application
2 for certificate of removal. You cannot do that with
3 conditions. It's either you approve the removal or you
4 don't.

5 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay, thank you. Thank
6 you, Commissioner Swann, for offering us something. And
7 we've heard from legal. So did you want to make an
8 addition?

9 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yes. I do want to
10 point out that we have a precedent in my own district
11 for a demolition with conditions. The interurban
12 trestle was demolished with the condition that the
13 foundations remain standing at a height of three feet
14 and that interpretive signage be added to the remainder
15 of the landmark and that signage come before Landmark
16 for approval.

17 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay. Commissioners, so
18 we don't have a second. Do we have -- Commissioner
19 Payton.

20 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: Yes. I was listening
21 to everybody who was -- who had something to say
22 about --

23 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Payton, we
24 need a motion first I think. Are you going to make a
25 motion?

1 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: Yeah, I'm making a
2 motion.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay, thank you.

4 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: But I have a statement
5 also.

6 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Okay.

7 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: All right. From
8 listening, they were sounding like Dallas is coming up
9 short on Confederate memorials. Dallas has streets,
10 schools, public buildings, named for Confederates. So
11 if they think that that's the only thing that's in this
12 city that's a memory to the Confederate dead, we've got
13 more than enough.

14 And if they want considering memorials, I'd
15 like to see a memorial put down on the edge of downtown
16 there for Kato, Sam, and Pat, three black men who were
17 hanged legally or illegally, they're just as dead, on
18 that spot who fought against slavery.

19 Or if not, I'd like to see a memorial put
20 down there for Jane Elkins, a black woman who was the
21 first woman legally executed in the state of Texas for
22 fighting against her oppressor.

23 So if we're going to talk about memorials
24 and we're going to talk about our heritage, then let's
25 balance it off by putting up a memorial for Patrick

1 Jennings, Cato, and Sam Smith.

2 But we've got a fire station named for
3 Cabell who was city mayor. We've got streets named for
4 Rickert. We've got Lang Street named for Lang. So
5 we're not poor on memorial for Confederates. So if we
6 are worried about that, we've got enough.

7 And I don't think that if they move that --
8 I was glad to hear that they've got a place already.
9 What did she say, Hensley Air Force Base I think I heard
10 somebody say, where we could put those.

11 And I'm sure if they're on the air force
12 base, they under safekeeping. So let's not worry about
13 not having enough memories of the Confederacy. We've
14 got more than enough. So taking down -- and the men
15 they're talking about at that memorial, none of them
16 were Dallasites. We're here to talk about the history
17 of Dallas.

18 Stonewall Jackson never spent a day in
19 Dallas. Jefferson Davis never spent an hour in Dallas.
20 So those are not memorials to Dallas. Those are
21 memorials to men who fought to keep slavery in tact.

22 That's not a memory about the Confederacy.
23 Those are men who fought to keep my ancestors in chains.
24 So that's why I think that if we are going to move
25 those, the memories of slavery are not going to go away.

1 They're here, they're part of the American flag.

2 So let's just go ahead and deal with these
3 and move on to things that are more -- have more
4 importance than some memorials to some old ladies who
5 were United Daughters of the Confederacy who wanted to
6 keep the memories of their grandpas and their great
7 grandpas in tact.

8 So if we're going to do something, put
9 something down there that's going to balance all the
10 history of the South and men who fought against slavery,
11 not men who fought to keep slavery in tact, but people
12 who fought against slavery.

13 We need some memorials to those. We don't
14 have a one.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
16 Payton.

17 (Shouting in the chamber.)

18 Calm down, or we'll ask you to leave the
19 chamber. Commissioner Williams.

20 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: I have a motion.

21 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you.

22 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: In the matter of
23 discussion item 1, 1201 Marilla Street, CD189-007(LC), I
24 move that we deny the CA application because the
25 proposed work does not meet the standard in section

1 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D)ii and that having been built in 1896
2 it is not newer than the period of significance for the
3 historic overlay district which ended in 1921.

4 This same Dallas City Code specifies that
5 all existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are
6 protected. Protected is defined within the ordinance as
7 an architectural or landscape feature that must be
8 retained and maintain its historic appearance as near as
9 practical in all aspects, therefore, as a monument is
10 protected according to the ordinance.

11 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
12 Williams. Could you please hold your applause. Thank
13 you.

14 Thank you, Commissioner Williams, for the
15 motion. Thank you Commissioner Swann for seconding the
16 motion. Discussion, Commissioners? Commissioner
17 Montgomery.

18 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: When I first saw
19 the way they had worded this agenda, I do question the
20 use of its being contributing or not as the basis for
21 which we make this judgment. Not that I'm saying you're
22 wrong, I thought that was not the way to go.

23 The component of that about whether or not
24 it is actually contributing to the overlay district or
25 not is one that I thought of considerably because I'm an

1 historian and I'm a public historian so I know about how
2 people -- I hope I know about how people look at public
3 displays of history.

4 In this particular case, I think the rising
5 awareness of what many people feel when they look at a
6 memorial like this, it's kind of that to some people, it
7 reminds them of their family and their heritage.

8 To other people it reminds them of their
9 heritage in a terrible way where you cannot unsee this
10 thing once you have seen it and the emotions it would
11 engender detract from the ability to appreciate the
12 history portrayed in the rest of the cemetery, which are
13 monuments to Dallas individuals some of whom fought in
14 the Confederacy and can be judged for their individual
15 merit, their contributions to the town, the other things
16 they did that you might not like.

17 And so I question whether leaving this here
18 could possibly actually be detracting from the cause of
19 preserving history in a way that the public can
20 understand it in this particular spot. It has become so
21 controversial and we now know the extreme deeply felt
22 pain it causes so many people that for so many years we
23 just didn't think about.

24 Times change and sometimes you reevaluate
25 what things mean. It's kind of an ugly symbol. If it

1 were moved to a place where they really will do
2 interpretation, there will be signage and you sign up to
3 go, I'm going to go look at the Confederate monuments.

4 I'm going to see Confederate monuments and
5 learn about why they were put up, it would be a
6 completely different context for viewing and
7 understanding all meanings of this monument.

8 I would tend to see that as a justification
9 for not supporting this particular motion.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
11 Montgomery. Commissioner Williams.

12 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: Yes. And I don't
13 disagree with you on that. It's just the way this was
14 given to us today. We were only allowed to look at this
15 under these three very strict ideas. The structure is
16 non-contributing; the structure is newer than the period
17 of significance; or that the demolition will not
18 adversely affect it.

19 Reading the ordinance itself for Pioneer
20 Cemetery, I just can't see that falls under those three
21 things. So regardless of any of this discussion, and I
22 so appreciate everyone that came to speak their mind
23 today on both sides of the issue, I see the point. And
24 I certainly see Commissioner Payton's point on this.

25 I just feel that the way that the city

1 council gave it to us today left us in a difficult
2 position of dealing only with this application under
3 this very strict form. And that's where my motion is
4 coming from.

5 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
6 Williams. Commissioner Spellicy.

7 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: I will not be in
8 support of this motion today. And I appreciate
9 Commissioner Williams, your point, about how it was
10 brought to us. And yet recently we have, or at least a
11 group has, routinely gone against our ministerial duties
12 in denying certificates for demolition within the Tenth
13 Street.

14 When I look at this I think a part of it in
15 reading all of the e-mails that came or that were
16 submitted, the vast majority asked for
17 re-contextualization of it.

18 And yet to do that, including the artistic
19 options offered by Ms. Woods, and I have a great
20 appreciation for her art and what she's trying to
21 achieve, will once again come back before the Landmark
22 Commission.

23 And considering the amount of time that we
24 spend discussing murals, temporary signage, doors, and
25 windows, to believe that this is the appropriate place

1 to make a determination about how to re-contextualize
2 it, how that art installation would look would not be in
3 our or the city's best interests.

4 So I think at the heart you have to decide,
5 does allowing the city to go ahead and move it, does it
6 harm the program's mission, its purpose overall or not?

7 I think at this point to allow it to remain
8 harms the program overall in regards to what we're
9 trying to achieve. So I appreciate the reasoning that
10 you gave, Commissioner Williams, but I will not be in
11 support of this motion.

12 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
13 Spellicy. Commissioner Strickland.

14 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: I similarly will
15 not be in support of this motion for several reasons.
16 First, we've heard from many speakers who discussed that
17 this is political in the attempt to move it.

18 I would like to point out that the erection
19 of this monument to the Confederacy in 1896 was
20 political propaganda to pervert the history and the
21 remembrance of the Civil War that divided our country.

22 This is not a memorial to the entire Civil
23 War. This is a memorial to a specific side to that and
24 I don't find that to have any relation to Pioneer Park
25 and our remembrance of the pioneers who founded our

1 city.

2 The few Confederates that are buried in this
3 cemetery are not remembered because of their actions in
4 the Civil War and the Confederates, the four statues
5 that are named in this memorial, are not buried in this
6 cemetery.

7 It has virtually no connection to our city
8 and the founding of our city and what we're trying to
9 remember here and maintaining this Confederate Memorial
10 here never gives it a chance to be properly
11 contextualized to take away that propaganda aspect.

12 And for it to be moved as the arts
13 department would like, is the only chance where we can
14 properly contextualize this, preserve this monument as
15 it was built by the Confederates and then give it that
16 proper context.

17 If we try to contextualize it within this
18 historic park, this issue comes back before us and we're
19 the ones who have to make the decision of how we're
20 going to contextualize it as opposed to moving it to
21 another property that the city can decide and dedicate
22 those resources.

23 That's why I find it compelling as the city
24 staff has presented that the removal of the structure
25 will not adversely affect the history of pioneers of the

1 City of Dallas. We have a concrete pad.

2 It will not be damaged and the park will not
3 be damaged in the removal of this and we can actually
4 put it somewhere where it's important to keep that. And
5 I don't find that compelling here in our historic
6 cemetery. Thank you.

7 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
8 Strickland. Commissioner Amonett.

9 COMMISSIONER AMONETT: Thank you. I have a
10 great deal of respect for Commissioner Williams and I
11 agree with some of her points, but I'm unable to support
12 the motion myself and agree with what's been said.

13 Also, I feel that this monument that has
14 people not from Dallas, not even from this area, in our
15 cemetery with our early founders is harming the purpose
16 of the cemetery in itself and the reason that you would
17 go there to see people that were from Dallas.

18 But if this stays there, you're not going to
19 be able to do that. You're just going to focus on this
20 and it's going to constantly be the focus of the
21 cemetery rather than the people that founded this city.

22 My great grandfather came here in the early
23 1900s and there's some context from Dallas. In the
24 early 1920s, one out of every three men in Dallas was a
25 member of the Klan. That's who we are. That's who our

1 ancestors are.

2 And I've read the secession declarations
3 from the states and they all had language about how
4 black people were inferior and I don't want to be any
5 part of that. And if that means that I'm making a
6 decision not based on history, then so be it, but I
7 really feel that these people aren't connected with
8 Dallas.

9 It is what Commissioner Strickland said, it
10 was political when it was erected. And so if it's a
11 political decision today that makes it go away, then so
12 be it.

13 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
14 Amonett. Commissioner Swann.

15 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yeah. This is not a
16 cause of longstanding for me. I spent the last eleven
17 years working on the history of Tenth Street Freedman's
18 Town which has been largely ignored by historians.

19 My interest in Freedman's towns came about
20 when I was about six years old and my father would drive
21 me down Central Expressway on the way to the Dallas
22 Public Library. And on the way there we would see
23 Freedman's Memorial Park.

24 At that time it was a park with a basketball
25 hoop on a half court or something. And it was largely

1 ignored. The cemetery aspect of it was largely ignored.
2 It was a play park. And I asked my dad about it. And
3 he explained to me what it was.

4 And the reason I bring this story up is that
5 his explanation of the Freedman's Town and what that was
6 became an interest that I nurtured for the rest of my
7 life and still do now and that's one of the reasons I'm
8 fighting for Tenth Street.

9 And if we don't have these things on the
10 ground to spur those kinds of questions, many of those
11 questions will not be asked. And the reason I framed my
12 motion the way that I did was because I felt there was a
13 possibility of taking these, at least some of these
14 men -- I'm a little bit tossed up about the fellow at
15 the top because he's a little bit more of an everyman
16 certainly than the other four.

17 But I felt there was an opportunity to take
18 them down out of their honorific position and simply put
19 them at eye level where they could be studied as mortal
20 men.

21 But more importantly, I disagree strongly
22 with the word re-contextualize. That place has value to
23 somebody interested in Tenth Street as providing a
24 context to tell the story of Jim Crow oppression, which
25 is one of the most underserved chronological gaps as

1 identified by the National Historic Landmark program in
2 the story of African-American built heritage,
3 African-American history through built heritage.

4 The public input, to me, indicates that
5 there is still -- we have not earned a consensus on this
6 matter and as gratifying I know as making these things
7 go away is to many people. In a way I might be one of
8 them.

9 I think that making these go away and
10 turning this into a kind of zero sum game instead of the
11 complicated situation that it is, and I'm not defending
12 these as Civil War history there, or not Civil War
13 history there, or Jim Crow history, but anything that is
14 created at such expense and permitted to stand in the
15 city and celebrate and not only that, moved twice to be
16 put in a more celebratory position is certainly part of
17 our history.

18 It is a testament to the city's values
19 however warped over a long period of time. And for that
20 alone, I think this could have been a very rich place
21 and an opportunity for a dialogue that we obviously have
22 not had.

23 And I'm afraid that turning this into a zero
24 sum game only hardens positions and hardens hearts and
25 I've got to think about what Lincoln said at the close

1 of his second inaugural address when he said: I'm
2 loathe to close, but I'm closing. I'm loathe to close,
3 we are not enemies but friends. We must not be enemies.
4 Though passion may have strained, it must not break our
5 bonds of affection.

6 The mystic cords of memory stretching from
7 every battlefield and patriot grave to every living
8 heart and (indiscernible) all over this broad land will
9 yet swell the chorus of the union when again touched as
10 surely they will be by the better angels of our nature.

11 And here on the doorstep of Dallas it seemed
12 we had a chance to crown these granite pillars with the
13 better angels of our nature but only if we let our
14 better angels guide us. Thank you.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
16 Swann. Commissioner Slade.

17 COMMISSIONER SLADE: I also will be voting
18 against this motion. We visited at this horseshoe a
19 number of emotional matters that sway people one way or
20 the other. Our job here is to consider the facts. And
21 the applicant has presented facts in support of the
22 motion and we have not yet heard any facts that detract
23 from the application.

24 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner.
25 Since nobody has their light on, I will offer up my

1 comments.

2 I don't know about you-all, Commissioners,
3 but I have been up all night and much of the weekend.
4 Of course we thought this was coming to us in April, but
5 it came to us in March.

6 Many of you know I'm the former executive
7 director of Preservation Dallas and I went through
8 probably what all of you went through in this. What are
9 we supposed to do? What's the charge of the commission?
10 What's our goal here? What's the purpose? What are we
11 being asked to do? How is this coming to us?

12 Ultimately why I will be supporting the
13 motion is because I set aside my own personal beliefs
14 for what I think I want to have happen and I looked at
15 what our charge is. And our charge is to look at the
16 application in front of us and the burden of proof is on
17 the applicant itself and then we determine if they met
18 that burden or not.

19 And I cannot understand why in an ordinance
20 that spells out very clearly in front of us, 4.1, is
21 existing monuments are protected. The city's argument
22 that it's a mistake, it actually meant all the other
23 monuments.

24 It didn't actually mean this monument even
25 though we have testimony from the chairman of the

1 commission when this was passed that, no, they did mean
2 this monument, that is exactly what they meant when they
3 put that language in there.

4 So I can appreciate, too, the city's
5 argument, the request that it's newer than the period of
6 significance because of the National Register. But
7 Commissioners, we're not a National Register program and
8 we're not bound by the National Register.

9 Furthermore, the National Register is
10 starting to -- there's a movement to undo their
11 prohibition of moved structures after. So I think
12 that's a weak argument for us, too.

13 And then I'm not sure, Commissioners,
14 without a certificate of appropriateness as to how this
15 structure would be removed we can't allow for the
16 demolition. We don't remove buildings in historic
17 districts unless we have a CA to know what's going to
18 take its place frequently.

19 So to allow for the demolition with no plan:
20 What is the path for removal? What type of equipment?
21 Do we have an archaeological, somebody that is present?
22 What is the guidance of the Texas Historical Commission?

23 I certainly believe Ms. Scrips when she says
24 that if we find anything, we're going to stop and we
25 will go through those proper procedures.

1 But as a commission I don't know how we
2 would when we know anytime that we've done any work on
3 Pioneer Park we have found the presence of graves, we
4 would approve a removal without having a plan in place
5 to protect, to know.

6 When we remove them what's left with the
7 depression? Are we going to fill it in with dirt? More
8 than three inches of soil will be disrupted and we have
9 no assurances here that we're going to be able to do
10 that unless we just go out and find them.

11 So those are the reasons why we have to look
12 at our standard. And also, I just will offer this, I
13 really just have to say the reason this has been given
14 to us, it's very unfortunate, in my opinion, the way
15 this has been given to us.

16 The council declared their intention for
17 what they wanted to have happen and they're putting the
18 Landmark Commission in essentially an appellant position
19 to then either uphold their decision or reject their
20 decision.

21 And that is not an -- that is inverting the
22 balance of power, if you will. It's bypassing regular
23 order. We are a group of professionals and a group with
24 a lot of experience and a lot of thought. I am so proud
25 to serve along every single one of you. This group is

1 so impressive.

2 Because you put so much of your energy and
3 your expertise and your time into these issues and you
4 consider all of these things, the cemetery, the impact,
5 adverse impact, non-contributing, what's the cemetery
6 (indiscernible).

7 So I think that it would have obviously
8 probably been our preference to deal with these issues
9 that the council has already wrangled with because we
10 are the experts. This should be in our court. We
11 should be the ones that are making recommendations about
12 what should happen.

13 But that's not in front of us. The only
14 thing that's in front of us is the standard they applied
15 under, and therefore we have no choice but to look at
16 what that standard is and determine if it meets that
17 standard or not.

18 And the city has not provided a compelling
19 case that the structure is non-contributing, newer than
20 period of significance, or they will not have an adverse
21 effect on the character of the district.

22 So nobody else has their light on. We will
23 call for a vote. We'll see what happens. The vote on
24 the floor is by Commissioner Williams. Commissioner
25 Williams, I'm going to ask you to repeat your motion for

1 us.

2 It's essentially to deny the application,
3 but just so we're clear, we have a very clean, clear
4 record, could you repeat your motion.

5 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: To deny the
6 application because the proposed work does not meet the
7 standard in section 51-A4.501(h)(4)(D)ii and that having
8 been built in 1896 it is not newer than the period of
9 significance for the historic overlay district.

10 The same Dallas City Code specifies that all
11 existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are
12 protected. Protect is defined within the ordinance as
13 an architectural or landscape feature that must be
14 retained and maintain its historic appearance as near as
15 practical in all aspects.

16 Therefore, as a monument it is protected
17 according to the ordinance.

18 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: And the second was by
19 Commissioner Swann. All of those in favor of the
20 motion, please say aye. Any opposed? Okay. We're
21 going to call for a vote.

22 So all of those in favor of the motion made
23 by Commissioner Williams, seconded by Commissioner
24 Swann, are Childers, Swann, Seale, Williams, Flabiano,
25 and Richter, correct?

1 And then all of those in opposition --

2 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: For clarity for me and
3 for others who might not understand, are we voting to
4 move or to leave it there? What are we voting for? I
5 want clarity.

6 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: The motion is to deny the
7 application to remove.

8 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: So that means leave it
9 there?

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Correct.

11 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: All right. And others
12 it means to take it out to Hensley or somewhere?

13 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Correct.

14 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: Okay.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: And then so those in
16 opposition would be, I'm thinking it's going to fail.
17 Slade, Richter -- I'm sorry, Strickland, Hinojosa,
18 Payton, Amonett, Montgomery, De Le Harpe, Spellicy, and
19 Peach.

20 So the opposition has it so the motion
21 failed, six in favor, eight against. So we're looking
22 for a new motion. Commissioner Strickland.

23 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: I have another
24 motion. In the case of CD189-007(LC) for 1201 Marilla
25 Street, I move that we approve the removal of the

1 structure pursuant to section 51A-4.5019(h)(4)(D), that
2 the structure is non-contributing to the historic
3 overlay district.

4 The structure was installed after the period
5 of historic significance for the historic overlay
6 district. And the removal of the structure will not
7 adversely affect the historic character of the property
8 or the integrity of the historic overlay district.

9 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Do we have a
10 second? Thank you, Commissioner Hinojosa. Discussion?
11 Commissioner Williams.

12 COMMISSIONER WILLIAMS: I still don't
13 understand how we can describe this as non-contributing.

14 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: When I -- my
15 interpretation of this, if I'm allowed to speak, is that
16 I view Pioneer Park and what was the intent of this
17 historic district is to recognize the historic
18 contributions in the founding of our city, that I see
19 this memorial to the Confederacy as an anathema to the
20 founding of our city.

21 None of the people depicted in the statue
22 have anything to do with the City of Dallas. They did
23 not live here. They are not buried here. They did not
24 visit our city. So I see this again that when it was
25 built, it was built during the period of historic

1 significance for this park.

2 Our city founders chose not to put it in
3 this park at the time that it was erected. They chose
4 to place this over in a separate area over in Old City
5 Park because the intent of this memorial is to celebrate
6 the Lost Cause mythology. They only moved it here after
7 the fact. It was not an intentional historic
8 preservation.

9 It was sort of an accidental, half to move
10 it someplace else because we're putting in a highway.
11 That's why I don't consider it contributing at all to
12 the history of the City of Dallas and our pioneers.
13 That is why I do not consider it part and parcel to what
14 we're trying to preserve in Pioneer Park.

15 UNKNOWN SPEAKER: I wondered, though, since
16 when Pioneer Park was actually formed under the
17 ordinance, it was included in Pioneer Park. There's no
18 exclusion of it from Pioneer Park itself. And it
19 does -- I guess this is the reason I won't be supporting
20 the motion because it is itself a monument and it is
21 included within the ordinance.

22 And these are simply under the standard of
23 approval that we were given today. It has nothing to do
24 with personal opinions or testimonies really on that.
25 Simply the way the ordinance was written, it is included

1 in the ordinance, and it is a monument. And therefore
2 under the ordinance itself, I just didn't see from the
3 testimony of the applicant that it was excluded as a
4 monument.

5 Although our applicant did attempt, I think,
6 to describe that to some extent, but for that reason --
7 that reason is my main reason for making it difficult to
8 support the motion.

9 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Commissioner
10 Swann.

11 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Yeah, with all respect,
12 Commissioner Strickland, I think that your
13 characterization of the cemetery is, for lack of a
14 better word, a bit fanciful in terms of its idealization
15 of the people buried there.

16 This was a restricted cemetery that was
17 founded as a Mason's and Odd Fellows cemetery. If you
18 were black, you could not be buried. In fact that
19 cemetery never took African-American burials.

20 That's why I did feel that the public
21 speaker referred to the cemetery at Tenth Street, that
22 was a relevant connection because that is the
23 African-American counterpart to this cemetery.

24 The Oak Cliff cemetery was actually
25 segregated as all cemeteries were at the time but it was

1 not restricted as this cemetery was. And if you walk in
2 the cemetery, that's why I'm kind of astonished that the
3 applicant would answer the way she did when I asked
4 about Confederate graves in that cemetery because if you
5 walk there you will find them. They're everywhere.

6 And the history of our founding is replete
7 with Confederates, like it or hate it, that's the way it
8 is. Even when you go to Tenth Street, one of our
9 streets is named for a Confederate veteran.

10 His wife was a member of chapter 6 of the
11 Daughters of the Confederacy at the time this memorial
12 was put up at the very time that our neighborhood was
13 really starting to get off the ground.

14 That same Confederate veteran sold land to
15 the first African-Americans on Tenth Street, W. J.
16 Betterton sold the first lots to Anthony Boswell and
17 Hillary Boswell on January 12th, 1888. W. J. Betterton
18 also was the witness on Anthony Boswell's will.

19 So what I'm saying is that these histories
20 are so intertwined, they're not unlike the first bodies
21 to be buried at Arlington. Montgomery Meigs who was the
22 quartermaster for the Union Army, a Georgian, who came
23 and served the union, determined that he would bury
24 bodies at Arlington, repurpose Lee's home and you got to
25 think.

1 There was a spirit, they knew they were
2 going to have to reunite a country. They did not put a
3 torch to Lee's home. They repurposed Lee's home and
4 they did it in a meaningful way.

5 Meigs's intention was that only Union dead
6 would be buried at Arlington, but when they went to the
7 battlefield they found that the bodies were so -- the
8 carnage was so inseparably mixed that they realized they
9 would have to accept the dead from either side
10 regardless of side.

11 And instead of burying them by bodies, they
12 buried the heads together, they buried the leg bones
13 together, they buried the arms, they separated them by
14 parts.

15 So that is the nature of our history. You
16 can't play pick-up sticks with it. Anytime you pull out
17 a stick you move another stick. Thank you.

18 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
19 Swann. Commissioner Payton.

20 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: Yeah. First, I don't
21 want to refight the Civil War. The South lost and to
22 continually bring this up, let's come in and name
23 something after some people who fought for freedom.
24 They fought to keep the old way. We're trying to move
25 into a new generation now.

1 And to keep giving our schools named
2 after -- schools, parks, streets, named after old
3 Confederate generals, that's good, that was good. But
4 now we've got some new heros and some new she-ros and
5 we've got to name some things that -- we've got to name
6 some things after. We've got to put in some new
7 memorials.

8 To keep bringing these same old guys up, we
9 had schools named for Cabell, we've got a federal
10 building named for a former mayor whose daddy was county
11 sheriff and also the county hangman, Old Tige Cabell.
12 And we've got a fire station named for him. We've got a
13 school named for Jefferson Davis. We've got a school
14 named for Albert Sidney Johnston.

15 So I mean when does this end? Do we name
16 another generation after these old Confederate generals?
17 Do we just continue to keep these guys going or do we
18 bring in some new people, some new energy because we're
19 trying to get new life coming into Dallas.

20 But to keep bringing these old guys up
21 saying they were the greatest, they wasn't the greatest.
22 They wasn't the greatest. We keep living in that, as
23 she said, mythology about how great these guys were.
24 They wasn't that great so let's move on and do some new
25 things for the City of Dallas. That's what we're

1 supposed to be about, trying to bring some new light,
2 some new energy into the city.

3 And they keep beating people across the head
4 with old Stonewall Jackson and all of them. As a matter
5 of fact Stonewall Jackson's own men shot him and killed
6 him. So he wasn't that great if his own men shot him
7 and killed him. So let's bring some new stuff into
8 Dallas. Let's start some new heros, some knew people.

9 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner
10 Payton. Commissioner Strickland.

11 COMMISSIONER STRICKLAND: I just want to
12 respond to Commissioner Swann, the idea that we don't
13 want to play pick-up sticks with our history. I find
14 this monument, this memorial, is specifically picking up
15 sticks. We have Union soldiers buried in Pioneer
16 Cemetery. We're not honoring them.

17 This monument was -- this memorial was built
18 and erected intentionally during the period of
19 significance for this Pioneer Park but it was erected
20 someplace else in town. Because this is not intended to
21 honor the dead of the Civil War.

22 This is intended to honor the Lost Cause
23 mythology. It was built in the 1890s, 1896. So it
24 was -- by only focusing on this one aspect of a few of
25 one side that died in the Civil War, we are not honoring

1 the full pioneers of our city that are buried in Pioneer
2 Park.

3 And it was intentionally named Pioneer Park
4 to honor the founders of the City of Dallas and we do
5 have Union soldiers buried in this cemetery as well. So
6 this monument has already been moved one time because
7 the city chose to move it someplace else.

8 This is why I don't specifically find it
9 contributing to the historic nature of this park. And
10 at the time it was designated, it's not like the
11 Landmark Commission was going to say we want to
12 designate this but we need you to move this.

13 It just happened to be there at that time,
14 but it's not contributing to the honoring of our
15 founding of our city and the pioneers who are buried
16 here who fought to establish us as a city.

17 And that is why I find specifically the
18 difference between the historic nature of this park and
19 this monument which is not -- which was not ever erected
20 or intended to be honoring the dead who are buried in
21 the cemetery.

22 It was erected across town and it just
23 happened to be moved there later on. So that is why I
24 find it very different than the rest of this park.

25 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Commissioner

1 Montgomery.

2 COMMISSIONER MONTGOMERY: We've been put in
3 a very difficult procedural position here because you're
4 asking us to vote on something that doesn't exactly say
5 what we all know we're really here about and try to
6 resolve those two things. With my desire to have all
7 pieces of history preserved, I came to the conclusion
8 that I consider this particular monument to detract from
9 the place where it is.

10 I do not want to see anything destroyed
11 though I know that sometimes things must be because of
12 various reasons and they should still be commemorated
13 some other way.

14 We have on tape and people are watching us
15 right now. All the assurance we can reasonably get from
16 Ms. Scrips and the city that they do not intend to
17 destroy this monument, they intend to try to move it
18 someplace where it can contribute to historical
19 knowledge better.

20 A monument or a memorial means what the
21 person who perceives it thinks it means. Whatever the
22 intent originally was, perception is your own reality.

23 When you look at that, if it makes you proud
24 of your own family's history in the Confederacy, that's
25 nice. If it makes you miserable realizing your own

1 family's history of oppression, that's a lot stronger
2 emotion.

3 I think this violates the spirit of the
4 Pioneer Cemetery for the same reasons that Commissioner
5 Strickland had stated. And that's why I really think
6 that we have to take what we have from the city and
7 trust them that they intend to preserve history even in
8 the form of keeping this exact monument someplace.

9 And remember that you can also learn about
10 the history of the bravery of the Confederate soldiers,
11 if that's the parts you want to look at, by looking at
12 books, looking at podcasts, looking at blogs, any other
13 ways that we maintain history.

14 This particular monument has ceased to be as
15 much of a historic document as it has become a point of
16 emotional explosion for some people. Let's put it
17 someplace where people can learn about it in context,
18 and that's why I will vote the way I'm going to vote
19 even though I realize there are problems with the
20 request before us.

21 But I'm going to hold them to the very first
22 word, remove. They didn't say demolish, they said
23 remove. I'm voting to remove it. I'm not giving my
24 permission for any further destruction of the record of
25 history.

1 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Commissioner
2 Spellicy.

3 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: I have a question
4 for Commissioner Swann who I have found your thoughts
5 and philosophies on preservation and race to be
6 extremely informed. They've had a great deal of
7 influence upon me.

8 One of my concerns has to do with whether or
9 not it remains as is or re-contextualized, which I know
10 that's a word you take issue with, and believing that
11 this is an inappropriate body to make the determinations
12 on the appropriate way to re-contextualize these things.

13 Is your position such that you -- the
14 monument, memorial, whatever, that it should remain
15 untouched as is, or do you believe there is supposed to
16 be this next step that would bring it back before the
17 Landmark Commission to determine in regards to
18 educating, re-imagining, whatever word you would feel
19 comfortable using?

20 COMMISSIONER SWANN: Well, what I would say
21 is reconfigure or redeveloping it to provide context for
22 a broader narrative that includes the Freedman's Town,
23 that includes the African-American experience. Because
24 right now it doesn't.

25 There is nothing there to welcome an

1 African-American to that site. That could be changed.
2 And one of the reasons that my first condition was that
3 those four, I guess you call them champions of the
4 Confederacy on the corners come down.

5 As Mayor Landry said we cannot have them on
6 their pedestals. That was his chief objection. And I
7 think that the reason that the -- when I said about
8 address the concerns of the council, I think, as
9 expressed by my councilwoman, one of her chief concerns
10 was that this is what greets our visitors.

11 And I think that we could greet our visitors
12 in a way that is welcoming and sophisticated but
13 acknowledges the pain and the hurt and the, yes, the
14 deliberate deception, the propaganda, that characterized
15 Jim Crow from the 1890s right on to the voting act of
16 1965.

17 So, yes, I'm saying that we could -- I was
18 hoping that we could have a richer dialogue that would
19 invite perhaps not the court artist for
20 re-contextualization or re-visioning. Maybe
21 re-visioning is a better word.

22 But that would actually involve an open call
23 and an exhibit that could incorporate primary source
24 evidence from this site and from Tenth Street and from
25 all those landmark districts that have primary source

1 evidence to bring to this particular early founding and
2 Jim Crow narrative, which of course Tenth Street does.

3 You've heard me speak about the cemetery
4 there and its origins in the 1840s.

5 COMMISSIONER SPELLICY: So the education and
6 the re-visioning, though, would fall once again and
7 become the responsibility of the Landmark Commission to
8 determine its appropriateness.

9 COMMISSIONER SWANN: I think that the
10 Landmark Commission should play a great role because
11 that's why I defined this in terms of other landmark
12 districts.

13 Because I think the community here in some
14 ways most affected is those of us who are stakeholders
15 in landmark districts because we're familiar with a
16 specific set of concerns involved with preserving built
17 heritage and not everybody is versed in those things.
18 Not everybody has the direct experience of working on
19 the ground.

20 Because as you know, it involves a
21 particular skill set and it's not for everybody. So,
22 yes, I think that's part of the role. If you look at
23 our statement of purpose, one of the things that we're
24 supposed to do is, it was about knowledge. I've got it
25 here. I've got to put my glasses on.

1 Increase public knowledge and appreciation
2 of the city's historic past and unique sense of place.
3 And I think when we talk about a historic sense of past
4 and a unique sense of place, we're talking about the
5 ugly too.

6 As Mr. Johnson said before City Hall
7 earlier, to erase history because it is ugly or brutal
8 or bloody or offensive as he said is tantamount to
9 (indiscernible) mother saying close the casket.

10 There are some things we have to look upon
11 to thoroughly understand and I don't think that a page
12 in a book or a photograph in a library offers the same
13 kind of connection and visceral response that an
14 experience in three dimensions with materiality with all
15 the things that contribute to historic integrity.

16 And we are concerned first and foremost with
17 historic integrity. It's the telling of truth. It's
18 integrity also in the sense of completeness and
19 wholeness.

20 And I think when you start subtracting
21 substantial elements like this that are really
22 representative of the times, and not just a very
23 specific time in 1896, but also like all the years up to
24 1961 when it was again felt to be so iconic to the
25 prevailing social order of the time.

1 The institutionalized power that prevailed
2 through all that era that they decided to put it where
3 visitors would most see it. And of course now we're in
4 a quandary where that's our problem, that it's the first
5 thing that greets visitors.

6 But I do think that with a broad
7 conversation that brought in all the stakeholders, the
8 descendants of freedmen, the owners of historic homes in
9 Tenth Street --

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Swann, I'm
11 going to cut you off right there, I'm sorry.

12 COMMISSIONER SWANN: That's okay. I think
13 we get the idea. Thank you, Commissioner Spellicy, for
14 your question.

15 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Commissioner Childers.

16 COMMISSIONER CHILDERS: Just to add to
17 Commissioner Swann's comments in fewer words with all
18 due respect, Mr. Swann.

19 About ten years ago at the county records
20 building, they removed a piece of wall and there was a
21 ghost image of a "whites only" sign above the drinking
22 fountain.

23 And they could have taken \$20 worth of paint
24 and covered that over, but they turned it into a
25 teaching moment and they interpreted it. They put up

1 interpretive language explaining why this whites only
2 drinking fountain existed in the first place.

3 And then subsequently they actually turned
4 it into a bit of an art piece where when you go to get a
5 drink, when you push the button, you have a 15-second
6 video that explains why this whites only sign was there.

7 I think that we're missing a great
8 opportunity for a teaching moment by removing this
9 monument.

10 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. Commissioner
11 De Le Harpe.

12 COMMISSIONER DE LA HARPE: Thank you,
13 Chairman. I want to thank everyone in the audience for
14 being here today because we are not talking about
15 erasing history in any form. We are all here together
16 today making history. This is what we're doing today in
17 the City of Dallas is making history.

18 This was moved because the freeway was put
19 in which literally split our city in half. And we have
20 moved as a city with a division that has gone on for a
21 long time and this is a time that we can make a change
22 and history continues.

23 This monument can go to a place where it's
24 going to tell a better story in full contextualization.
25 We're not making its end. We are making the future a

1 better possibility.

2 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you. We've closed
3 the public hearing. Thank you. Commissioner Hinojosa.

4 COMMISSIONER HINOJOSA: Yes, I'd like to
5 just state that, yes, we're here for the integrity of
6 historical sites, but yet some of us are also here
7 because we're representing our communities. If you look
8 around that horseshoe the only black and brown face you
9 see here are myself and Commissioner Payton.

10 So we are representing our community and the
11 pain of our community and our shared pain at something
12 of this magnitude that obliterates our history just as
13 the monument needed to be moved in 1961 for physical
14 external factors, it needs to be moved now for
15 sociological external factors.

16 This is what's happening today. Things
17 change. Communities change and we have to acknowledge
18 that. We don't have to be split. We're not saying
19 demolish this monument.

20 We're saying put it somewhere else. Put it
21 somewhere else there can be a teaching moment somewhere
22 else but not right in the center of town where
23 Commissioner Payton, myself, and our communities have to
24 go and see this and experience this day after day after
25 day.

1 It's more than enough time has passed for
2 something like this to happen. Thank you.

3 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner.
4 So Commissioner Payton, one more thing?

5 COMMISSIONER PAYTON: We're not here for
6 history. We're here for our story, our story has to be
7 told. This is the history of everybody now, just like
8 she said, we aren't just here for history.

9 It was written by an old white man writing
10 about themselves and writing about each other. They can
11 write whatever they want to write but we know that's not
12 the truth. So we're here about our story now. We're
13 not here about history.

14 CHAIRWOMAN SEALE: Thank you, Commissioner.
15 With that we're going to call for a vote. Just to
16 remind you-all, the motion on the floor is by
17 Commissioner Strickland and it is to approve the city's
18 request to remove that monument and place it into
19 storage.

20 All those in favor of the request, please
21 say aye. We've got a show of hands so we can do a
22 verbal here. Slade, Richter, Strickland, Hinojosa,
23 Payton, Amonett, Montgomery, De Le Harpe, Spellicy and
24 Peach.

25 In opposition, we've got Williams, Swann,

1 Flabiano and Seale and Childers. Motion still is going
2 to carry. So the motion passes, one, two, three, four,
3 five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten were for the motion.
4 And one, two, three, four, five were opposed so the
5 motion easily carries.

6 Thank you all for being here. Thank you-all
7 for coming. Thank you for participating. And we hope
8 you come back and join us as we deliberate and wrangle
9 over other issues of the commission.

10 For the record, any interested party can
11 appeal the decision of the Landmark Commission to the
12 City Plan Commission within 30 days.

13 (End of second segment, ending at 2:24:35.)

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

1 STATE OF TEXAS)

2 COUNTY OF DALLAS)

3 I, Leslie McDonald Wilkins, Registered Professional
4 Reporter No. 029319, certify that the foregoing
5 proceeding was transcribed from an audio recording and
6 that it was transcribed to the best of my ability.

7 GIVEN UNDER MY HAND on this the 9th day of April,
8 2019.

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

LESLIE McDONALD WILKINS, RPR #029319
Expiration Date: 12/31/19
ALL-AMERICAN REPORTING #365
P. O. Box 520
Denton, Texas 76202
(972) 219-5161
(940) 320-1992

SECTION 6

Pioneer Cemetery Ordinance Dallas Landmark Commission Nomination Form

5-21-02

ORDINANCE NO. 24938

An ordinance amending the zoning ordinances of the City of Dallas, as amended, by establishing Historic Overlay District No. 114 (Pioneer Cemetery) comprised of the following described property, to wit:

BEING a tract of land out of the J.H. Grigsby Survey, Abstract No. 495 and the J.N. Bryan Survey, Abstract No. 149, being all of City of Dallas Blocks 66 and 67 in the City of Dallas, Dallas County, Texas, and containing four acres of land, more or less;

providing procedures, regulations, and preservation criteria for structures and property in the district; providing a penalty not to exceed \$2,000; providing a saving clause; providing a severability clause; and providing an effective date.

WHEREAS, the city plan commission and the city council, in accordance with the Charter of the City of Dallas, the state law, and the applicable ordinances of the city, have given the required notices and have held the required public hearings regarding the rezoning of the property described herein; and

WHEREAS, the city council finds that the property described herein is an area of historical, cultural, and architectural importance and significance to the citizens of the city; and

WHEREAS, the city council finds that it is in the public interest to establish this historic overlay district; Now, Therefore,

BE IT ORDAINED BY THE CITY COUNCIL OF THE CITY OF DALLAS:

24938

SECTION 1. That the zoning ordinances of the City of Dallas are amended by establishing Historic Overlay District No. 114 comprised of the following described property ("the Property"), to wit:

BEING a tract of land out of the J.H. Grigsby Survey, Abstract No. 495 and the J.N. Bryan Survey, Abstract No. 149, being all of City of Dallas Blocks 66 and 67 in the City of Dallas, Dallas County, Texas, and containing four acres of land, more or less.

SECTION 2. That the establishment of this historic overlay district shall not affect the existing underlying zoning classification of the Property, which shall remain subject to the regulations of the underlying zoning district. If there is a conflict, the regulations in this ordinance control over the regulations of the underlying zoning district.

SECTION 3. That a person shall not alter the Property, or any portion of the exterior of a structure on the Property, or place, construct, maintain, expand, demolish, or remove any structure on the Property without first obtaining a certificate of appropriateness or certificate for demolition or removal in accordance with the Dallas Development Code, as amended, and this ordinance. All alterations to the Property must comply with the preservation criteria attached to and made a part of this ordinance as Exhibit A.

SECTION 4. That the building official shall not issue a building permit or a certificate of occupancy for a use on the Property until there has been full compliance with this ordinance, the Dallas Development Code, the construction codes, and all other applicable ordinances, rules, and regulations of the City of Dallas.

SECTION 5. That the director of planning and development shall correct Zoning District Map No. J-7 in the offices of the city secretary, the building official, and the department of planning and development to reflect the changes in zoning made by this ordinance.

SECTION 6. That a person who violates a provision of this ordinance, upon conviction, is punishable by a fine not to exceed \$2,000. In addition to punishment by fine, the City may, in accordance with state law, provide civil penalties for a violation of this ordinance, and institute any appropriate action or proceedings to prevent, restrain, correct, or abate the unlawful erection, construction, reconstruction, alteration, repair, conversion, maintenance, demolition, or removal of a building, structure, or land on the Property.

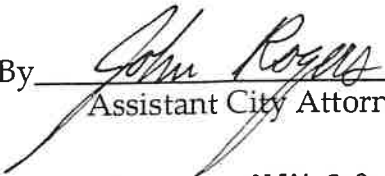
SECTION 7. That the zoning ordinances of the City of Dallas, as amended, shall remain in full force and effect, save and except as amended by this ordinance.

SECTION 8. That the terms and provisions of this ordinance are severable and are governed by Section 1-4 of CHAPTER 1 of the Dallas City Code, as amended.

SECTION 9. That this ordinance shall take effect immediately from and after its passage and publication in accordance with the provisions of the Charter of the City of Dallas and it is accordingly so ordained.

APPROVED AS TO FORM:

MADELEINE B. JOHNSON, City Attorney

By 
Assistant City Attorney

Passed MAY 22 2002

EXHIBIT A
PRESERVATION CRITERIA
Pioneer Cemetery Historic District
Marilla Street at Young Street

1. GENERAL

- 1.1 All demolition, maintenance, new construction, public works, renovations, repairs, and site work in this district must comply with these preservation criteria.
- 1.2 Any alterations to property within this district must comply with the regulations contained in CHAPTER 51A of the Dallas City Code, as amended. In the event of a conflict, these preservation criteria control.
- 1.3 Certificate of appropriateness
 - a. A person may not alter a site within this district, or alter, place, construct, maintain, or expand any structure on the site without first obtaining a certificate of appropriateness in accordance with Section 51A-4.501 of the Dallas Development Code, as amended, and these preservation criteria.
 - b. The certificate of appropriateness review procedure outlined in Section 51A-4.501 of the Dallas Development Code, as amended, applies to this district.
 - c. Any work done under a certificate of appropriateness must comply with any conditions imposed in the certificate of appropriateness.
 - d. After the work authorized by the certificate of appropriateness is commenced, the applicant must make continuous progress toward completion of the work, and the applicant shall not suspend or abandon the work for a period in excess of 180 days. The Director may, in writing, authorize a suspension of the work for a period greater than 180 days upon written request by the applicant showing circumstances beyond the control of the applicant.
- 1.4 A person may not demolish or remove any structure in this district without first obtaining a certificate for demolition or removal in accordance with Section 51A-4.501 of the Dallas Development Code, as amended.
- 1.5 Preservation and restoration materials and methods used must comply with the Secretary of the Interior's Standards for Rehabilitation and Preservation Briefs published by the United States Department of the Interior, copies of which are available at the Dallas Public Library.

24938

- 1.6 No person shall allow a structure in this district to deteriorate through demolition by neglect. Demolition by neglect is neglect in the maintenance of a structure that results in deterioration of the structure and threatens preservation of the structure. All structures in this district must be preserved against deterioration and kept free from structural defects. See Section 51A-4.501 of the Dallas Development Code, as amended, for regulations concerning demolition by neglect.
- 1.7 Consult Article XI, "Development Incentives," of the Dallas Development Code, as amended, for tax incentives that may be available in this district.
- 1.8 The period of historic significance for this district is the period from 1849 to 1921.

2. DEFINITIONS

- 2.1 Unless defined below, the definitions contained in CHAPTER 51A of the Dallas City Code, as amended, apply.
- 2.2 APPROPRIATE means typical of the historic architectural style, compatible with the character of this district, and consistent with these preservation criteria.
- 2.3 CERTIFICATE OF APPROPRIATENESS means a certificate required by Section 51A-4.501 of the Dallas Development Code, as amended, and these preservation criteria.
- 2.4 DIRECTOR means the Director of the Department of Planning and Development or the Director's representative.
- 2.5 DIRECTIONAL SIGNS means signs that provides direction and information for locations within the cemetery.
- 2.6 DISTRICT means Historic Overlay District No. 114, the Pioneer Cemetery Historic Overlay District. This district contains the property described in Section 1 of this ordinance and as shown on Exhibit B.
- 2.7 ERECT means to attach, build, draw, fasten, fix, hang, maintain, paint, place, suspend, or otherwise construct.
- 2.8 FENCE means a structure or hedgerow that provides a physical barrier, including a fence gate. Metal fences that enclose gravesites are considered fences.
- 2.9 GRADE means the degree of inclination of the ground's surface.

- 2.10 GRAVE means the space of ground used for the permanent interment of human remains.
- 2.11 GRAVE MARKER means a marker that identifies the locations of one or more graves. Grave markers may be stone or metal and typically are inscribed with the name and dates of birth and death; these can be located at the head or foot of a single grave or located to mark a group of graves.
- 2.12 MONUMENT means a commemorative marker, pylon, or sculpture that memorializes a person, place, or historic event.
- 2.13 PROTECTED means an architectural or landscaping feature that must be retained and maintain its historic appearance, as near as practical, in all aspects.
- 2.14 REINTERMENT means the reburial of human remains.
- 2.15 REMAINS means the body, or parts of the body, of a deceased person.
- 2.16 TOMB means a house, chamber, vault, or other structure erected partially or entirely above grade, which is used or intended to be used for the permanent interment of remains.

3. SITE AND LANDSCAPING

- 3.1 New construction is prohibited.
- 3.2 Ground disturbances
- a. Because unmarked graves may be located within Pioneer Cemetery, any disturbance to the ground, including landscaping, must be undertaken with much care and consideration.
 - b. Ground disturbances deeper than six inches require a certificate of appropriateness.
 - c. All archeological studies must have a certificate of appropriateness prior to any ground disturbance.
- 3.3 Walkways
- a. New or replacement walkways must be constructed of pavers, brick, brush-finished concrete, or other appropriate material. Artificial grass, artificially-colored concrete, asphalt, exposed aggregate, and outdoor carpet are not permitted.

- b. Crushed gravel, stone, or stone chips may be used for walkways only if contained within concrete or metal edging.
- c. No walkway may go over a grave.

3.4 Parking areas, driveways, and paved areas are not allowed.

3.5 Landscaping

- a. Outdoor lighting must be appropriate and enhance the monuments, tombs, and cemetery.
- b. Outdoor light poles may not exceed 16 feet in height.
- c. Landscaping must be appropriate, enhance the cemetery and surroundings, and not obscure significant views of protected fences, grave markers, monuments, or tombs.
- d. It is recommended that landscaping reflect the historic landscape design.
- e. Existing trees are protected, except that unhealthy or damaged trees may be removed.
- f. New or replacement shrubs or trees may not be planted on graves.
- g. Ground cover may not be planted over, or allowed to extend over, a grave.
- h. It is recommended that lawnmowers without bumpers and weedwackers with metal blades or wires not be used around grave markers, as these cause irreversible damage. It is recommended that lawnmower bumpers, fabricated from rubber tires or inner tubes, should be attached to lawnmowers to provide a buffer between the machine and the grave marker. Weedwackers with soft nylon whips may be used around grave markers.

3.6 The grade of any area within Pioneer Cemetery may not be changed.

3.7 Fences

- a. New fences are not allowed at graves.
- b. Replacement fences are allowed if evidence exists that there was a fence at the location, and adequate documentation exists to guide replication. Replacement fences must match the original fence in material, design, style, and height.

24938

- c. Fences are not allowed along public right-of-ways or public walkways.
 - d. Fences may not exceed 36 inches in height.
- 3.8 Replacement curbs are allowed around a collection of graves if the replacement curbs match the original curb in material, design, style, and height. Pink granite may not be used as curb material.

4. GRAVE MARKERS, MONUMENTS, AND TOMBS

- 4.1 Existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs are protected.
- 4.2 Damaged grave markers, monuments, and tombs should be restored to their historic appearance.
- 4.3 Replacement grave markers
 - a. Grave markers that are missing or damaged beyond repair should be replaced with grave markers that match the historic grave marker in design, material, color, and size.
 - b. The identification of unidentified graves is encouraged. Following research to determine the identity of the deceased and other pertinent information, marking of unidentified graves is encouraged.
 - c. If the design of the original grave marker is not known, new flat grave markers may be used as shown in Exhibit C.
 - d. Texas Historical Commission standard grave markers may be placed at grave markers as shown in Exhibit C. New grave markers must be constructed of marble, granite, stone, or other natural stone. Pink or black granite markers are not permitted.
 - e. New replacement family grave markers may be used as shown in Exhibit C.
- 4.4 No new monuments or tombs may be erected. This does not prohibit informational signs or plaques associated with the history of Pioneer Cemetery or the individuals buried there.

- 4.5 Conservation, repair, and maintenance of grave markers, monuments, and tombs
- a. Grave markers, monuments, and tombs in good condition:
 1. Existing grave markers, monuments, and tombs should be cleaned regularly, but not more than once every 18 months.
 2. Routine cleaning of grave markers, monuments, and tombs is done by scrubbing with soft brushes using water with mild detergent, followed by a thorough rinsing with water.
 3. Lichen or algae should be removed from grave markers, monuments, and tombs by thoroughly soaking the stone with water and then using a wood scraper to gently remove the lichen or algae. It may be necessary to repeat the process several times.
 - b. Grave markers that have a friable surface or that are delicate, brittle, or easily damaged should not be cleaned.
 - c. Bronze sculptures should periodically be washed, recoated with lacquer (if applicable), or waxed, but not more than once every 6 months.
 - d. Abrasives, acids, bases, household cleaners, wire brushes, soap, and pressure blasting may not be used to clean bronze or stone.
 - e. If a grave marker must be removed for repairs, a temporary grave marker should be installed before the damaged grave marker is removed.
 - f. Grave markers which have broken into two or more pieces must be repaired using standards accepted by the Association for Grave Stone Studies, 278 Main Street, Suite 207, Greenfield, Massachusetts 01301 (413-772-0836 or <http://www.gravestonestudies.org>) or as detailed in *A Graveyard Preservation Primer* by Lynette Stranstad.
 - g. Fallen or broken grave markers may not be repaired by embedding them in concrete or using metal splints; both methods are detrimental to the integrity of the stone.

5. BURIALS AND REINTERMENTS

- 5.1 Pioneer Cemetery may contain unmarked graves. In the event that remains or artifacts suggestive of the presence of a grave are encountered, the site must be secured, the city's historic preservation officer notified, and all activities at the site cease. A certificate of appropriateness to restore the site or relocate the grave must be obtained before activities may resume.
- 5.2 Relocation of marked or unmarked graves must be conducted in accordance with Texas Council of Archaeologists guidelines.
- 5.3 New burials are not allowed.
- 5.4 Reinterments must be reviewed through the certificate of appropriateness process.
- 5.5 After a reinterment is completed, the original grade of that area must be restored.
- 5.6 Archeological excavations may be allowed through the certificate of appropriateness process.

6. PROTECTED FEATURES

- 6.1 The following elements are considered important features and are protected:
 - a. Grave markers
 - b. Monuments
 - c. Tombs
 - d. Historic fences
 - e. Historic walkways
 - f. Grade and topography

7. NEW CONSTRUCTION

- 7.1 Stand-alone new construction is not permitted.

24938

8. SIGNS

- 8.1 Identification, interpretative, and directional signs may be erected if appropriate.
- 8.2 All signs must comply with the provisions of the Dallas City Code, as amended.

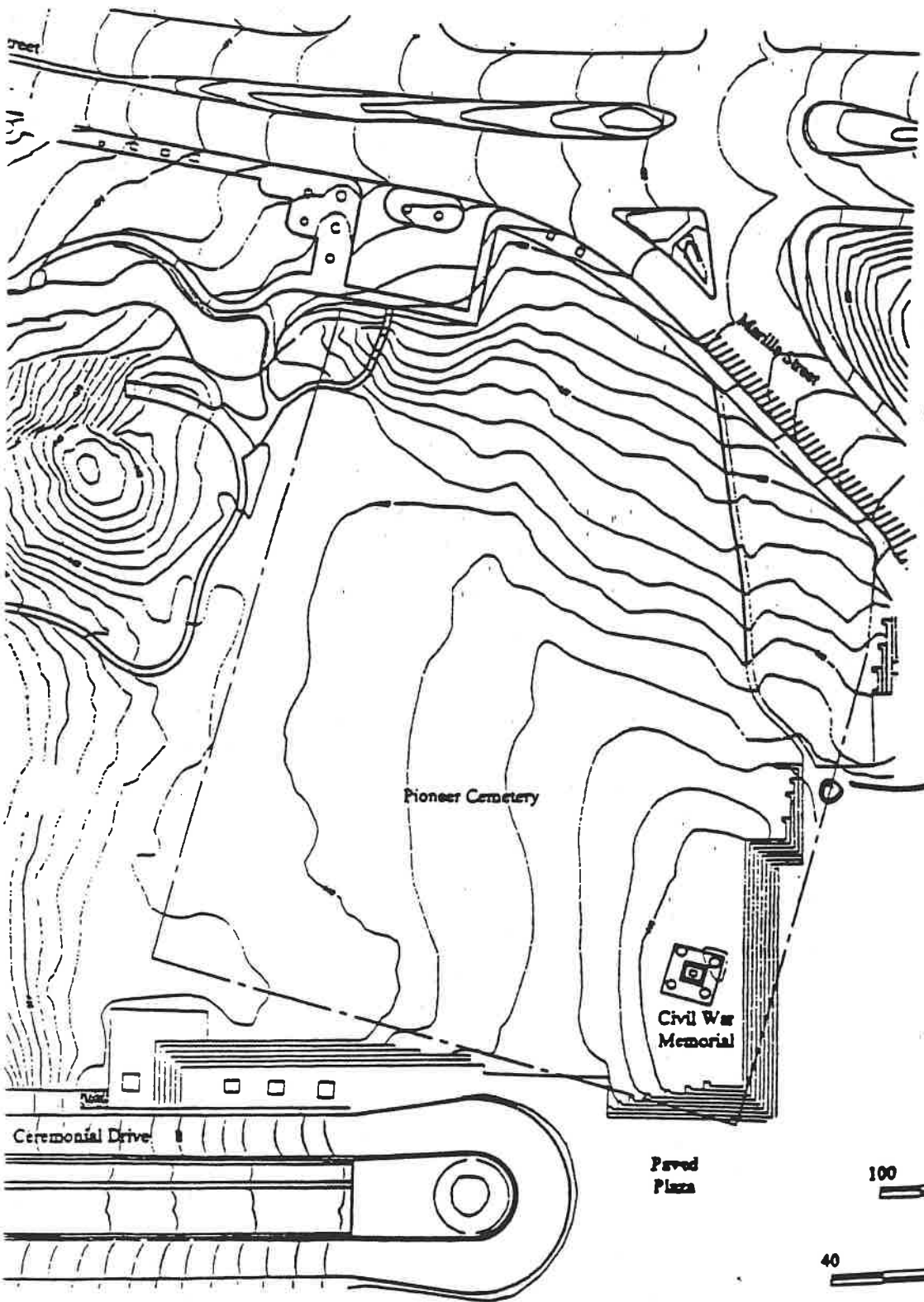
9. RESOURCES

- 9.1 The following resources should be consulted when evaluating the appropriateness of maintenance, repairs, and alterations:
 - a. *"Conservation of Cemetery Structures"* Dennis, John R.; article included in *Preservation Plan for Plano Historic Cemeteries*.
 - b. *Conservation of Buildings and Decorative Stone*, Volumes 1 and 2, John Ashurst and Francis G. Dimes, Editors. London, Butterworth-Heinemann, 1990.
 - c. *"Maintenance of Outdoor Sculpture: Whose Job Is It?"* Program at the 20th Annual Meeting of the American Institute of Conservation (AIC), June 2-3, 1992, Buffalo, NY.
 - d. *Metals in America's Historic Buildings: Uses and Preservation Treatments*, Margot Gayle, David W. Look, AIA, and John G. Waite. Washington DC, National Park Service, 1980.
 - e. *"Keeping it Clean, Removing Exterior Dirt, Paint, Stains, and Graffiti from Historic Masonry Buildings,"* Anne E. Grimmer, Washington DC, National Park Service, 1990.
 - f. *Ancient and Historic Metals, Conservation and Scientific Research*, David A. Scott, Jerry Podany, and Brian B. Considine, Editors. Proceedings from a Symposium by the J. Paul Getty Museum, November 1991. Getty Trust Publications, Getty Conservation Institute, 1995.
 - g. *Sculpture Conservation, Preservation or Interference?* Phillip Lindley, Editor. Aldershot, 1997.
 - h. *"Repointing Mortar Joints in Historic Brick Buildings,"* Robert C. Mack, Washington DC, National Park Service, 1976.
 - i. *"Conserving Outdoor Bronze Sculpture: The Thaddeus Kosciuszko Monument, Washington DC,"* Dennis R. Montagna, *Preservation Tech Notes*, Washington DC, National Park Service, 1989.

- j. *Guide to Maintenance of Outdoor Sculpture*, Virginia N. Naude and Glenn Wharton, American Institute of Conservation of Historic and Artistic Works (AIC), Washington DC, 1993.
- k. The Association for Grave Stone Studies, 278 Main Street, Suite 207 Greenfield, MA 01303, <http://www.gravestonestudies.org>.
- l. *The Texas Ten: Preserving the State's Historic Outdoor Sculpture*, Texas Historic Commission, Austin, Texas 1999.
- m. *Preservation Plan for Plano Historic Cemeteries*, Angela Tine and John R. Dennis, (Geo-Marine, Inc.), report for City of Plano, Texas, September 2000.

Exhibit B

Pioneer Cemetery

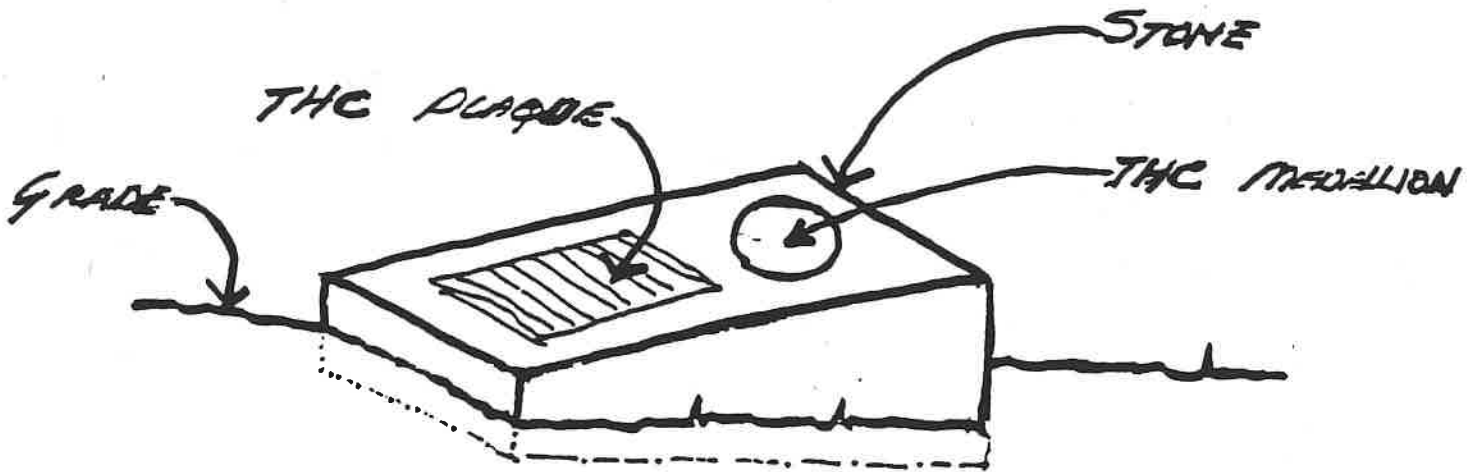


HISTORIC DISTRICT BOUNDARY



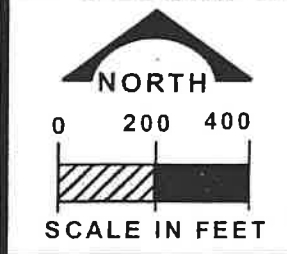
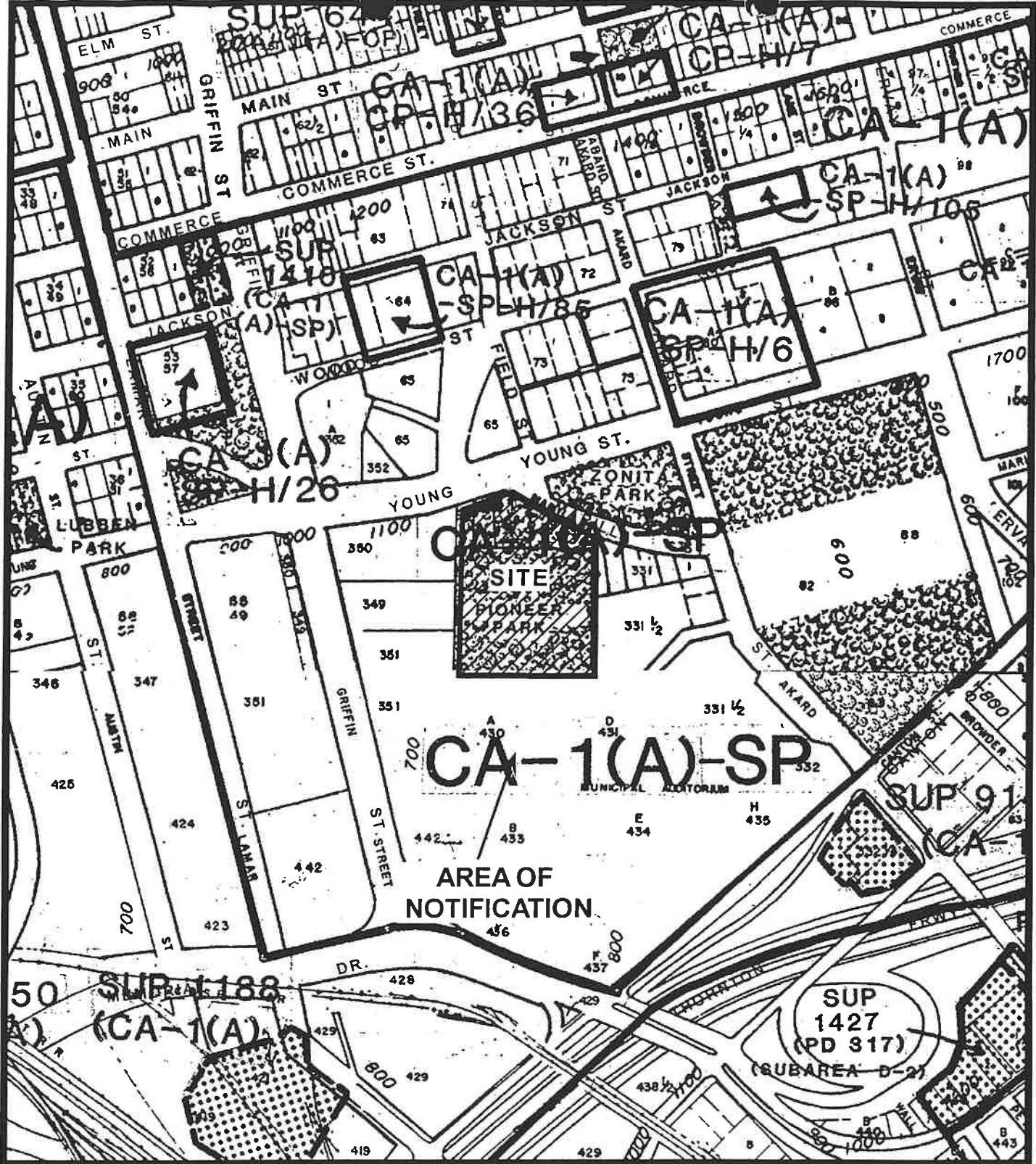
24938

021629



RECOMMENDED DESIGN FOR GRAVE MARKER WITH
TEXAS HISTORICAL COMMISSION PLAQUE

EXHIBIT C



ZONING

 **AREA OF REQUEST**

MAP NO. J-7

CASE NO. Z012-184/11637(JA)

**Dallas Landmark Commission
Landmark Nomination Form**

1. Name *Pioneer Cemetery*

historic:
and/or common: *Pioneer Cemetery*
date: 1849

2. Location

address: *Marilla Street (bound by Convention Center and Young St.)
(see Exhibit A)*

location/neighborhood: *Downtown Dallas, City Hall-Convention Center*

block: **lot:** **land survey:**
tract size: *Approximately 4 acres*

3. Current Zoning

current zoning: CA-1

4. Classification

Category	Ownership	Status	Present Use	<u> </u> museum
<u> </u> district	<u> X </u> public	<u> </u> occupied	<u> </u> agricultural	<u> X </u> park
<u> </u> building(s)	<u> </u> private	<u> </u> unoccupied	<u> </u> commercial	<u> </u> residence
<u> </u> structure	<u> </u> both	<u> </u> work in progress	<u> </u> educational	<u> </u> religious
<u> X </u> site	Public	Accessibility	<u> </u> entertainment	<u> </u> scientific
<u> </u> object	Acquisition	<u> X </u> yes:restricted	<u> </u> government	<u> </u> transportation
	<u> </u> in progress	<u> </u> yes:unrestricted	<u> </u> industrial	<u> </u> other, specify
	<u> </u> being considered	<u> </u> no	<u> </u> military	<u> </u> Cemetery

5. Ownership

Current Owner: *City of Dallas, Parks and Recreation Department*
Contact: *Willis Winters, Assistant Director* **Phone:**
Address: *1500 Marilla Street, 6DN* **City:** Dallas **State:** TX **Zip:** 75201

6. Form Preparation

Date: *October 10, 2001*
Name & Title: *Frances James (Landmark Commissioner)*
Jack Guerra (Chief Planner-Hist. Preservation)
Organization: *City of Dallas*

Contact: 214 670-3620

Phone: 214 381-0445

7. Representation on Existing Surveys

Alexander Survey (citywide) local state national National Register
H.P.L. Survey (CBD) A B C D Recorded TX Historic Ldmk
Oak Cliff TX Archaeological Ldmk
Victorian Survey
Dallas Historic Resources Survey, Phase ____ high ____ medium ____ low

For Office Use Only

Date Rec'd: _____ Survey Verified: Y N by: _____ Field Check by: _____ Petitions Needed: Y N
Nomination: Archaeological Site Structure(s) Structure & Site District

8. Historic Ownership

original owner: *J.B. McDermott*
significant later owner(s): *William Turbeville*

9. Construction Dates

original: *circa 1850*
alterations/additions:

10. Architect

original construction:
alterations/additions:

11. Site Features

natural: *gentle slope of hill as viewed from Marilla and Young Streets, on well maintained lawn grounds, mature trees evenly distributed to provide shade*
urban design: *pastoral setting, with many old, erect grave markers in various physical conditions*

12. Physical Description

Condition, check one:

- excellent
- good
- fair

- deteriorated
- ruins
- unexposed

- unaltered
- altered

Check one:

- original site
- moved(date _____)

Early maps and descriptions characterize Pioneer Cemetery as being located on a high piece of ground and isolated from the original town of Dallas. This site was high enough that it was protected from flooding, making the site a perfect place for a cemetery. Historically it was four separate cemeteries: the Masonic Cemetery, the Odd Fellow's Cemetery, the Jewish cemetery, and the City cemetery.

The first land transfers were between James N. Smith, W. L. Murphy, W. P. Martin, and Alexander Cockrell when they deeded three acres to the Tannehill Lodge No. 52 and Lodge No. 44 of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows for use as cemeteries. These two lodges operated the cemeteries separately under the same deed.

In 1871 the mayor of Dallas was authorized to purchase an additional three acre tract of land from Nancy Turbeville, the widow of William Turbeville. Nancy reserved a one-eight acre parcel for a family cemetery where William was already buried.

In 1872 the Hebrew Benevolent Association acquired two small sections of land for a cemetery to be used for the small Jewish Community.

There has not been a burial at this site since 1921 and of the original six acres of land only a small portion has been preserved next to the Convention Center in downtown Dallas.

13. Historical Significance

The original one half mile town of Dallas, as laid out by J.P Dumas, surveyor, in 1844 was on small portion of the 580 acres of land that John Neely Bryan received from the State of Texas by patent dated January 25, 1847.¹ The land claimed by Bryan was on the east side of the Trinity River, that diagonally crossed Dallas County, meandering more or less west to east in this area. The Grigsby League of 4605 acres had been granted to John Grigsby by Sam Houston, President of the Republic of Texas January 29, 1842.² These two land grants bisecting the cemetery area, Bryan's 580 acre grant and the Grigsby League, runs diagonally through the cemetery and cover the entire downtown section of Dallas. The original town of Dallas that received its charter in 1856 is two blocks from the northwest corner of the cemetery.³

Problems were caused by these conflicting boundaries, delaying warranted deeds, deaths, early sales with special warranted deeds, killings, second marriages, various relationships, children, and many other lawsuits added to the legal quandary. It was in the late 1870s, before the last cases involving the Grigsby League were finally settled.

The earliest maps of Dallas County show Town Branch running near the cemetery.⁴ A "Bird's Eye View" produced in 1875 shows many trees. Town Branch drains into the Trinity River which was nearer town before the levees rerouting the channel to the west were finally completed in the late 1930s. As far back as 1830 there is a record of a group of Texas Indian fighters (who

Continuation Sheet

Item # 13

(Page 2 of 16)

had been badly whipped in a battle about where Decatur in Wise County is now) wading down the Trinity and climbing up to camp for several days at a spring, nineteen feet below the present ground level. They camped long enough to recover before moving on. This camp was said to be where the Santa Fe Buildings were later built across Young Street northwest of the cemetery.⁵

Until 1871 the entire site of the burying ground, now known as Pioneer Cemetery, was rather remote from town, somewhat higher than surrounding land and was not included in the City Limits. The land had first been used for a burying ground for Mr. J. B. McDermott (1790-1854), Mrs. Stone (18-- - 1855). Other rare records show Anderson Armstrong was buried at this site in 1849. The James Armstrong family came to Dallas in 1846 and history records mention that Anderson died in 1849.⁶ There is another record of the burial of Logan Cockrell, son of Sarah Horton and Alexander Cockrell who had been born in 1848 died in February 1850. This baby was born while the Cockrells still lived on their land by Mountain Creek, before the purchase of John Neely Bryan's unsold lots in the town of Dallas in 1853. Alexander Cockrell, who was killed in 1858 while trying to collect a debt from the newly elected town Marshall, was also buried in this Cemetery.⁷ Before she died in 1892, Sarah Horton had purchased a large plot at the new perpetual care cemetery, first called Trinity and now known as Greenwood, and

Continuation Sheet

Item # 13

(Page 3 of 16)

re-interred both Logan and her husband, Alexander. Baby Logan's stone was left at Pioneer.⁸

Masonic Lodge records from the Tannehill Lodge No. 52, A.F.&A.M. instituted in 1849 and Dallas Lodge No. 44, I.O.O. F. instituted in 1854 both mention the cemetery and early burials before the deed to acquire the land was recorded in 1857.⁹ At this time it was formally declared a cemetery and it is now presumed the lots were platted. In the 1870s the lodges advertised in the paper that only lodge members and their families could be buried as they were running out of space.¹⁰

The site next to these two cemeteries where the City Cemetery was later located had originally been owned by William and Nancy Turbeville (Teuberville) who were in Dallas by 1858. The deed records show they paid twelve hundred and sixty seven dollars for a twenty-four acre tract from John W. Smith at this time. This deed was not filed until 1868. The Grantors J.W. Smith, W.L. Murphy, James W. Martin, Elizabeth Martin. Murphy was a land agent for the State of Texas and the first treasurer for the City of Dallas when it was chartered in 1856. J.W. Smith came to Dallas in 1846 and along with James Patterson opened the first mercantile business in the area. The census for 1860 reveals that Virginia native Turbeville was listed as a grocer.

Continuation Sheet

Item # 13

(Page 4 of 16)

William Turbeville sold 22.5 acres to W.C.C. Akard (1826-1870) in 1865.¹¹ Akard was a merchant and on this acreage is where the Akard's built their house. Since the railroads did not reach Dallas until 1872, Mr. Akard had gone to Calvert, Texas where the Houston and Pacific Railroad had stopped before the Civil War for a load of merchandise and died while enroute back to Dallas in 1870.¹² An item in the minutes of the Masonic Lodge notes that Mrs. Akard had been approached about a sale of her land, but that she had refused to sell.¹³ The Federal Reserve Bank (opened in 1914) which has recently been purchased after standing vacant for several years is standing on this site of the Akard's home place. Sarah Bowen Akard later married for a second time to A. C. Daniel.

Mrs. Nancy Turberville (1828-18??) widow of William Turbeville(1813-1869), deeded three acres of land to the then Mayor Henry Ervay for \$500.00 in 1871 to be used as the City Cemetery.¹⁴ She reserved one-eighth acre as a family burying ground to include the grave of her deceased husband. It appears the city later used the land for other purposes. By 1871 the boundaries of the city limits of Dallas had changed and at this time included the cemetery.

Continuation Sheet

In 1872 the Hebrew Benevolent Association acquired a plot of land on Akard Street from the city (Mayor Henry Ervay) for its cemetery. This was hastily acquired when a young Jewish man named Adolph Deutchner suddenly died. This site was adjacent to the Masonic, Odd Fellows, and City cemeteries already in use.¹⁵ A few days after Adolph died, the Association notified Adolph's parents that a fence had been fixed to protect the gravesite. A second parcel, seventy-five by ninety feet, augmenting this plot was deeded in 1874 to Emanuel Tillman as a trustee for the Association by Captain George M. Swink. Swink had been elected alderman for the city in 1872 and also started the mule drawn line that took passengers from the train depot to the courthouse.

These two small parcels once owned by the Hebrew Benevolent Association were sold to the city in 1956 when they were acquiring property for the Convention Center. Temple Emanu El accepted the city's offer to move each grave in its entirety, with existing headstones or markers and replace each one in a special section at Temple Emanuel Cemetery on Howell Street. A marker was placed at this site which reads:

*On November 15, 1956, the graves of early Jewish settlers of the
Dallas Community were transferred with care and reverence to
this designated area. These graves were located originally on
South
Akard Street in Dallas' first Jewish cemetery (1873-1886).*

By 1888 the Sanborn Maps show the elevated rail line south of Lamar. This line was advertised as going to Oak Cliff. In 1899 the cemetery was included on the Sanborn Maps. The railroad lines on Marilla Street were noted as the H&TC Freight Siding. They connected the H&TC (Central) to other rail lines to the west.

In 1893 Columbian School on Royal Street was opened and served this depressed are until 1923 when it became the School Administration Building. In 1954 this stone and Romanesque Revival school building that had been designed for the city (this was before there was a Dallas Independent School District) by James Flanders was razed when land was being acquired for the Convention Center. This site is near the corner where the Gold Star Mothers memorial is presently located.¹⁶

A review of the surrounding land area block by block reveals the flimsy structures that were built were occupied by various workmen. This type of housing tended toward rapid deterioration and without running water, and no infrastructure available, most had outhouses. The Dallas Cotton Mill was built a few blocks south of the Cemetery on Corinth Street. This plant had a large work force. Due to the concern of George B. Dealey, Vice President and General Manager of the Dallas Morning News, who had recognized the need for a park in this depressed area of Dallas, the Park Board road the South Belt Streetcar (Myrtle Line) out to the neighborhood to see for themselves.

The site picked for the park was four and one-half acres across the street from the Cotton Mill. By 1908 a temporary building was erected housing much needed shower facilities and an assembly room which doubled as a kindergarten.¹⁷ This was the first community center in the city. Along with the kindergarten there was a day nursery, milk station, wading pool, picnic facilities, baseball diamond, tennis court, swings, and other play equipment and the field house had free baths. The condition of the neighborhood was known to have contributed to crime and violence, and the children were suffering. It took the efforts of various women's organizations, along with donations and the support of the Mayor and other citizens to make the park a success.

After the severe flood in 1908 on the Trinity River, when Dallas was separated from Oak Cliff and so much of downtown Dallas was endangered by the high water, the city undertook to remedy this hazard by hiring George Kessler, a city planner. One of his “must” recommendations was the control of the river. This vision of levees and straightening the river from the mouth of Turtle Creek southward approximately three and one-half to four miles would secure flood protection for the entire city. The recommendations went on to advise that filling of the lowland outside and adjacent to the levees would provide additional room for railroad terminals and switching properties. It was years before these recommendations became reality, but when they did, this set the plan for the area of town on the west side of the Convention Center.¹⁸

The railroad switching yards were placed side by side in the area next to the levees. Warehouses were erected, docks for receiving goods for shipping and storage were built adjacent to the tracks. A cotton warehouse, a cotton mill, several rendering plants began emitting strong odors and cheap, flimsy, housing was produced to rent to the workers so that they could walk to work. The City built the sewage disposal plant close to this area adding more odors. This all happened before there was official planning and zoning in Dallas, so housing next to factories with or without obnoxious odors was allowed to be built. This set the stage for the entire area for many years.¹⁹

In the 1930s the city started talking about building a downtown auditorium. The location under discussion was next to the Masonic and Odd Fellows Pioneer Cemetery and would include a park. In 1936 the study area for this project was described as being composed of warehouses, shacks, and dilapidated rooming houses a few blocks south of the downtown district. Some of these rooming house are noted as “female boarding” houses. The neglected run down condition of this area probably caused the City to consider this site.

By the 1940s the City had started assembling parcels of this land for the Convention Center. Well known names of former landowners were Dr. W.W. Samuells, Lawrence Kahn, B. Schoellkopf and S. Topletz, whose family still owns many sites in Dallas – some on the Urban Rehabilitation Standard Boards list to be demolished.²⁰

In 1925 a list and a numbered plat of persons buried in the Odd Fellows section was compiled by John M . Young, Assistant City Engineer. Mr. Young was the son of Rev. Wm. C. Young the last person known to have been buried in the cemetery in 1921.²¹ John Young noted he was following up on a listing that had been made in 1921.

Railroad tracks were on Marilla very close to the cemetery, and at one time an attempt was made to build warehouses on adjacent property.²² But when it was found burials were on the land this idea was abandoned. Numerous lawsuits were filed in protest at this time.

The land acquired from Mrs. Nancy Turbeville by the city in 1871 was once thought to be the City's pauper's burial ground. Research reveals many of the persons buried in the city section had deeds to their lots and were citizens of Dallas who owned businesses and were not paupers.²³ The records for these burial plots was poorly kept. Through the entire 20th century the site of these cemeteries has been under constant assault. Various associations tried to get the responsible parties to care for these sacred spots

In 1948 Willie Flowers Carlisle, her husband, and her daughter, members of the Butler Bonham Chapter of the Daughters of the Republic of Texas, spent over twelve years inventorying many of the pioneer cemeteries in Dallas County. Fifty years ago Mrs. Carlisle had an opportunity to write several columns in the Dallas Morning News on Dallas history and the conditions of its cemeteries were usually mentioned. At that time she noted the visitors to Dallas would see this neglected civic asset that was infested

with matted grass and undergrowth that was hiding the stones, and that many were broken and lying on the ground.²⁴

In 1948, the City Council approved a recommendation by the City Manager that the city not take over and maintain the Old Cemetery as requested by the Butler Bonham Chapter of the Daughters of the Republic of Texas as this was private property belonging to the estate of E.W. Morton and Rhodes S. Baker.²⁵

The Daughters of the Confederacy wrote a letter to the Mayor of Dallas in the 1940's deploring the desecration and neglect of the cemetery. They stated "its care should be considered a holy trust."

This same group asked the City to enforce the law and keep the automobiles from parking on the cemetery in 1948. Later they were plaintiffs in a suit filed in Judge Sarah T. Hughes Court asking her to order members of Lodge No. 44 to stop a parking lot operation and put things back where they found them. The Masonic Lodge claimed this was the part owned by the Odd Fellows.

In 1951 the Dallas County Pioneer Association at its seventy-sixth annual reunion joined

the Daughters in their efforts to maintain the Old Cemetery. In October 1951 the title for the Masonic and Odd Fellows cemeteries was transferred to the city by the Lodges. This title along with other adjacent individually owned small lots was to be included in a planned Memorial Park.²⁶

In 1961, due to plans to construct R.L. Thornton Freeway, the Confederate Monument was moved from the area of Old City Park where it had been for sixty-five years to its present location in Pioneer Park. This sculptor chosen for the monument was Frank Teich from San Antonio. The efforts to raise the sum of \$4500.00 were expanded by the Daughters of the Confederacy. The Dallas UDC Chapter gave concerts, served dinners, and all sorts of events to raise the necessary funds. The monument was dedicated in 1896 with a daylong celebration and parade. The daughter of Jefferson Davis was present for the occasion.²⁷ Over a century later in 1997 the Dallas Chapter 6 of the UDC rededicated the monument that had been restored after so many years of erosion and neglect.²⁸

Winfield Morton, part owner of the City Cemetery land and Park Board President Ray Hubbard were reopening purchase talks in 1969. The city council authorized payment of \$748, 472 to be paid to the then so-called owners of the City Cemetery.²⁹ The City

Manager explained that “the Masonic and Odd Fellows section would remain, but that there were only a few scattered graves in the city site and is not maintained.” Mayor Earle Cabell said they would be moved to a central location. In Mrs. Carlisle’s list of the City Cemetery there were thirty-one graves. In 1970 when construction began on the initial plans for the Convention Center on this site, the city placed twenty-two identical markers along the sidewalk of persons once buried in the City Cemetery. No record of where the graves were moved to. The Dallas Park and Recreation Department now maintain both the Masonic and Odd Fellow sections of the Cemetery.

In 1994, the Downtown Improvement District contracted with a cemetery restoration company to repair the broken markers, level the ones in danger of toppling over, and other damaged items to completely improve the image of the Cemeteries. As visitors come to Dallas for the many conventions nearby, many stroll through the area and are able to read the Texas Historical Grave Markers as well as the headstones concerned with the early pioneers of our city. Just as Mrs. Carlisle and the other members of the DRT noted many years ago, this is a civic asset

In 1993 the installation of the first of eventually seventy bronze longhorn steers denoting Dallas ties to the cattle industry and Texas cowboys was contemplated. The land used

for the sculptures had at one time been reserved for a hotel. When this did not materialize Trammel Crow was able to secure the land and visualized it as the site for the steers. Now this display is one of the busiest corners of the downtown area as people both local and visitors come to view the bronze steers.

In 1999 it was necessary for the cemetery to be involved again due to the Expansion of the Convention Center. Plans to change the driveway and entrance to the Convention caused an archaeology study to be made in the Odd Fellows section and fifteen graves were discovered in the area that was to be impacted by the expansion. These bodies were re-interred in a site very near their original resting place and a marker has been placed in this regard.

Dallas Landmark Designation for the Pioneer Cemetery will honor the early pioneers who paved the way for the Dallas we know today.

Early Dallas Citizens Buried at Pioneer Cemetery

Mayors of Dallas

John Crockett (1816-1878) Mayor Dallas in 1857, again in 1859 and acting Mayor from 1861-1865)

John William Crowds (1828-1895) Mayor of Dallas in 1881.

John J. Good (1827-1882) Mayor of Dallas in 1880.

A.D. Rice (1818-1869) Mayor of Dallas in 1858.

Doctors in Dallas

Dr. John Stephens (1824-1881) Medical Director of Confederate States Army in Virginia. (body moved)

Dr. Samuel Field (1839-1912) City Health Department, Physician for Gould Railroad, State Health Inspector at Beaumont during yellow fever Epidemic.

Dr. Anderson D. Rice (1818-1869) Practicing in Dallas by 1848, County Treasurer 1852-1854 and second Mayor of Dallas.

Dr. Roy B. Scott (1822-1884)

Dr. Wm Hora Armstrong (1849-1884)

Dr. F.L. Willemette – (1820-1884) was a City Alderman and had a restaurant

Elected Officials

Hickerson Barksdale (1839-1884) City Alderman 1873 – District Judge 1873- 1876).

Julius Bogel – City Assessor and Collector of Taxes from 1878-1886

Continuation Sheet

Item # 13

(Page 15 of 16)

Edward Browder (1825-1873) District Clerk from 1850-1854.

Jerry Brown (1828-1879) Sheriff from 1866-1870.

Thomas J.A. Brown (1855-1896) first City Judge, first City Recorder, and City Alderman in 1886.

Robert M. Cooke – Justice of the Peace in 1858 and County Surveyor from 1873-1878.

John M. Crockett (1816-1878) Lt. Governor 1861-1863, State Representative from 1853-1859.

John William Crowds – City Alderman from 1875-1878 – Mayor in 1881

Nicholas Darnell (1807-1885) – served in State legislature for several terms, Speaker of the House in 1842 member of the Constitutional Convention in 1845 and again in 1875 he represented Dallas, Ellis and Tarrant Counties.

Thomas Flynn (1833-18) City Marshall from 1872-1874,

Alexander Harwood (1820-1885) County Clerk from 1850-1882

John J. Good – Judge of the 16th District Court in 1866 - Mayor of Dallas in 1880

Trezevant Calhoun Hawpe (1820-1863) Sheriff of Dallas County in 1850 and 1852 – Colonel of 31st Texas Regiment – killed on the Courthouse steps by a friend.

John M. Laws (1831-1896) District and County Clerk from 1869-1873.

J.W. Latimer – published first newspaper in Dallas – Chief Justice of the County in 1850 – City Alderman in 1856

Marion Moon – City Marshall in 1858 – City Alderman in 1859 – Sheriff from 1878-1880

James M. Patterson – first general store in Dallas – Chief Justice of Dallas County from 1854 to

1866

Continuation Sheet

Item # 13

(Page 16 of 16)

William Wallace Peak – County Clerk from 1854-1856 – City Alderman 1858- 1861 - Justice of the Peace in Precinct No. I in 1876

James J. Polk Record – City Alderman in 1858 – State Senator from Dallas County in 1866 – delegate to Constitutional Convention in 1866

A.D. Rice – County Treasurer from 1851-1854 – second Mayor of Dallas

William H. Scales – City Alderman in 1873 to fill out a term

James N. Smith – Justice of Peace from 1856-1860 – City Alderman from 1858- 1862

John W. Smith – County Clerk in 1848

F.L. Willemet – born in France – doctor for Reunion Colonist – City Alderman 1870-1876

Reverend Wm. C. Young – District Clerk from 1866-1868

14. Bibliography

Caldwell, Shirley, completed the application for a Texas Historical Marker for Pioneer Cemetery in 1985.

Castleberry, Vivian, Daughters of Dallas published by Odenwald Press, Dallas Texas in 1994.

Christol, Gerry, A Light in the Prairie, published by Texas Christian University, Fort Worth, Texas in 1998.

Cooper, Judy Hennessee, Tine', Angela L., Prior, Marsha, Clow, Charles M., Shanabrook, David, Salo, Ed., Cultural Resources and Investigations at the Dallas Convention Center and Pioneer Cemetery, Dallas, Texas, published by Geo Marine in 2000.

Dallas County Deed Records.

Directories for the City of Dallas, 1875-1900-1915-1924.

Jepsen, Harry, Jr., PH.D., Newton, Robert M., M.A., Hogan, Patricia R., M.S., Centennial History of the Dallas, Texas Park System 1876-1976 published by Texas Tech University, Lubbock Texas in 1976.

Kimball, Justine F., Our City Dallas published by Dallas Independent School District in 1953.

McDonald, William L., Dallas Rediscovered – A Photographic Chronicle of Urban Expansion 1870-1925 published by Dallas Historical Society in 1978.

Memorial and Biographical History of Dallas County, published by Lewis Publishing Company. Chicago, Illinois in 1892

Minutaglio, Bill and Williams, Holly, The Hidden City –Oak Cliff, published by Elmwood Press and the Old Oak Cliff Conservation League in 1990.

Payne, Darwin, An Illustrated History published Windsor Publications, Woodland Hills, California in 1982.

Sharpe, Ernest, G.B. Dealey of the Dallas News, published by Henry Holt and Company, New York, New York in 1955.

Switzer, David S., It's Our Dallas County – The Story of Self Government Since 1846 published by D.S. Switzer Educational Writings in 1954.

W. P. A. Dallas Guide and History, compiled in the 1940s and finally published by Dallas Public Library and the University of North Texas Press fifty years later in 1992.

Maps

City of Dallas Map dated 1891.

Sanborn Map No. 16 for 1899.

Bracey.s Plat Maps for 1939 – 1949.

Private papers of Frances James

15. Attachments

District or Site Map

Site Plan

Photos (historic & current)

Additional descriptive material

Footnotes

Other: _____

17. Designation Criteria

History, heritage and culture:

Represents the historical development, ethnic heritage or cultural characteristics of the city, state, or country.

Historic event: *Location of or association with the site of a significant historic event.*

Significant persons: *Identification with a person or persons who significantly contributed to the culture and development of the city, state, or country.*

Architecture: *Embodiment of distinguishing characteristics of an architectural style, landscape design, method of construction, exceptional craftsmanship, architectural innovation, or contains details which represent folk or ethnic art.*

Architect or master builder: *Represents the work of an architect, designer or master builder whose individual work has influenced the development of the city, state or country.*

Historic context: *Relationship to other distinctive buildings, sites, or areas which are eligible for preservation based on historic, cultural, or architectural characteristics.*

Unique visual feature: *Unique location of singular physical characteristics representing an established and familiar visual feature of a neighborhood, community or the city that is a source of pride or cultural significance.*

Archeological: *Archeological or paleontological value in that it has produced or can be expected to produce data affecting theories of historic or prehistoric interest.*

National and state recognition: *Eligible of or designated as a National Historic Landmark, Recorded Texas Historic Landmark, State Archeological Landmark, American Civil Engineering Landmark, or eligible for inclusion in the National Register of Historic Places.*

Historic education: *Represents an era of architectural, social, or economic history that allows an understanding of how the place or area was used by past generations.*

Recommendation

The Designation Task Force requests the Landmark Commission to deem this nominated landmark meritorious of designation as outlined in Chapter 51 and Chapter 51A, Dallas Development Code.

Further, the Designation Task Force endorses the Preservation Criteria, policy recommendations and landmark boundary as presented by the Department of Planning and Development.

Date:

*Chair
Designation Task Force*

*Chair
Designation Task Force*

Historic Preservation Planner

-
- ¹ Dallas County Deed Records Volume B page 454
 - ² Dallas County Deed Records Volume A page 65 and 66
 - ³ Memorial and Biographical History page 273.
 - ⁴ Map of Dallas - Dallas County Deed Record Volume D page 698
 - ⁵ Our City Dallas page 3
 - ⁶ Memorial and Biographical History Page 152
 - ⁷ The Dallas Herald April 10, 1858.
 - ⁸ Cemetery records at Greenwood Cemetery
 - ⁹ Dallas County Deed Records Volume F page 26-27
 - ¹⁰ Tannehill Lodge records – notice to run in the Times Herald for a period of three months
 - ¹¹ Dallas County Deed Records Volume J page 1865
 - ¹² Cemetery Records – date on headstone
 - ¹³ Minutes of Tannehill Lodge
 - ¹⁴ Dallas County Deed Records Volume P page 84
 - ¹⁵ Hebrew Benevolent Association Minute Book
 - ¹⁶ Education in Dallas – 1874-1966 page 38
 - ¹⁷ Centennial History of the Dallas, Texas Park System pages 117, 220-221
 - ¹⁸ Dallas Yesterday - George E. Kessler – creator of Dallas' first master plan in 1910
– page 55
 - ¹⁹ Study of early maps of the area
 - ²⁰ Bracey Plat Maps

-
- ²¹ File in Dallas Public Library on the Pioneer Cemetery
- ²² Records of Tannehill Lodge – offer made to buy the land in 1920 and build a warehouse – at first Lodge agreed to sale, thn protests caused it to abandon the project
- ²³ Private research by Frances James
- ²⁴ Clipping File at the Dallas Public Library
- ²⁵ A very questionable sale and cloudy title
- ²⁶ Dallas County Deed Records Volume 3575 pages 432-33
- ²⁷ Clipping from the Dallas Morning News describing the event June 25,1896.
Clipping dated August 12, 1961 when the statue was moved to its new site in Pioneer Cemetery.
- ²⁸ Sculpture was re-dedicated on October 12, 1997. United Daughters of the Confederacy sponsored the event – brochure and program in private papers of Frances James. Clipping from Dallas Morning News dated October 13, 1997. in library
- ²⁹ City of Dallas Ordinance Volume - 69-1476 - Volume 69169 page 1543

SECTION 7

City of Dallas Demolition
Standards
Dallas Development Code
§ 51A-4.501(h)(2)(f)

case back to the landmark commission in accordance with Subsection (m). In reviewing the landmark commission decision the city plan commission shall use the substantial evidence standard in Subsection (m). The city plan commission may reverse or affirm, in whole or in part, modify the decision of the landmark commission, or remand any case back to the landmark commission for further proceedings. Appeal to the city plan commission constitutes the final administrative remedy.

(F) Reapplication. If a final decision is reached denying a certificate of appropriateness, no further applications may be considered for the subject matter of the denied certificate of appropriateness for one year from the date of the final decision unless:

(i) the certificate of appropriateness has been denied without prejudice; or

(ii) the landmark commission waives the time limitation because the landmark commission finds that there are changed circumstances sufficient to warrant a new hearing. A simple majority vote by the landmark commission is required to grant the request for waiver of the time limitation.

(G) Suspension of work. After the work authorized by the certificate of appropriateness is commenced, the applicant must make continuous progress toward completion of the work, and the applicant shall not suspend or abandon the work for a period in excess of 180 days. The director may, in writing, authorize a suspension of the work for a period greater than 180 days upon written request by the applicant showing circumstances beyond the control of the applicant.

(H) Revocation. The director may, in writing, revoke a certificate of appropriateness if:

(i) the certificate of appropriateness was issued on the basis of incorrect information supplied;

(ii) the certificate of appropriateness was issued in violation of the regulations contained in this section, the preservation

criteria contained in the historic overlay district ordinance, the development code, or building codes; or

(iii) the work is not performed in accordance with the certificate of appropriateness, the development code, or building codes.

(I) Amendments to a certificate of appropriateness. A certificate of appropriateness may be amended by submitting an application for amendment to the director. The application shall then be subject to the standard certificate of appropriateness review procedure.

(8) Emergency procedure. If a structure on a property subject to the predesignation moratorium or a structure in a historic overlay district is damaged and the building official determines that the structure is a public safety hazard or will suffer additional damage without immediate repair, the building official may allow the property owner to temporarily protect the structure. In such a case, the property owner shall apply for a predesignation certificate of appropriateness, certificate of appropriateness, or certificate for demolition or removal within 10 days of the occurrence which caused the damage. The protection authorized under this subsection must not permanently alter the architectural features of the structure.

(h) Certificate for demolition or removal.

(1) Findings and purpose. Demolition or removal of a historic structure constitutes an irreplaceable loss to the quality and character of the city. Therefore, demolition or removal of historic structures should be allowed only for the reasons described in this subsection.

(2) Application. A property owner seeking demolition or removal of a structure on a property subject to the predesignation moratorium or a structure in a historic overlay district must submit a complete application for a certificate for demolition or removal to the landmark commission. Within 10 days after submission of an application, the director shall notify the applicant in writing of any additional documentation required. The application must be accompanied by the following documentation before it will be considered complete:

(A) An affidavit in which the owner swears or affirms that all information submitted in the application is true and correct.

(B) An indication that the demolition or removal is sought for one or more of the following reasons:

(i) To replace the structure with a new structure that is more appropriate and compatible with the historic overlay district.

(ii) No economically viable use of the property exists.

(iii) The structure poses an imminent threat to public health or safety.

(iv) The structure is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historic significance.

(C) For an application to replace the structure with a new structure that is more appropriate and compatible with the historic overlay district:

(i) Records depicting the original construction of the structure, including drawings, pictures, or written descriptions.

(ii) Records depicting the current condition of the structure, including drawings, pictures, or written descriptions.

(iii) Any conditions proposed to be placed voluntarily on the new structure that would mitigate the loss of the structure.

(iv) Complete architectural drawings of the new structure.

(v) A guarantee agreement between the owner and the city that demonstrates the owner's intent and financial ability to construct the new structure. The guarantee agreement must:

(aa) contain a covenant to construct the proposed structure by a specific date in accordance with architectural drawings approved by the city through the predesignation certificate of

appropriateness process or the certificate of appropriateness process;

(bb) require the owner or construction contractor to post a performance and payment bond, letter of credit, escrow agreement, cash deposit, or other arrangement acceptable to the director to ensure construction of the new structure; and

(cc) be approved as to form by the city attorney.

(D) For an application of no economically viable use of the property:

(i) The past and current uses of the structure and property.

(ii) The name of the owner.

(iii) If the owner is a legal entity, the type of entity and states in which it is registered.

(iv) The date and price of purchase or other acquisition of the structure and property, and the party from whom acquired, and the owner's current basis in the property.

(v) The relationship, if any, between the owner and the party from whom the structure and property were acquired. (If one or both parties to the transaction were legal entities, any relationships between the officers and the board of directors of the entities must be specified.)

(vi) The assessed value of the structure and property according to the two most recent tax assessments.

(vii) The amount of real estate taxes on the structure and property for the previous two years.

(viii) The current fair market value of the structure and property as determined by an independent licensed appraiser.

(ix) All appraisals obtained by the owner and prospective purchasers within the previous two years in connection with the potential or

actual purchase, financing, or ownership of the structure and property.

(x) All listings of the structure and property for sale or rent within the previous two years, prices asked, and offers received.

(xi) A profit and loss statement for the property and structure containing the annual gross income for the previous two years; itemized expenses (including operating and maintenance costs) for the previous two years, including proof that adequate and competent management procedures were followed; the annual cash flow for the previous two years; and proof that the owner has made reasonable efforts to obtain a reasonable rate of return on the owner's investment and labor.

(xii) A mortgage history of the property during the previous five years, including the principal balances and interest rates on the mortgages and the annual debt services on the structure and property.

(xiii) All capital expenditures during the current ownership.

(xiv) Records depicting the current conditions of the structure and property, including drawings, pictures, or written descriptions.

(xv) A study of restoration of the structure or property, performed by a licensed architect, engineer or financial analyst, analyzing the physical feasibility (including architectural and engineering analyses) and financial feasibility (including pro forma profit and loss statements for a ten year period, taking into consideration redevelopment options and all incentives available) of adaptive use of restoration of the structure and property.

(xvi) Any consideration given by the owner to profitable adaptive uses for the structure and property.

(xvii) Construction plans for any proposed development or adaptive reuse, including site plans, floor plans, and elevations.

(xviii) Any conditions proposed to be placed voluntarily on new development that would mitigate the loss of the structure.

(xix) Any other evidence that shows that the affirmative obligation to maintain the structure or property makes it impossible to realize a reasonable rate of return.

(E) For an application to demolish or remove a structure that poses an imminent threat to public health or safety:

(i) Records depicting the current condition of the structure, including drawings, pictures, or written descriptions.

(ii) A study regarding the nature, imminence, and severity of the threat, as performed by a licensed architect or engineer.

(iii) A study regarding both the cost of restoration of the structure and the feasibility (including architectural and engineering analyses) of restoration of the structure, as performed by a licensed architect or engineer.

(F) For an application to demolish or remove a structure that is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because the structure is newer than the period of historic significance:

(i) Documentation that the structure is noncontributing to the historic overlay district.

(ii) Documentation of the age of the structure.

(iii) A statement of the purpose of the demolition.

(G) Any other evidence the property owner wishes to submit in support of the application.

(H) Any other evidence requested by the landmark commission or the historic preservation officer.

(3) Certificate of demolition or removal review procedure.

(A) Economic review panel. For an application of no economically viable use of the property, the landmark commission shall cause to be established an ad hoc three-person economic review panel. The economic review panel must be comprised of three independent experts knowledgeable in the economics of real estate, renovation, and redevelopment. "Independent" as used in this subparagraph means that the expert has no financial interest in the property, its renovation, or redevelopment; is not an employee of the property owner; is not a city employee; is not a member of the landmark commission; and is not compensated for serving on the economic review panel. The economic review panel must consist of one person selected by the landmark commission, one person selected by the property owner, and one person selected by the first two appointees. If the first two appointees cannot agree on a third appointee within 30 days after submission of the documentation supporting the application, the third appointee will be selected by the director within 5 days. Within 35 days after submission of the documentation supporting the application, all appointments to the economic review panel shall be made. Within 35 days after appointment, the economic review panel shall review the submitted documentation; hold a public hearing; consider all options for renovation, adaptive reuse, and redevelopment; and forward a written recommendation to the landmark commission. The historic preservation officer shall provide administrative support to the economic review panel. The economic review panel's recommendation must be based on the same standard for approval to be used by the landmark commission. An application of no economically viable use will not be considered complete until the economic review panel has made its recommendation to the landmark commission. If the economic review panel is unable to reach a consensus, the report will indicate the majority and minority recommendations.

(B) Within 65 days after submission of a complete application, the landmark commission shall hold a public hearing and shall approve or deny the application. If the landmark commission does not make a final decision within that time, the building official shall issue a permit to allow the

requested demolition or removal. The property owner has the burden of proof to establish by clear and convincing evidence the necessary facts to warrant favorable action by the landmark commission.

(4) Standard for approval. The landmark commission shall deny the application unless it makes the following findings:

(A) The landmark commission must deny an application to replace a structure with a new structure unless it finds that:

(i) the new structure is more appropriate and compatible with the historic overlay district than the structure to be demolished or removed; and

(ii) the owner has the financial ability and intent to build the new structure. The landmark commission must first approve the predesignation certificate of appropriateness or certificate of appropriateness for the proposed new structure and the guarantee agreement to construct the new structure before it may consider the application to demolish or remove.

(B) The landmark commission must deny an application of no economically viable use of the property unless it finds that:

(i) the structure is incapable of earning a reasonable economic return unless the demolition or removal is allowed (a reasonable economic return does not have to be the most profitable return possible);

(ii) the structure cannot be adapted for any other use, whether by the owner or by a purchaser, which would result in a reasonable economic return; and

(iii) the owner has failed during the last two years to find a developer, financier, purchaser, or tenant that would enable the owner to realize a reasonable economic return, despite having made substantial ongoing efforts to do so.

(C) The landmark commission must deny an application to demolish or remove a structure that poses an imminent threat to public health or safety unless it finds that:

(i) the structure constitutes a documented major and imminent threat to public health and safety;

(ii) the demolition or removal is required to alleviate the threat to public health and safety; and

(iii) there is no reasonable way, other than demolition or removal, to eliminate the threat in a timely manner.

(D) The landmark commission must deny an application to demolish or remove a structure that is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historic significance unless it finds that:

(i) the structure is noncontributing to the historic overlay district;

(ii) the structure is newer than the period of historic significance for the historic overlay district; and

(iii) demolition of the structure will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.

(5) Appeal. The chair of the landmark commission shall give verbal notice of the right to appeal at the time a decision on the application is made. If the applicant is not present at the hearing, the director shall inform the applicant of the right to appeal in writing within 10 days after the hearing. Any interested person may appeal the decision of the landmark commission to the city plan commission by filing a written notice with the director within 30 days after the date of the decision of the landmark commission. If no appeal is made of a decision to approve the certificate for demolition or removal within the 30-day period, the building official shall issue the permit to allow demolition or removal. If an appeal is filed, the city plan commission shall hear and decide the appeal within 65 days after the date of its filing. The director shall forward to the city plan commission a complete record of the matter being appealed, including a transcript of the tape of the hearing before the landmark commission. In considering an appeal, the city plan

commission shall review the landmark commission record and hear and consider arguments from the appellant and the representative for the landmark commission. The city plan commission may only hear new testimony or consider new evidence that was not presented at the time of the hearing before the landmark commission to determine whether that testimony or evidence was available at the landmark commission hearing. If the city plan commission determines that new testimony or evidence exists that was not available at the landmark commission hearing, the city plan commission shall remand the case back to the landmark commission in accordance with Subsection (m). In reviewing the landmark commission decision the city plan commission shall use the substantial evidence standard in Subsection (m). The city plan commission may reverse or affirm, in whole or in part, modify the decision of the landmark commission, or remand any case back to the landmark commission for further proceedings. Appeal to the city plan commission constitutes the final administrative remedy.

(6) Reapplication. If a final decision is reached denying a certificate for demolition or removal, no further applications may be considered for the subject matter of the denied certificate for demolition or removal for one year from the date of the final decision unless:

(A) the certificate for demolition or removal has been denied without prejudice; or

(B) the landmark commission waives the time limitation because the landmark commission finds that there are changed circumstances sufficient to warrant a new hearing. A simple majority vote by the landmark commission is required to grant the request for waiver of the time limitation.

(7) Expiration. A certificate for demolition or removal expires if the work authorized by the certificate for demolition or removal is not commenced within 180 days from the date of the certificate for demolition or removal. The director may extend the time for commencement of work upon written request by the applicant showing circumstances beyond the control of the applicant. If the certificate for demolition or removal expires, a new certificate for demolition or removal must first be obtained before the work can be commenced.

(i) the structure constitutes a documented major and imminent threat to public health and safety;

(ii) the demolition or removal is required to alleviate the threat to public health and safety; and

(iii) there is no reasonable way, other than demolition or removal, to eliminate the threat in a timely manner.

(D) The landmark commission must deny an application to demolish or remove a structure that is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historic significance unless it finds that:

(i) the structure is noncontributing to the historic overlay district;

(ii) the structure is newer than the period of historic significance for the historic overlay district; and

(iii) demolition of the structure will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.

(5) Appeal. The chair of the landmark commission shall give verbal notice of the right to appeal at the time a decision on the application is made. If the applicant is not present at the hearing, the director shall inform the applicant of the right to appeal in writing within 10 days after the hearing. Any interested person may appeal the decision of the landmark commission to the city plan commission by filing a written notice with the director within 30 days after the date of the decision of the landmark commission. If no appeal is made of a decision to approve the certificate for demolition or removal within the 30-day period, the building official shall issue the permit to allow demolition or removal. If an appeal is filed, the city plan commission shall hear and decide the appeal within 65 days after the date of its filing. The director shall forward to the city plan commission a complete record of the matter being appealed, including a transcript of the tape of the hearing before the landmark commission. In considering an appeal, the city plan

commission shall review the landmark commission record and hear and consider arguments from the appellant and the representative for the landmark commission. The city plan commission may only hear new testimony or consider new evidence that was not presented at the time of the hearing before the landmark commission to determine whether that testimony or evidence was available at the landmark commission hearing. If the city plan commission determines that new testimony or evidence exists that was not available at the landmark commission hearing, the city plan commission shall remand the case back to the landmark commission in accordance with Subsection (m). In reviewing the landmark commission decision the city plan commission shall use the substantial evidence standard in Subsection (m). The city plan commission may reverse or affirm, in whole or in part, modify the decision of the landmark commission, or remand any case back to the landmark commission for further proceedings. Appeal to the city plan commission constitutes the final administrative remedy.

(6) Reapplication. If a final decision is reached denying a certificate for demolition or removal, no further applications may be considered for the subject matter of the denied certificate for demolition or removal for one year from the date of the final decision unless:

(A) the certificate for demolition or removal has been denied without prejudice; or

(B) the landmark commission waives the time limitation because the landmark commission finds that there are changed circumstances sufficient to warrant a new hearing. A simple majority vote by the landmark commission is required to grant the request for waiver of the time limitation.

(7) Expiration. A certificate for demolition or removal expires if the work authorized by the certificate for demolition or removal is not commenced within 180 days from the date of the certificate for demolition or removal. The director may extend the time for commencement of work upon written request by the applicant showing circumstances beyond the control of the applicant. If the certificate for demolition or removal expires, a new certificate for demolition or removal must first be obtained before the work can be commenced.

(i) Certificate for demolition for a residential structure with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area pursuant to court order.

(1) Findings and purpose. Demolition of a historic structure constitutes an irreplaceable loss to the quality and character of the city. Elimination of substandard structures that have been declared urban nuisances and ordered demolished pursuant to court order is necessary to prevent blight and safeguard the public health, safety, and welfare. Therefore, the procedures in this subsection seek to preserve historic structures while eliminating urban nuisances.

(2) Notice to landmark commission by email. A requirement of this subsection that the landmark commission be provided written notice of a matter is satisfied if an email containing the required information is sent to every member of the landmark commission who has provided an email address to the director.

(3) Referral of demolition request to landmark commission and director. When a city department requests the city attorney's office to seek an order from a court or other tribunal requiring demolition of a residential structure with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area on a property subject to a predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district, that department shall provide written notice to the landmark commission and director of that request within two business days after the date it makes the request. The notice must include a photograph of the structure, the address of the property, and (if known) the name, address, and telephone number of the property owner. If the city attorney's office determines that the department did not provide the required notice, the city attorney's office shall provide that notice within two business days after the date it determines that the department did not provide the notice.

(4) Notice of court proceedings to landmark commission and director. The city attorney's office shall provide written notice to the landmark commission and director at least 10 days before any hearing before a court or other tribunal where the city attorney's office seeks an order requiring demolition of a residential structure with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area subject to a

predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district. If a court or other tribunal orders demolition of the structure subject to a predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district, the city attorney's office shall provide written notice to the landmark commission and director within five days after the order is signed and provided to the city attorney's office.

(5) Application. If the city or a property owner seeks demolition of a residential structure with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area subject to a predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district pursuant to an order from a court or other tribunal requiring demolition obtained by the city, a complete application for a certificate for demolition must be submitted to the landmark commission. Within 10 days after submission of an application, the director shall notify the city's representative or the property owner in writing of any documentation required but not submitted. The application must be accompanied by the following documentation before it will be considered complete:

(A) An affidavit in which the city representative or the property owner affirms that all information submitted in the application is correct.

(B) Records depicting the current condition of the structure, including drawings, pictures, or written descriptions, and including Historic American Buildings Survey or Historic American Engineering Records documentation if required by law or agreement.

(C) A signed order from a court or other tribunal requiring the demolition of the structure in a proceeding brought pursuant to Texas Local Government Code Chapters 54 or 214, as amended.

(D) A copy of a written notice of intent to apply for a certificate for demolition that was submitted to the director and the landmark commission at least 30 days before the application.

(E) Any other evidence the city representative or property owner wishes to submit in support of the application.

(6) Hearing. Within 40 days after submission of a complete application, the landmark commission shall hold a public hearing to determine whether the structure should be demolished. If the landmark commission does not make a final decision on the application or suspend the granting of the certificate of demolition pursuant to this subsection within that time, the building official shall issue a demolition permit to allow the demolition. The city representative or the property owner has the burden of proof to establish by a preponderance of the evidence the necessary facts to warrant favorable action by the landmark commission.

(7) Standard for approval. The landmark commission shall approve the certificate for demolition if it finds that:

(A) a court or other tribunal has issued a final order requiring the demolition of the structure pursuant to Texas Local Government Code Chapters 54 or 214, as amended; and

(B) suspension of the certificate for demolition is not a feasible option to alleviate the nuisance in a timely manner.

(8) Suspension. The purpose of the suspension periods is to allow an interested party to rehabilitate the structure as an alternative to demolition.

(A) Residential structures with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area:

(i) Initial suspension period.

(aa) The landmark commission may suspend the granting of the certificate for demolition until the next regularly scheduled landmark commission meeting (the initial suspension period) to allow time to find a party interested in rehabilitating the structure.

(bb) If during the initial suspension period no interested party is identified, the landmark commission shall grant the certificate for demolition.

(cc) If during the initial suspension period an interested party is identified, the landmark commission shall suspend the granting of the certificate for demolition for no more than two more regularly scheduled landmark commission meetings (the extended suspension period).

(ii) Extended suspension period.

(aa) During the extended suspension period, the interested party shall:

[1] submit an application for a predesignation certificate of appropriateness or a certificate of appropriateness;

[2] provide evidence that the interested party has or will obtain title to the property and has authority to rehabilitate the structure, or is authorized to rehabilitate the property by a party who has title to the property or has the right to rehabilitate the property;

[3] provide evidence that the structure and property have been secured to prevent unauthorized entry; and

[4] provide a guarantee agreement that:

[A] contains a covenant to rehabilitate the structure by a specific date, in accordance with the predesignation certificate of appropriateness process or certificate of appropriateness, which the landmark commission may extend if the interested party shows circumstances preventing rehabilitation of the structure by that date that are beyond the control of the interested party;

[B] is supported by a performance and payment bond, letter of credit, escrow agreement, cash deposit, or other similar enforceable arrangement acceptable to the director to ensure rehabilitation of the structure; and

[C] is approved as to form by the city attorney.

(bb) If during the extended suspension period the interested party does not meet the requirements of Subparagraph (A)(ii), the landmark commission shall grant the certificate for demolition.

(cc) If during the extended suspension period the interested party meets the requirements of Subparagraph (A)(ii), the landmark commission shall continue to suspend the granting of the certificate for demolition (the continuing suspension period).

(iii) Continuing suspension period.

(aa) The interested party must rehabilitate the structure to comply with Dallas City Code Chapter 27 and request an inspection by the city before the end of the continuing suspension period.

(bb) At each landmark commission meeting during the continuing suspension period, the interested party shall provide a progress report demonstrating that reasonable and continuous progress is being made toward completion of the rehabilitation.

(cc) If during the continuing suspension period the landmark commission finds that the interested party is not making reasonable and continuous progress toward completion of the rehabilitation, the landmark commission shall grant the certificate for demolition, unless the interested party shows circumstances preventing reasonable and continuous progress that are beyond the control of the interested party.

(dd) If during the continuing suspension period the landmark commission finds that the interested party has rehabilitated the structure to comply with Dallas City Code Chapter 27, the landmark commission shall deny the certificate for demolition.

(9) Appeal. The city representative or property owner may appeal a decision of the landmark commission under this subsection to the city plan commission by filing a written notice with the director within 10 days after the date of the decision of the landmark commission. The city plan

commission shall hear and decide the appeal at the next available city plan commission meeting. The standard of review shall be *de novo*, but the director shall forward to the city plan commission a transcript of the landmark commission hearing. In considering the appeal, the city plan commission may not hear or consider new evidence unless the evidence corrects a misstatement or material omission at the landmark commission hearing or the evidence shows that the condition of the property has changed since the landmark commission hearing. The city plan commission chair shall rule on the admissibility of new evidence. The city plan commission shall use the same standard required for the landmark commission. The city plan commission may reverse or affirm, in whole or in part, modify the decision of the landmark commission, or remand any case back to the landmark commission for further proceedings; however, the city plan commission shall give deference to the decision of the landmark commission. Appeal to the city plan commission constitutes the final administrative remedy.

(10) Expiration. A certificate for demolition expires if the work authorized by the certificate for demolition is not commenced within 180 days after the date of the certificate for demolition. The director may extend the time for commencement of work upon written request by the city representative or the property owner showing circumstances justifying the extension. If the certificate for demolition expires, a new certificate for demolition must first be obtained before the work can be commenced.

(11) Procedures for all other structures. If the city or a property owner seeks demolition of any structure other than a residential structure with no more than 3,000 square feet of floor area subject to a predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district pursuant to an order from a court or other tribunal requiring demolition obtained by the city, an application must be filed under Subsection (h) of this section.

(j) Summary abatement by fire marshal. If the fire marshal finds that conditions on a structure subject to a predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district are hazardous to life or property and present a clear and present danger, the fire marshal may summarily abate those conditions without a

predesignation certificate of appropriateness, certificate of appropriateness, or certificate for demolition.

(k) Demolition by neglect.

(1) Definition. Demolition by neglect is neglect in the maintenance of any structure on property subject to the predesignation moratorium or in a historic overlay district that results in deterioration of the structure and threatens the preservation of the structure.

(2) Demolition by neglect prohibited. No person shall allow a structure to deteriorate through demolition by neglect. All structures on properties subject to the predesignation moratorium and in historic overlay districts must be preserved against deterioration and kept free from structural defects. The property owner or the property owner's agent with control over the structure, in keeping with the city's minimum housing standards and building codes, must repair the structure if it is found to have any of the following defects:

(A) Parts which are improperly or inadequately attached so that they may fall and injure persons or property.

(B) A deteriorated or inadequate foundation.

(C) Defective or deteriorated floor supports or floor supports that are insufficient to carry the loads imposed.

(D) Walls, partitions, or other vertical supports that split, lean, list, or buckle due to defect or deterioration, or are insufficient to carry the loads imposed.

(E) Ceilings, roofs, ceiling or roof supports, or other horizontal members which sag, split, or buckle due to defect or deterioration, or are insufficient to support the loads imposed.

(F) Fireplaces and chimneys which list, bulge, or settle due to defect or deterioration, or are of insufficient size or strength to carry the loads imposed.

(G) Deteriorated, crumbling, or loose exterior stucco or mortar.

(H) Deteriorated or ineffective waterproofing of exterior walls, roofs, foundations, or floors, including broken or open windows and doors.

(I) Defective or lack of weather protection for exterior wall coverings, including lack of paint or other protective covering.

(J) Any fault, defect, or condition in the structure which renders it structurally unsafe or not properly watertight.

(K) Deterioration of any exterior feature so as to create a hazardous condition which could make demolition necessary for the public safety.

(L) Deterioration or removal of any unique architectural feature which would detract from the original architectural style.

(3) Demolition by neglect procedure.

(A) Purpose. The purpose of the demolition by neglect procedure is to allow the landmark commission to work with the property owner to encourage maintenance and stabilization of the structure and identify resources available before any enforcement action is taken.

(B) Request for investigation. Any interested party may request that the historic preservation officer investigate whether a property is being demolished by neglect.

(C) First meeting with the property owner. Upon receipt of a request, the historic preservation officer shall meet with the property owner or the property owner's agent with control of the structure to inspect the structure and discuss the resources available for financing any necessary repairs. After the meeting, the historic preservation officer shall prepare a report for the landmark commission on the condition of the structure, the repairs needed to maintain and stabilize the structure, any resources available for financing the repairs, and the amount of time needed to complete the repairs.

SECTION 8

Correspondence

- Notice of application denied
- Request to Appeal from applicant
- Appeal Procedures
- Ex-parte communication & Ed Sebesta Report

March 13, 2019

City of Dallas
1925 Elm Street, Suite 400,
Dallas, TX 75201

**RE: CD189-007(LC)
REVIEW OF YOUR CERTIFICATE OF DEMOLITION OR REMOVAL APPLICATION
1201 MARILLA ST**

Dear Jennifer Scripps (City of Dallas):

Enclosed is a copy of the Certificate of Demolition or Removal (CD) application that you submitted for review by the Landmark Commission on March 4, 2019.

Be aware that you may need to bring your CD to Building Inspection for any building or demolition permit that may be required. Before starting any approved work, be sure to post your CD in a prominent location on site so it may be seen by City officials to ensure work is performed as approved by the Landmark Commission. Please see enclosed Certificate of Demolition or Removal for Details.

If you have any questions, please contact me by phone at (214) 671-5052 or email at liz.casso@dallascityhall.com.



Liz Casso
Sr. Planner

Enclosure

Certificate of Demolition

March 4, 2019

Standard	March 4, 2019	PLANNER:	Liz Casso
FILE NUMBER:	CD189-007(LC)	DATE FILED:	February 20, 2019
LOCATION:	1201 MARILLA ST	DISTRICT:	Pioneer Cemetery
COUNCIL DISTRICT:	2	MAPSCO:	45-P
ZONING:	CA-1(A)	CENSUS TRACT:	0204.00

APPLICANT: City of Dallas
REPRESENTATIVE:
OWNER: DALLAS CITY OF

The Landmark Commission decision is: Approved

Information regarding requests:

1) Remove confederate monument from cemetery using the standard demolition or removal of a non-contributing structure because it is newer than the period of significance.

Approve

Conditions: The proposed removal meets the standards in City Code Section 51A-4.501(h)(4)(D). The monument is non-contributing to the historic overlay district; it was installed after the period of significance; and removal of the monument will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district.



Landmark Commission Chair

March 4, 2019

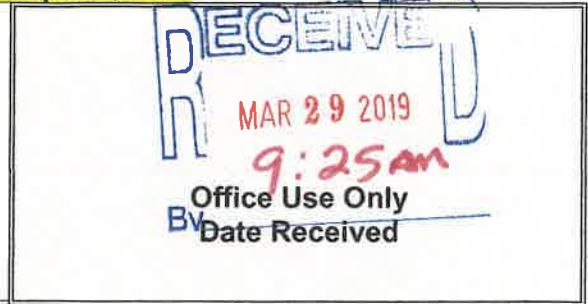
Date

Please take any signed drawings to Building Inspection for permits.

APPLICATION FOR APPEAL OF LANDMARK COMMISSION DECISION

The Deadline to Appeal is 5:00 P.M. April 2, 2019

Director, Development Services Department
Dallas City Hall
1500 Marilla St., RM 5/B/N
Dallas Texas 75201
Telephone 214-670-4209



Landmark Case/File No.: CD189-007(LC)

Property Address: 1201 Marilla St. (Pioneer Cemetery)

Date of Landmark Commission Action: March 4, 2019

Applicant's Name: KAREN PIERONI

Applicant's Mailing Address: 2927 RENAISSANCE CIRCLE

City: DALLAS State: TX Zip: 75207-5943

Applicant's Phone Number: 214-502-2971 Fax: _____

Applicant's Email: KAREN.PIERONI@YAHOO.COM

IF DIFFERENT FROM ABOVE, PROVIDE PROPERTY OWNER'S INFORMATION.

Owner's Name: N/A

Owner's Mailing Address: _____

City: _____ State: _____ Zip: _____

Owner's Phone Number: _____ Fax: _____

Owner's Email: _____

Karen Pieroni

N/A

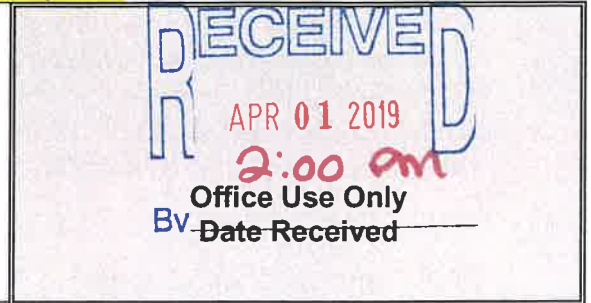
Applicant's Signature _____ Date _____

Owner's Signature (if individual) _____ Date _____
or Letter of Authorization (from corporation/partnership)

APPLICATION FOR APPEAL OF LANDMARK COMMISSION DECISION

The Deadline to Appeal is **April 2, 2019**

Director, Development Services Department
Dallas City Hall
1500 Marilla St., RM 5/B/N
Dallas Texas 75201
Telephone 214-670-4209



Landmark Case/File No.: CD189-007(LC)

Property Address: 1201 Marilla St. (Pioneer Cemetery)

Date of Landmark Commission Action: March 4, 2019

Applicant's Name: Chris Carter

Applicant's Mailing Address: 9523 Highedge Dr.

City: Dallas State: TX Zip: 75238

Applicant's Phone Number: 469-274-6958 Fax: _____

Applicant's Email: choonecarter3@gmail.com

IF DIFFERENT FROM ABOVE, PROVIDE PROPERTY OWNER'S INFORMATION.

Owner's Name: N/A

Owner's Mailing Address: _____

City: _____ State: _____ Zip: _____

Owner's Phone Number: _____ Fax: _____

Owner's Email: _____

Chris Carter 4/1/19
Applicant's Signature Date

N/A
Owner's Signature (if individual) Date
or Letter of Authorization (from corporation/partnership)

Fee for Single Family use/structure: **\$300.00**
Fee for any other use/structure: **\$700.00**

**PROCEDURE FOR APPEAL OF
CERTIFICATES OF APPROPRIATENESS
TO THE CITY PLAN COMMISSION**

(Revised April 2014)

1. Postponements.

- a. The City Plan Commission may grant a postponement if it wishes.
- b. Dallas Development Code §51A-4.701(e), regarding postponement of zoning applications by the applicant, does not apply.

2. Content of the record.

- a. Copies of the complete record will be distributed by staff to the City Plan Commission two weeks before the scheduled hearing.
- b. The parties may request that the record be supplemented.

3. Additional correspondence and briefs.

- a. Additional correspondence or briefs, if any are desired to be submitted by the parties, should be provided to the planning staff for distribution to the City Plan Commission.
- b. The parties should provide each other with copies of any information they submit to the City Plan Commission.
- c. Interested parties should not make any contacts with commission members other than those submitted through the city staff.

4. Representation of the Landmark Commission.

- a. The Landmark Commission will be represented by Laura Morrison.

5. Order of the hearing.

- a. Each side will receive 20 minutes (exclusive of questions from the City Plan Commission) with 5 minutes for rebuttal by appellant.
- b. Order of the hearing.
 - (1) Preliminary matters.
 - (A) Introduction by the Chair
 - (2) Appellant's case (20 minutes). *
 - (A) Presentation by the appellant's representative.
 - (B) Questions from Commission Members.
 - (3) Landmark Commission's case (20 minutes). *
 - (A) Presentation by the Landmark Commission's representative.
 - (B) Questions from Commission Members.
 - (4) Rebuttal/closing by the appellant's representative (5 minutes).
 - (5) Decision by the City Plan Commission. **

* If a party requires additional time to present its case, including testimony and evidence concerning the previous recommendations and actions of the city staff and the Landmark Commission and its task forces, the party shall request that additional time be granted by the City Plan Commission. If the Commission grants one party additional time, the opposing party shall also be granted a similar time extension.

** In considering the appeal, the City Plan Commission shall hear and consider testimony and evidence concerning the previous recommendations and actions of the city staff and the Landmark Commission and its task forces.

6. **Introduction of new evidence at the hearing.**

- a. The City Plan Commission may only hear new testimony or consider new evidence that was not presented at the time of the hearing before the Landmark Commission to determine whether that testimony or evidence was available at the Landmark Commission hearing.
- b. If the City Plan Commission determines that new testimony or evidence exists that was not available at the Landmark Commission hearing, the City Plan Commission shall remand the case back to the Landmark Commission.
- c. The party attempting to introduce new evidence bears the burden of showing that the evidence was not available at the time of the Landmark Commission's hearing.
- d. Newly presented evidence is subject to objection and cross examination by the opposing party.

7. **Remedies of the City Plan Commission.**

- a. The City Plan Commission may reverse or affirm, in whole or in part, or modify the decision of the Landmark Commission.
- b. The City Plan Commission shall give deference to the Landmark Commission decision and may not substitute its judgment for the Landmark Commission's judgment. The City Plan Commission shall affirm the Landmark Commission decision unless it finds that it:
 - (1) violates a statutory or ordinance provision;
 - (2) exceeds the Landmark Commission's authority; or
 - (3) was not reasonably supported by substantial evidence considering the evidence in the record.
- c. The City Plan Commission may remand a case back to the Landmark Commission for further proceedings.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Anna Shepeard [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 6:56 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of War Memorial

Please protect all of our rights. Please vote against the removal of the War Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery . It is a Memorial and piece of art.

Thank you
Anna Shepeard

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Anderson, Jennifer
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 8:30 AM
To: Casso, Liz Ana; Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Alamo



Jennifer Anderson
Senior Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-670-5825 |
jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com



****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE:** This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.**

From: alan higinbotham [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 7:28 AM
To: Anderson, Jennifer <jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com>
Subject: Alamo

The Landmark Commission is an INDEPENDENT body that is legally bound and required to protect all designated Historical Landmarks—of which this is one. Please do not vote to approve the permit of demolition regardless of your personal opinion regarding the Monument.

The Dallas City Council has much better options available to it rather than to simply destroy this irreplaceable Memorial

Alan Higginbotham

Sent via my Samsung Galaxy, an AT&T 4G LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Tim and Terri Dunk [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 9:44 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Dallas War Memorial

Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty,

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery.

Thank you,
Terri and Tim Dunk

Copyright © 2019 Save The Alamo Committee, All rights reserved.

You are receiving this email because you signed up on the 'Save the Alamo' website:
<http://www.savethealamo.us>


Our mailing address is:

Save
The Alamo CommitteeBox
364, Sherman, TX 75091-0364 Sherman,
TX
75091
Add
us to your address book

Want to change how you receive these emails?

You can update

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: LouAnn Stare 
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 10:06 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery

Phyllis & Mark:

I understand there will be no public hearing for the removal of the referenced memorial. Dallas City Manager T. C. Broadnax has submitted the certificate of demolition and is forcing the Landmark Commission to vote on removal March 4th. Please do not let this happen and vote against it. Also, Lt Governor Dan Patrick who runs the Texas Senate needs to pass the Historical Protection Act now, no more excuses! Please help the people of Dallas preserve our history.

Lou Ann Stare
6135 Anita Street
Dallas, TX 75214

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kiki Paschall [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 10:59 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Gates, Jennifer
Subject: Pioneer Park Confederate Memorial

Ms. Hill,

I am once again concerned that your committee voted to removed another historical memorial in Dallas. The citizens of Dallas should have the right to vote on this issue, due to it historical nature and the use of our Tax money to remove it.

Best Regards,
Kiki Paschall
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Margaret Norman [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 11:12 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: removal of Confederate landmark

As a member of the Daughters of the Republic of Texas and as a proud citizen of the United States of America, it saddens me again to hear that another of our historical landmarks is being considered for destruction. WHAT IS WRONG WITH PRESERVING OUR HISTORY. IF WE DON'T KNOW OUR HISTORY, HOW CAN WE GUARD AGAINST UNPLEASANT THINGS HAPPENING AGAIN IN OUR FUTURE.

Please do not vote to have this landmark removed.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 3:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Appeal to protect our heritage

I am asking you not to demolish the confederate statue located in the downtown area of Dallas. It is our history that you would be destroying.
Pat Marchman

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carolyn Orlebeke [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 3:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: ATTENTION KATHERINE SEALE

TO: Katherine Seale, Chairperson, Dallas Landmark Commission

Dear Chairperson Seale:

Please do not approve the Demolition Permit for the Confederate War Memorial. The City Council was presented with other and better options that will both preserve the beauty of the artistic structures and also be a more educational and unifying factor to our community.

Also, such demolition would violate both the Antiquities Code and also the City Ordinances designating this site as an official historical landmark.

I am familiar with your background and a lot of your excellent work in preserving historical buildings/sites for the City of Dallas. I admire you and what you've accomplished. Thank you for all you've done in this regard.

Respectfully,
Carolyn Orlebeke

I've added this "signature line" to verify that this is a legitimate email from me. If you don't see this in my emails, do not open any links and delete what you've received. Thank you, Carolyn Orlebeke

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gladys Pully <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 5:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Veterans Memorial in Pioneer Park, Dallas, TX

Please do not demolish and remove the Confederate Veterans Memorial in Pioneer Park, Dallas, TX.

We need to keep this monument in honor of our deceased Confederate soldiers, and also to remember the history of the Civil War to pass on to future generations.

Thank you,

Gladys Nelson Pully

[REDACTED]
Dallas, TX [REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Newell Rambo [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 2:30 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Sam Childers, Alternate
1500 Marilla Street, 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201 (214) 670-4209
(Kleinman nominated – Dist 11): Reappointed:08/23/17

Mr. Childers,

I know that you have been on the Dallas Landmark Commission since 2013, currently serving as one of it's Alternates representing district 11 – Kleinman.

I am contacting you regarding the Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery. On or before March 4th, The Office of Cultural Affairs on behalf of the City will submit a "Certificate of Demolition or Removal" - Case No.: CD187-007(LC) for the Dallas Landmark Commission review on April 1, 2019.

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

The monument was dedicated on June 25, 1896, and believed to be the city's oldest public sculptures designed by Frank Teich, an American sculptor from San Antonio; stone carver and businessman often referred to as the father of the Texas granite industry. The "Cenotaph" pays homage to the cavalry, infantry, and naval forces Sons from the Dallas area. One inscription says, "This stone shall crumble into dust ere the deathless devotion of Southern women be forgotten." The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" was moved to the Pioneer Park Cemetery in 1962 from Old City Park to Pioneer Cemetery due to the city creating the R. L. Thornton Freeway.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. As you know the duty of the landmark commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city and to protect, enhance and perpetuate such places and areas which represent distinctive and important elements of the city's historical, cultural, social, economic, archaeological, pale-ontological, ethnic, political and architectural history as stated in SEC. 51A-4.501 (1). Your responsibility is to save our local Texas history not destroy it. I am a fourth generation Texas and had three great uncles who served, please don't let the Dallas Landmark Commission dishonor their and other men and women's memory from the local area who fought for Texas during those trying times.

I know that you have a passion for Dallas History, possible more than most in Texas, please explain the importance of such things as "Cenotaphs" to others that may not know what they really represent. (A tomb or in this case a monument erected in honor of a group of persons from the local area whose remains are elsewhere.) Whether people agree with me, as one that has ancestors represented by this monument or not, their are two things that we all should agree on:

- 1.) The CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL represents a part of the history of the Dallas Community and North Texas, for better or worse.
- 2.) The CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL is a place of "Reverence for the Dead" for people who are descendants of the ones these monuments were erected for, and should always be held in high regards, with Ethical and Moral Respect for the Dead.

Regards,

NEWELL V. RAMBO, AIA/RID
RAMBO ARCHITECT

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Newell Rambo [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 1:42 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Mr. Mattia J. Flabiano, III, AIA, ACHA
Vice Chair of the Dallas Landmark Commission
1500 Marilla Street, 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
(214) 670-4209 (District 11 – Kleinman) Re-appointed: 01/01/1

Mr. Flabiano,

I know that you are a native Dallas, Texan who graduated from Texas A & M University as I did. You have been on the Dallas Landmark Commission since 2010, currently serving as it's Vice Chair representing district 11 – Kleinman.

I am contacting you as one Texan to another regarding the Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery. On or before March 4th, The Office of Cultural Affairs on behalf of the City will submit a "Certificate of Demolition or Removal" - Case No.: CD187-007(LC) for the Dallas Landmark Commission review on April 1, 2019.

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

The monument was dedicated on June 25, 1896, and believed to be the city's oldest public sculptures designed by Frank Teich, an American sculptor from San Antonio; stone carver and businessman often referred to as the father of the Texas granite industry. The "Cenotaph" pays homage to the cavalry, infantry, and naval forces Sons from the Dallas area. One inscription says, "This stone shall crumble into dust ere the deathless devotion of Southern women be forgotten." The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" was moved to the Pioneer Park Cemetery in 1962 from Old City Park to Pioneer Cemetery due to the city creating the R. L. Thornton Freeway.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. As you know the duty of the landmark commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city and to protect, enhance and perpetuate such places and areas which represent distinctive and important elements of the city's historical, cultural, social, economic, archaeological, pale-ontological, ethnic, political and architectural history as stated in SEC. 51A-4.501 (1). Your responsibility is to save our local Texas history not destroy it. I am a fourth generation Texas and had three great uncles who served, please don't let the Dallas Landmark Commission dishonor their and other men and women's memory from the local area who fought for Texas during those trying times.

Regards,

NEWELL V. RAMBO, AIA/RID
RAMBO ARCHITECT



NEWELL V. RAMBO, AIA/RID
RAMBO ARCHITECT

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: EC [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 6:20 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition of Historical markers.

I am a concerned citizen of Texas and the south. I wonder why it is all right for only certain Historical monuments/markers are being destroyed because only a few want them destroyed. It is my opinion that our history is being ignored and played down because only a few pot stirrers are not in agreement with citizens like myself. Please do not destroy the art work of an artist who slaved away at his work because of sour grapes on the part of only a few people.

EC

Sent from [Mail](#) for Windows 10

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Barb [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 11:34 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Momument Removal

We, as people – as Americans, need to remember that these monuments that are being defaced and demolished and hidden are reminders of our history – good, bad or indifferent. Every country’s history has blemishes...things today’s society is not proud of; but we need to remember these things so as not to repeat them. We can’t change our history. Each of us sees something different when we look at these monuments. We shouldn’t destroy them because a few people chose to be offended instead of seeing the whole story. Many of our great historians made mistakes. If we removed all their statues and markers, there would be nothing left.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Joye Johnson [mailto:joyejohnson12@gmail.com]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 11:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Matter to consider

Hello, I'm simply writing with concern for historic landmarks and keeping them for future generations. My hope is that the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the monument be denied and the monument remain in Pioneer Cemetery.

Sincerely, Joye Johnson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Rita Schimpff [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 11:20 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Cemetery Confederate Monument

Katherine Seale, Chairman
Texas Landmark Commission
1500 Marilla Street 5NB, Dallas, TX 75201

Phyllis.Hill@DallasCityHall.com

February 27, 2019

Dear Ms. Seale,

I am one of the descendants of nearly 100,000 men Texas politicians sent to fight for the Confederacy. Politicians get us into wars, but rarely serve themselves. My Dallas County families were poor farmers with no slaves, but they sent all – and not all returned. My great great grandfather never knew where his brothers were buried, or if they were. He himself returned sick and ultimately died as a result of the war, leaving his wife alone to care for their 6 children ages 4 months to 9 years. He, his brothers alongside Hispanic, American Indian and yes black soldiers had no choice but to serve and defend Texas, as they had before and since – it was a draft. You were shot or hung if you did not serve. There were no safe spaces back then.

New results show that upward of 750,000 men died in the Civil War and close to 350,000 were never identified. 80-85% of Texas soldiers had no slaves. In 1861 there were no national cemeteries or ways to identify the dead or notify their kin. Southern fields, backyards, riverbanks were littered with bodies. If the dead were buried at all, it was in mass unknown graves, never to find their way home. Many families like mine had no headstone to visit, put flowers on and remember their loved ones – these monuments were the headstone for their loved ones and their descendants like me. The statues of their leaders represent the last known person to understand and witness their death. The men that did return, did so one armed, one eyed or worse to a barren wasteland of their former homes, churches, towns & families, but they rolled up their sleeves and rebuilt their communities in the now United States of America. They are responsible for the many donations of land and money for churches, courthouses, parks, schools and Universities we all benefit from – even those who complain today. Many gave land to former slaves so they could start new lives as well. The Revolutionary ancestors of these Confederate soldiers fought and died for American liberty and freedoms we also enjoy today. Those very Confederate soldiers and their sons reunited with their Union brothers, former slaves and fought willingly side by side in the Spanish American war. Their descendants defend our state and nation today. After 150 years to disparage their names and monuments is to invite division, which only serves politicians (votes and \$).

Ever-changing interpretations, untrue assertions and un-civilized speech not based on facts are the enemy of our democracy. We should search for primary sources and facts and not condemn a people because of political winds and feelings. For centuries art and sculpture have told our story and given meaning – it is the tangible reminder of war, people and our history. Older art reveals the world struggle and progress it has weathered. When art and sculpture are gone, so goes our cultural and ethnic heritage – Lest We Forget. Art & history bring the human experience closer as years wear on and current generations have no connection to the past. I doubt many today could comprehend or cope with a war in their backyard. This historical art in Pioneer Cemetery should not be a victim, but recognized for the good that has evolved, the good that is in all people, all Americans; our history, our citizens who have fought and died for freedom and equality since the inception of the USA - all while these statues silently looked on. Americans are all free today, we should be

building each other up with tolerance, acceptance remembrance and forgiveness-we have this beautiful gift of freedom, yet suddenly we seem to be fumbling with how to handle it.

Art is meant to inspire and provoke thought and emotion. This monument has stood for 122 years – almost exactly **HALF** of our country's independent life - and is of great historic importance. This historical war memorial has value in its location in a cemetery and as a tangible reminder of the cultural heritage of not only Dallas County but Texas and the national event they took part in – The Civil War. It represents only 4 years in our comparatively young but strong country, and those 4 years of struggle have made us a stronger union. When you try to remove the imperfection in a piece of fabric, you cause it to loose strength and ultimately it unravels. Our imperfections have value.

This monument was one of the 1st and oldest in Dallas and was paid for and donated as public art by women who were second class citizens – not even allowed to vote. It was erected as a war memorial, nothing more and nothing less. This monument has stood silently as women got the vote, affirmative action and civil rights succeeded and we have evolved into a country where all ethnic groups have been elected to the highest offices in the land. Prove to me this monument has oppressed citizens today!

Dallas carries the unfortunate blood of a president and 5 police murdered in one night. Killing a monument and history will only leave another stain rather than bring positive economic and social change. Politicians would better serve its citizenry by removing the very real modern day slavery and human sex trafficking than destroying 122 year old outdoor Texas sculpture. Have we not learned anything from history? The ethnic cleansing of the Jews during WWII where they and their art were destroyed and stolen and more recently the cultural and landmark genocide in Bosnia that is viewed by the UN as war crimes? Cultural genocide begets ethnic cleansing.

Texas sent her people to war in 1861. Each fought for reasons only God knows, but we know the majority did not own slaves and a Texan's duty was to serve and protect his state. Most of these men never returned to their loved ones, they have no headstone for flowers for the family left behind. For Texas to now turn her back on these men and say you are not worth remembering, you don't deserve a headstone, your military service means nothing is a slap in the face to all Texans.

Thank you,

Rita Schimpff
800 Garraty Rd
San Antonio, Texas 78209

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jan Bush [redacted]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 10:12 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of the Monument in Dallas

I stand against the removal of the Confederate Memorial Monument. This is not only a historical monument, it is a treasured work of art, and a landmark to be protected. I ask that you deny the request to destroy this beautiful art!

Jan Bush
Spicewood, TX

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: KATHY TAFOYA [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 9:17 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Demolition Certificate

Dear Ma'am,

I'm sending this in hopes that you will advise City Manager, TC Broadnax, that the people do NOT want the War Memorial at the downtown Cemetery to be demolished.

Please do not let the meeting on 4 March 2019 allow this to happen. This request for the demo certification should be denied.

The City Manager needs to be reminded that he he is a PUBLIC SERVANT, and he has to listen to WE THE PEOPLE. So please save our War Memorial, do not allow him to erase our history. History can be ugly, but without it, where would we be? Our ancestors did the best they could during their time, and that needs to be honored...not destroyed.

Thank you for your time,
Sincerely,

Kathy Tafoya
[REDACTED]

Get [Outlook for Android](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lois Davidson [mailto:lois.davidson@gmail.com]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 8:20 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark; Lois Davidson
Subject: Please save the Confederate War Memorial

Good morning,

As a resident of Dallas from 1945 (yes, 1945) until fairly recently, my memories include the beautiful Pioneer Park Cemetery. What a treasure Dallas has in this property. And, the name "Pioneer Park" reflects the reality that Dallas recognized the value in preservation of history.

My father was gassed in France in World War I and my brother was killed in France in World War II. There are those who are trying to rewrite the history of those Wars also. How much better the world would be if we concentrated on improving the history we are creating day by day, than by trying to rewrite the history of the past.

The Confederate War Memorial is a beautiful memorial and is part of the history of Dallas. How can you possibly consider removing it? It is tragic to consider the consequences of removing our history piece by piece. There will be other "causes" in the future which would look to the removal of this statue as justification for removal of something else until we are living in a vast wasteland of emptiness. Please do not vote for removal of this monument, or any other such removals..

Sincerely,
Lois Davidson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ross Oates [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 6:52 AM
To: Mark Brack
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Re: Removal of the Civil War Monuments

I agree - please do not remove Confederate Monuments. They commemorate American Veterans, including ancestors of mine, who fought to defend their homes from aggressive invasion. Removal is just as wrong as the Taliban and ISIS removing historical monuments that they did not agree with, or was offended by.

--- [REDACTED]

From: Mark Brack [REDACTED]
To: "phyllis.hill@dallascityhall.com" <phyllis.hill@dallascityhall.com>, "mark.doty@dallascityhall.com" <mark.doty@dallascityhall.com>
Cc: Ross Oates <roates@ecologyfund.net>
Subject: Removal of the Civil War Monuments
Date: Mon, 25 Feb 2019 23:03:52 +0000 (UTC)

Dear Phyllis and Mark:

Please do not remove the Civil War monuments near Dallas City Hall. Removal of these monuments will be a slap in the face to those who fought and died on both sides of our Civil War - both black and white. If you personally find the monuments distasteful - I AM SORRY - they are history.

Are you proposing to become like the Taliban who destroyed the Buddha monuments in Afghanistan - that had stood for thousands of years? Or are you to be like ISIS was in Syria where much of our shared history was destroyed there - that also was thousands of years old?

Find a way - if you must - to tell your story beside these monuments - but if you remove them - you are basically caving in - to left leaning liberal ideology and basically thumbing your nose at those of us who view these monuments as historical artifacts to be savored and saved!

Mark Brack
[REDACTED]
Dallas, Texas 75208

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ann Naddeo [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 5:51 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition of the Confederate Monument

Please do not approve the permit for the demolition of the Confederate War Memorial. You have been presented with other options that will both preserve and protect artistic structures that present educational opportunities for your community. Demolition will degrade the sacrifice of the thousands that taught our forefathers so much! Although the act of war is deplorable, the compromises that end the war are learning experiences for the ages.

It is my understanding that such demolition would violate the Antiquities Code and also City Ordinances designating this site as an official historical landmark.

Please do not approve this permit.

Annamarie Naddeo
Concerned citizen of the USA

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Diana Winningham - Ordering [REDACTED]
Sent: Wednesday, February 27, 2019 4:52 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

I am asking you to NOT vote in favor of the certificate of demolition of the War Memorial in the downtown city cemetery. Our history should NOT be erased as so much has already happened across the USA>

Thank you for your consideration.

Diana Winningham
A Texas and United States Citizen

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Leonard Lechler [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 5:11 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Certificate of demolition

I wish to deny the applicaion for the certificate of demolotion/removal. Hearings set for March 1.

Sincerely,
Gloria Lechler

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ken Bennett [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 5:07 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Landmark Commission hearings

If unable to attend a hearing, will statements and evidence submitted by email be placed in the record of the proceedings for consideration by the Commissioners? Will it be in the record for purposes of an appeal, if one is taken?

Thanks

Ken Bennett

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Christina Joslin [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 4:48 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please protect our monuments!

Please do not allow the destruction or removal of anymore monuments or memorials. They are history. They are art!
Lest we forget that the past good or bad must be allowed to exist.

Thank you for your consideration.

Christina Joslin


Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carol Kehl <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 4:21 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate monuments

History is history, and my belief is that we should not try to change or destroy it. Many historical monuments, buildings and archeological treasures have been destroyed in the Middle East. They are gone forever and will never be seen or studied by the younger generations. We are the United States and Texas not militants or extremists. As a concerned citizen of Texas, I ask that the Landmark Commission vote NO to the destruction of monuments related to the historical period of the Confederacy, in particular the Confederate War Memorial erected in 1896.

Carol Kehl, Tyler Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Barbara Wallace 
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 4:02 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument removal

Mrs. Hill, please delay the application for the certificate of demolition or removal of the monument.

I am convinced that to destroy any part of the history of the Civil War is criminal.

These men were Americans against Americans and our country suffered pain and death on both sides...families against each other.

Leave it alone so future Americans can learn from it just as it was and know not to let it happen again. It is over, help us let it go!!!

Thank you,

Barbara Wallace

Sent from Mail for Windows 10

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Elizabeth Leifeste [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 4:01 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park

Dear Ms Hill,

When I visit Dallas and drive downtown, or walk around the old cemeteries, it is wonderful to see the old and the new- the fabulous bronze cattle drive and the Confederate Monument. This city is preserving it's heritage. Now the monument is going to be torn down- what a tragedy. When I see Southern monuments, I feel my ancestors who died in the War Between the States are not forgotten, especially the ones without graves, who fell on the battlefield.

Ninety percent of those who lived in Texas in 1860 did not own slaves and did not fight for slavery, but


against the northern politicians and factory owners from taxing the southerners to bankruptcy, and they were afraid of the abolitionists coming to their state and causing insurrections.

I urge you, to as a member of the Landmark Commission, to vote against the certificate of demolition. The huge amount of money it will cost to move this first art sculpture in Dallas could be used by the citizens who want to trash it to erect a monument against slavery and to the black leaders that are meaningful to them, leaving this monument made by a German immigrant who came to Texas to fulfill his dream

Best regards

Liz Leifeste

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Steve Wells 
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 3:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Re: Confederate Statue in Pioneer Park

I am writing this message because I believe that a statue that had stood for a century should not be torn down because some people are offended.

At this time in American society, it seems a certain minority of people are always demanding to be Catered to their Emotions.

These people say the Monuments and Statues were put up to promote white supremacy. This is a blatant attempt to mislead the public, as these people want to erase and rewrite not only the History of the Civil War years, but indeed Texas and American History altogether!

I say the Confederate Statue now in Pioneer Park was put up to honor the service, sacrifice, and valor of men who answered the call when their

State asked them to do so. Courage and valor should always be honored, by everyone. And Politics should not enter into it.

If the City Council truly wants to represent the will of the people, why won't they put the issue to a vote by the citizens of Dallas?

The Statue should stay and not be undone by the whims and emotions of current serving politicians.

Steve Wells, Fort Worth Texas

A descendant of a Confederate Soldier, whose offspring have served in almost all American Wars since his time.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gail Allcock <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 3:34 PM
To: Prior, Marsha; Parent, Melissa; Anderson, Jennifer; Casso, Liz Ana; Doty, Mark; Dean, Neva; Holmes, Anna; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Fwd: PLEASE DO NOT GRANT

Dear Dallas Landmark Commission,

I am resending this email from April of 2018. Please reread it. PLEASE DO NOT let them destroy what is to be believed as the OLDEST structure in Dallas! Do NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition!

PLEASE my children, their future children are begging you! DO NOT destroy history!

It doesn't matter if you agree or disagree with the past. Our children and their children NEED to know, need to learn so they do not repeat it!

Why instead of destroying history and BEAUTIFUL Art work, why don't we raise new monuments and memorials to those that have suffered or that were glorious from our past/future...???

Please read the previous email below. And PLEASE DO NOT GRANT A DEMOLITION CERTIFICATE!!

SINCERELY,

Gail Allcock

----- Forwarded message -----

From: Gail Allcock <[REDACTED]>
Date: Wed, Apr 18, 2018, 8:50 PM
Subject: PLEASE DO NOT GRANT
To: <marsha.prior@dallascityhall.com>, <melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com>, <jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com>, <liz.casso@dallascityhall.com>, <mark.doty@dallascityhall.com>

Landmark Commission Members,

PLEASE DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, our-your children's future! If YOU ALLOW them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense (I and friends are studying into it):

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

PLEASE LISTEN! PLEASE DO NOT BREAK THE LAW! LEAVE ALL MONUMENTS, MEMORIALS ALONE!!!! NO DEMOLITION!!!!

SAY NO TO RESOLUTION #34!!!

Thank you for your valuable time.

Sincerely,

Gail Allcock

817-422-3228

equislover@gmail.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Paula Patterson [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 2:19 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Please remember, this is a memorial to the dead. Removing or destroying it is wrong. I see this in the same light as destroying tombstones. It has stood there for many years and I don't believe it ever hurt anyone. If these horrific practices continue, there will be a call for other historic memorials and statues to be removed. Actually, that is already happening in America. Pretty reminiscent of practices in the Middle East. Please don't let Dallas add to this madness!

Thank you,

Paula Patterson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Loretta Tomlin [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 1:38 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of Confederate Monument


I have just learned of City Manager T.C. Broadnax's effort to force the demolition or removal of the Confederate monument without allowing due process for the public.

Please, I beg you not to allow Manager Broadnax to deny the general public their right to voice their opinion concerning our city. This matter concerns all of the people of this city not just a select group.

Please, do not allow Manager Broadnax to deny us our rights as citizens to speak out.

Thank you - Loretta Tomlin

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bill Johnson 
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 1:03 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history.

I have two great-grandfathers who served in the Confederate army during that awful time of our country. Both were just poor men that had no connection to slavery and probably had to serve much like my later family had to serve in WW1, WW2, the Korean war, and VietNam. I am certain they did not hate Germans, Japanese, Koreans or any one but they had to serve. Slavery was a horrible thing to let happen but I am proud of my Confederate great grandfathers. These monuments are for the men like my great grandfathers who did not run and hide but tried to support their part of the country. There was no real winner in the War Between The States (It certainly was not a "Civil" war as atrocities were committed by both sides on the average citizen). I hope these monuments are preserved to honor their memory and not to glorify the cause of the war. They are part of our history that should never be forgotten so we do not make that kind of mistake in the future.

Respectfully Yours,
Bill Johnson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: BobKaren Brown [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 10:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park

Dear Ms. Hill,

I know the time is short, but I had to speak up. Please do not succumb to the erasers of history by tearing down any Confederate memorials or monuments, specifically, the monument honoring Confederate dead which is at Pioneer Park in Dallas.

Over 90,000 Texans served in the Confederacy, including ten of my forbears. Most of the Texans killed in action were never returned to their state, but buried in unmarked graves across the battlefields of the east. Memorials were put up around the turn of the century as the living war veterans started dying. It was an attempt to honor those who never came home. The diaries of my family are heartbreaking to read. They represent the true feelings and sacrifices made. The fighters of both sides of the war made their peace when they were alive. My own Great Grandfather attended reunions of both Northern and Southern soldiers. All the fighters are dead and gone. The war was fought. The south lost. By following the mob, you are inciting old feelings and scraping scabs off that were long healed. That isn't leadership, nor is it public service.

Following this trend of tearing down Confederate monuments and memorials only encourages damage and vandalism to other monuments, including the graves of our family members who DID survive, and returned to build the Texas we all know and love today. Texans who fought for the US in subsequent wars and gave their lives to the Union, while never forgetting the sacrifices made during the Civil War.

Use this opportunity to explain if you must, but tearing down monuments in cemeteries smacks so loudly of Soviet era "erasures" of history, which we all learned about growing up. We shuddered at the callousness of how peoples lives, records and histories were simply erased at the whim of a new government. Destroying things we don't agree with will only serve to create anger and distrust, and in no way would it create unity.

A monument to Confederate dead does not glorify racism or any other new tag or label we wish to put on them. It remembers their sacrifice. Thats all. All of you are intelligent enough to know that. Today it is my family's monuments and memorials and graves that are being defaced, how would any of you feel if your forbears were condemned to government sponsored erasure after their death, and their headstones smashed and vandalized. The reasons matter not. It is a terrible example for leaders today to set for future generations. You are not elected to mimic the cries of the crowd, but to make deliberative decisions that will impact generations. Please, I urge you as an American and a Texan...don't tear down memorials. By doing so, you are sanctioning your approval of future generations to destroy what all of us may hold dear today.

End this madness

Thank you
Bob Brown
Bandera, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: eleanor edmondson <~~XXXXXXXXXX~~>
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 10:00 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please let us keep our Southern statutes where they were placed many years ago. They have been sitting there silently for years without drawing any attention to themselves and disturbing no one here on earth or heaven above.

Thank you.

Eleanor Edmondson
Native Texan of many generations

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: John Suzow [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 8:43 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

Madam,

By ordinance #24938 dated 5/21/2002 the "period of significance" is determined to be 1849 to 1921.

The monument was erected in 1896. The monument is clearly defined within the boundaries of the cemetery.

It is clearly part of this historical district.

This monument is being falsely deemed not within the "period of significance" by a city council who has a clear track record of attacking confederate symbols. The Landmark Commission must deny this application for a "certificate of demolition".

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Parent, Melissa
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 8:40 AM
To: Doty, Mark
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Confederate Monument

Melissa Parent
Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-671-5094 |
melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com
M-F 8am – 5pm

****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE:** This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.**

-----Original Message-----

From: John Suzow [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 8:38 AM
To: Parent, Melissa
Subject: Confederate Monument

Madam,

By ordinance #24938 dated 5/21/2002 the “period of significance” is determined to be 1849 to 1921.

The monument was erected in 1896. The monument is clearly defined within the boundaries of the cemetery.

It is clearly part of this historical district.

This monument is being falsely deemed not within the “period of significance” by a city council who has a clear track record of attacking confederate symbols. The Landmark Commission must deny this application for a


Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Parent, Melissa
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 7:55 AM
To: Doty, Mark
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Sensitive issues

Melissa Parent
Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-671-5094 |
melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com
M-F 8am – 5pm

****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE:** This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.**

-----Original Message-----

From: Elizabeth Telford [mailto:
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 6:06 PM
To: Parent, Melissa
Subject: Sensitive issues

Okay, I am on the mailing list of a group that disagrees with George P. Bushes's revisionist, and quite frankly, 'Disneyland' redevelopment of the Alamo. I was sent an bulk email today about a confederate landmark within Dallas. As a liberal, here are my thoughts: I have previously lived in London for seven years. During those years, there were signs of many past, failed attempts at power. There were signs of indigenous occupation, Roman, Anglo-Saxon, mainly Norman, and so forth, imprints upon the city. I always remember walking into older cathedrals, and there would be ground-level slash marks. That was because the Calvinists decided to go into cathedrals and cut off anything hinting that there may have been a different past--directly with their swords. You could see slash marks where they had chopped off anything Catholic. I do not agree with what the Confederacy was advocating, but I do think it's absolutely foolish to demolish their presence. Think of what ISIS did during the peak of their influence: they demolished any remnant of the past. Please consider carefully removing and relocating these items. We are a different Texas, but I firmly believe that items like this still have a place in our history. Maybe they aren't in a park, but they are in another area where people can discuss it's place in our timeline.

This is what was sent to me: "Please do not approve the Demolition Permit for the Confederate War Memorial. The City Council was presented with other and better options that will both preserve the beauty of the artistic structures and also be a more educational and unifying factor to our community." You might also mention that such demolition would violate both the Antiquities Code and also the City Ordinances designating this site as an official historical landmark."

Feel free to contact me anytime.

Sincerely,

Betsy Telford
(940)229-9009



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Aleene Green <[REDACTED]@com>
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 7:27 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Fall Confederate War Memorial

Please do not allow the removal or desecration of the Confederate War Memorial in Dallas. This memorial is part of US History and should be preserved. Thank you for your consideration.

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Vickye [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 6:48 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Texas Monuments

Dear Ms. Hall,

I have to ask, what gives a few people the right to decide what hundreds of thousands of Texans are and aren't allowed to witness as they drive by public lands?

These people are exercising the very abuse of power the war between the states was fought over.

We the people have rights regardless if it offends others. Their rights are no more important than mine.

Why can our monuments our History be removed without a vote? A vote from the citizens, not a few people who have to sneak and hurry to get their way before they get caught. That's not how this great country is supposed to be ran. This is very alarming to me that city officials are getting away with this.

I have many ancestors who were Veteran's of this war and I have a right just like Millions of others to honor my ancestors. Will we remove the world war 2 monuments next so as to not offend the Japanese citizens of our country, will we remove monuments to not offend our German citizens or our Vietnamese citizens, etc.?

Shouldn't we be teaching History instead of destroying it? If this was ok to be doing, why are they taking our monuments down in the middle of the night, why do they rush to get it done before anyone has time to stop them, because they are wrong. Why did the mayor of New Orleans write a book about how HE took the monuments down and how HE stood up to do what's right? Who do these people think they are, why do they get to decide what's right?

And WHY are Texas citizens paying hundreds of thousands of dollars to remove something that offends a few rather than feeding Millions. That money could help so many starving children. It could fund medical programs, shelter our VETERANS.

I strongly urge you to STOP this insanity. We need laws to protect history and to stop allowing a few people to make decisions for a lot of Texans.

Thank you for taking the time to consider my rights as a citizen of this State.

Vickye

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Laura Miller [REDACTED]
Sent: Tuesday, February 26, 2019 5:11 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Protect Confederate Monument

Please stop a procedural error concerning demolition and removal of Confederate monuments.

We have heard the shocking news that Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has submitted a certificate of demolition and removal of a certain Confederate Monument in the City of Dallas. The methods used will force the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument in one week without public hearing not the usual 65-day consideration of the certificate.

Procedural errors are no excuse for lack of care in removing monuments of history without the most careful consideration. It is a form of censorship that I know you will want to consider for more than one week as you seek advise and opinions of the public which actually owns these relics.

Please vote against this cultural error. Confederate monuments remind the viewers (citizens and not) of the important era that, with the error and resolve involved in the original display will not be erased by its removal, but will threaten future error correction.

Thank you for hearing my plea. I urge you to protect these monuments as cultural reminders of all the good that is yet to be done.

Again, my appeal to you is that you deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sonja Starnes [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 11:20 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: MONUMENT REMOVAL

This is unthinkable! Does the City of Dallas have any respect for our nation's history? There is no good reason for this demolition of historical markers. This destructive fervor is an evil besetting this city. This rush to destroy is shameful and a waste of tax dollars. Instead of tearing down the past, use citizens' creative energy and tax dollars to look toward a better future. Use the opportunities and freedoms available to Americans to build up...not tear down.

Vote to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

Sonja Starnes

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: BETTY FRY [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 10:51 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Monumnets

I am so upset with this country regarding taking down monuments of our fallen fellow Americans. They served in war and/or ran our country decades ago. That is part of our History, Heritage and Blood that these people died for and now THE PEOPLE think it is racist or unconstitutional to display statutes honoring them. Get real people and you should start reading your history books now before they totally wipe it out and the generations after us will not know anything about history before Clinton. My Fathers family served in the Civil war and every war that America was in up to and including the Viet Nam war I have several members of my Fathers family still living in Texas mostly on the east coast from Dallas to Galveston Island To Corpus Christie and in between. The powers to be are doing this despicable act all over the U.S.A. Please be one of the good guys and stop this madness.

Sincerely

Elizabeth J. Beck Fry

The Protection of Monuments and Markers Committee (POMM) would like to ask all members to please email ASAP to stop this overreach by the City of Dallas.

URGENT!!!

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has pulled a fast one. He submitted the certificate of demolition or removal today and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for the public hearing nor no 65 day for them to consider the certificate.

Speakers must register to speak at the 1pm Landmark Commission meeting at 1pm on March 4th. Letters and emails must be sent to Elaine Hill (Phyllis) and Mark Doty Immediately.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Traci Thompson [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 10:20 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Dallas monument

Chief Planner of Historic Preservation Mr. Doty and Board Coordinator Ms. Hill:

Please, I beg you, do not allow the beautiful Confederate monument in Pioneer Park Cemetery in Dallas to be destroyed. This is a lovely work of art honoring deceased veterans willing to give their lives in war, was dedicated to "the common soldier," and it is in an entirely appropriate place for its purpose. Destroying such a memorial would not only deprive others from seeing it, learning from it, and enjoying it, but would also display an appalling disrespect for the artist who created it, the women who worked long and hard to erect it, the American veterans it honors, and the families, descendants, and loved ones of all of the above. In an even broader sense, destroying Confederate memorials is an act of hate and bigotry against the Southern people of the past, their present-day families and descendants of every ethnicity, and is a form of attempted cultural genocide.

As a memorial to dead veterans, this monument - like others - was, and is, personal to many. Monuments erected in the South after the Civil War were bought almost exclusively by women's groups and for the express purpose of honoring their dead. Civil War history is American history; these veterans were sons, brothers, husbands, fathers, grandfathers, great-grandfathers, and they and their descendants deserve the same cultural respect as any other group. Honoring men who are willing to make the ultimate sacrifice is always right, regardless of changing opinions. Their stories are important, just as ALL the history and ALL the stories of ALL people are important; and if only one person felt a lessening of grief or closure by the erection of a Confederate monument, then its presence is justified.

There is no good nor logical reason to destroy such an object of remembrance that is so important to so many, and to the history of Dallas and of Texas, and is so large and unique that it could not possibly be replaced. The effort required may disturb graves needlessly, and will definitely waste money that could be put to much better use.

Reasons given for moving or destroying Confederate monuments are largely based in politically-driven, presentist assumption rather than in any kind of historical reality. These misconceptions can easily be disproved by correctly-interpreted, properly-contextualized historical evidence. One prevalent charge, that of racism, is "men who fought for the Confederacy fought for slavery." This is very obviously a grossly overly-simplistic and presentist idea. Wars are fought for many complex reasons, men fight for many complex and personal reasons, and the past was by definition racist. It is ridiculous to imagine that we can hide everything connected with the racist past; doing so would mean the destruction of everything we see, as everything has a connection with the past. The entire country and world has been complicit in slavery. Therefore, attempting to remove everything connected with slavery is impossible, and is not a logical reason to dishonor every Confederate veteran, attempt to "punish" their descendants, nor attack a culture's objects of remembrance.

In addition, the Confederacy had many noble ideologies overlooked in the modern quest to completely vilify and censor the South, such as advocating for a state's right of secession, defense against invasion, tyranny, and regional inequality, and a return to the Constitutional principles of the country's founding.

The Texas United Daughters of the Confederacy, the women's group that erected the monument, maintained that it did not exist to "...stir up a feeling of bitterness and enmity, but rather to keep alive that feeling of love for and loyalty to those who sacrificed everything for principle..." and hoped that even "those not in sympathy" with the South would still be able to "admire the generalship, heroism, and ennobling sacrifice" of the southern people. (Kelly McMichael Stott, B.A., M.A., *From Lost Cause to Female Empowerment: the Texas Division of*

the United Daughters of the Confederacy, 1896-1966, dissertation prepared for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, University of North Texas, August 2001, p. 165-166, citing various publications of the UDC.)

Why should we not? Regardless of what people, beliefs, or ethnicity, attempting to single out a group and tear down its history and cultural icons is discrimination and it hurts us all; there can never be understanding, equality, and real diversity as long as we judge and label the people of the present and the past. We must educate about, and not villify nor censor, ALL the history and ALL the stories of ALL of our people, and this includes Southerners and Confederates, past and present. To do anything less is to perpetuate the discrimination and hate so many claim to be against, and to engage in the height of hypocrisy. We must respect everyone's history, the real history of the real people, the history we like and the history we don't like, without presentism and stereotyping, if we are to ever have an equitable society.

The guest speaker at the erection of Dallas's monument explained this sense of equality when he addressed the audience and claimed that Dallas's citizens were "neither federal nor Confederate, native nor foreign born, but Americans all." He argued that the crowd attended the monument's unveiling because they approved of the erection of such a memorial, not because they wanted to recall past feelings or relive the bitter conflict. Dallas simply wanted to celebrate "the glory of the blue and the gray." (Stott, p. 167).

Attendance at this ceremony so long ago represented an act of American citizenship and patriotism. Please let Dallas and the state of Texas continue that equality, citizenship, and patriotism by showing the importance of cultural respect and cultural preservation, and by taking a stand for ALL groups in our nation, including Confederates and Southerners of the past, present, and future.

Thank you for your consideration.

Sincerely,

Traci Thompson, M.L.I.S., CG(sm)

Please forward to Ms. Katherine D. Seale, Chair of the Dallas Landmark Commission. Thank you.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ross Miracle [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 10:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

To members of the Landmark Commission:

My name is Ross Miracle, and I live in Sunnyvale, Texas. Although I am no longer a resident of the City of Dallas, I was born here, went to high school here, and lived here from 2005 until 2013. Sunnyvale may be my hometown, but I still consider Dallas to be my *city*. I am writing to express my deep concern over the prospect of not only the removal of the Confederate War Memorial from Pioneer Park, but also the rumor of its complete demolition.

As I am sure you already know, the Memorial was dedicated in the late 19th century, making it Dallas' oldest public sculpture. Aside from the fiscal reasons for not spending nearly half a million dollars on the Memorial's removal, and possible, destruction and allocating those funds towards more useful purposes, there are also significant non-economic reasons for maintaining the Memorial. Opponents of the Memorial have attempted to discredit the sculpture by arguing that it celebrates white supremacy, treason, and losers. Please, however, allow me to respond to these three common accusations.

Firstly, the Memorial is not a celebration to slavery, racism, or white supremacy. While there is no argument that the issue of slavery was intertwined with the causes leading up to the Civil War, this Memorial does not pay tribute to white supremacy. Rather, it honors the soldiers and sailors who heeded their state's call to defend Texas from military invasion. Slavery may have been the principal cause of *secession*, but it was not the principal cause of the war, nor was it the soldiers' motivation to fight and die for Texas. The war was fought for the preservation of the Union on the side of the North, and independence on the side of the South. It should be noted that President Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation did not free one slave in either the Union "border states" or in Union-occupied Confederate territory. In fact, slavery remained legal in parts of the Union until the passage of the 13th Amendment—well after the end of the war. Confederate soldiers, on the other hand, came in all colors, including Tejanos under the command of Col. Santos Benavides, Native Americans under Cherokee Gen. Stand Watie, and volunteers of the 1st Louisiana Native Guard—the first militia unit in North American history to have African-American officers. These soldiers did not fight to enslave others or to conquer foreign lands, but fought simply in defense of their home states.

Secondly, the Memorial does not honor traitors. At the beginning of the Civil War, the United States was only 88-years-old. In addition, at the start of the war, Texas had only been in the Union for 16 years. The idea of loyalty to the federal government before one's loyalty to his state or home was hardly unquestionable. Even today, particularly in our state, it would not be considered unusual for an individual to be a Texan first and an American second. Therefore, to simply label Confederate soldiers as "traitors," because they sided with their state over the federal government is both unfair and ignorant of the perceptions of 19th century Texans. Moreover, within the past hundred years, Texans' ancestors had rebelled against both George III and Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna. However, very few would discount Washington,

Jefferson, Austin, or Travis as mere "traitors." Instead, they are remembered as heroes who bravely fought for and served their fledgling nations.



Thirdly, it is undisputed that the Confederate soldiers ultimately failed on the battlefield. However, to taunt the sculpture as some sort of "participation trophy," diminishes the soldiers' valor and sacrifice in the face of impossible odds. Nearly half a century ago, the United States lost a war in Vietnam, and appropriately, the government erected a monument to all Americans who perished in the war. Would anyone refer to the Vietnam War Memorial as a "participation trophy?" I would surely hope not. Like the Vietnam Memorial, the Confederate War Memorial rightly honors the Texans who honorably served their state when duty called, even though ultimate military success eluded them.

Finally, I am not so naïve to realize that there are legitimate complaints about the presentation of the Memorial. Notably, that it was erected during a time when African-Americans, though free, remained second-class citizens. That is why I think it to be entirely appropriate to add context to the sculpture, as well as to add additional statues or sculptures to Pioneer Park that honor individuals from minority and previously underrepresented backgrounds. As such, I would implore you all to not act too rashly and send this century-old Memorial to the dustbin of history, but rather, contextualize the Memorial in a way that continues to show respect for fallen Texas soldiers, while also allowing later Dallas and Texas heroes to be showcased as well.

Thank you very much,
Ross Miracle

--

Ross C. Miracle
rosscmiracle@gmail.com
214 762 9235

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: James Layne [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 7:31 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Cemetery Desecration

I am shocked that you are apparently going to tear down a monument to veterans at Pioneer Cemetery. I can't tell you the shock and disgust I felt when I read this. This cannot be allowed to happen.

Monuments to the dead, especially those that are historic and longstanding, need to be respected. Confederate monuments are no more endorsements of slavery than monuments to Vietnam veterans make a judgment about that war. It's a historical fact that the average soldier, north and south, who fought in the Civil War was motivated by regional pride and defense of their homes and families, not slavery. Most southern families that fought in the war didn't even own slaves.

Can we please take a step back here and have a little common decency and respect monuments to the dead? This will be a major disgrace if it is allowed to happen.

James

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: James Layne [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 7:31 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Cemetery Desecration


I am shocked that you are apparently going to tear down a monument to veterans at Pioneer Cemetery. I can't tell you the shock and disgust I felt when I read this. This cannot be allowed to happen.

Monuments to the dead, especially those that are historic and longstanding, need to be respected. Confederate monuments are no more endorsements of slavery than monuments to Vietnam veterans make a judgment about that war. It's a historical fact that the average soldier, north and south, who fought in the Civil War was motivated by regional pride and defense of their homes and families, not slavery. Most southern families that fought in the war didn't even own slaves.

Can we please take a step back here and have a little common decency and respect monuments to the dead? This will be a major disgrace if it is allowed to happen.

James

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ann Douglas 
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 7:25 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please do not remove the monuments to my family's service in the Confederacy. It may not be your heritage but it is mine. If it was yours I would not be so cruel as to want to remove it.

Ann Douglas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Mark Brack [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 5:04 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Cc: Ross Oates
Subject: Removal of the Civil War Monuments

Dear Phyllis and Mark:

Please do not remove the Civil War monuments near Dallas City Hall. Removal of these monuments will be a slap in the face to those who fought and died on both sides of our Civil War - both black and white. If you personally find the monuments distasteful - I AM SORRY - they are history.

Are you proposing to become like the Taliban who destroyed the Buddha monuments in Afghanistan - that had stood for thousands of years? Or are you to be like ISIS was in Syria where much of our shared history was destroyed there - that also was thousands of years old?

Find a way - if you must - to tell your story beside these monuments - but if you remove them - you are basically caving in - to left leaning liberal ideology and basically thumbing your nose at those of us who view these monuments as historical artifacts to be savored and saved!

Mark Brack
726 N Montclair
Dallas, Texas 75208

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sam Anderson [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 5:01 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas War memorial update

Dear Ms Hill,

In regards to the attempt by Dallas city council to remove this war memorial from our city, no ma'am. That is a negative. We do not attempt to cover up or hide or past.....we embrace history, discuss it and allow younger generations to learn and be better from learning about our past history.

Do not attempt to remove this part of history.

Thank you for your time.

I shall see you and the rest of the Dallas council on March 4th

Sam Anderson
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Attitude that sets the altitude for living! (James MacDonald)

"Pleasant words are like a honeycomb, Sweetness to the soul and health to the bones." (Proverbs 16:24)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bill & Jan [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 4:57 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Destruction of Dallas historic markers

As a concerned Texas citizen, I am horrified at what Dallas has done and plans on doing to disrespect our heritage and brave ancestors of the past. Because one person has an agenda, it does not make right the destruction that is being done.

Why is it that one group of people gets to decide what happens to public markers? Those heroes whom the markers represent need to be remembered. Just as those who wish the destruction of the monuments because of some perceived atrocity to their ancestor, many other citizens wish the monuments saved because of known gallantry of their ancestors. Nothing that was done in the past has caused physical harm to us today. Let the markers remain.

Please deny the application for removal/demolition of these monuments.

Thank you for your consideration of this request.

Janis Crow

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Christine Paul [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 4:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL Removal

Good afternoon!

Significant historical monuments, artifacts, books, letters must NEVER be defaced, disgraced, torn from pediments and discarded like garbage. If history is not taught, children especially need to know the facts. So far the Dallas City Council has poorly represented anyone outside a small, narrow group of members and their constituents to SAY ENOUGH is ENOUGH. Spending millions of dollars on repressing history instead of wisely using money to educate and integrate reality with history is a shameful use of taxpayer resources.

When will THE JFK MEMORIAL have to go or relocate the films, archives of Lee Harvey Oswald. CAN YOU ERASE THAT TOO? Just think about the treasures in Great Brittan and Germany, Norway, Italy, Spain, Greece, statues remain everywhere. Yes, the past had some ugly consequences but Confederate men and women gave their blood and tears and also often became champions like Martin Luther King. The underground railroad ran right thru the heart of downtown and if you understand history, greatness was often the result of gut wrenching violence and desire to maintain a way of life that we abolished with President Lincoln's proclamation and again the strength of the Republican Rev. Martin Luther King. YOU CANNOT ERASE THAT and destroy our history.

Grant came through the south and burned, raped and tortured everyone around him and his men! He was an alcoholic but he was on the side of the winners, yet they have not made war on his memorials and those all over the east coast. Apparently northerners have had enough of mock history lessons, the Italian Mafia, Irish potato famine, etc. Vandalism exists everywhere but the sanctimonious removal of Confederate reminders is being done by public servants of "We the People." When I moved here, I told our older children, the south rose again because of the advent of AIR CONDITIONING but never did I tell them to disrespect the Confederate Flag and monuments to the south's war dead!

Christine J. Paul
Neighborhood Watch Volunteer
Preston Square Pink Panther Prowl
Dallas, TX 75230
RA 4523
Beat 641
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Elaine Luman [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 4:26 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

Please use your position for the good of history and do NOT allow the removal of any Confederate monuments. This is the equivalent of the destruction of ancient statues in the middle east in recent years. The Civil War was about states rights, which included things good and bad. We can not continue to try to erase history and rewrite it to suit the current political agendas. Thanks you so much for your consideration of this request.

ElaineLuman

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: A Callaway [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 3:46 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate memorials

Hello Commissioner Hill,

I would like you to consider voting against the request to remove Confederate Memorials from Pioneer Park and any other public places in Dallas. I am ashamed of the history that is associated with these memorials, but I do not believe trying to erase and revise our past is the answer. Instead I would like to see monuments raised in the same area that represents the rest of the story. Memorials to the strong and courageous people that suffered through the horrific era of slavery in our country would be a better solution in my opinion. Surely this idea has been discussed but I do not see any reference to it in the media.

Thank you,
Angela Callaway

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 3:35 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Removing Confederate War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill & Mr. Doty:

I am contacting you in regard to the certificate of demolition Dallas City Mgr., T.C. Broadnax has submitted for the removal of Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery. Mr. Broadnax is forcing the Landmark Commission to vote on the removal of the monument on Monday, March 4th.

This means there will be no public hearing and testimony nor 65 days for them to consider the certificate!!!!

This is NOT about the Confederacy. It is about our Constitution and Censorship!!!! Removing historical monuments is BOOK BURING!!!! And CENSORSHIP!!!!

Vote against this Censorship!!!! Stand for our history, TRUTH and America!!!

Sincerely – Lola & Bill Hurt, Dallas County & American Citizens

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Talihina American [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 3:23 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: landmarks

Please do not remove any landmarks as they represent our American heritage.

Thanks
Kay Whitson
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Pat Elliott Sr. <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 3:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Statuaries

Dallas City Officials;

Leave historical statuaries along. Do not destroy any of them including Confederate statuaries.

Pat Elliott, Sr.

Brenham, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kate Egner [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 2:51 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

Not in my state this should be happening. We follow the rule of law? All Confederate graves and monuments are protected by Congress passing a bill that all Confederate monuments and graves are treated the same as all US military. This happened twice 1928 and again in 1958. So the city of Dallas does not follow the rule of law. It's not just Confederate but all war monuments. George Soles has 166 active paid groups in our county. Working to tear everything American up. And it's up to all of us to tell them to go to Hell. The truth about the war was not slavery but taxation. Lincoln said that all along during the war. I am asking for Dallas to stand up to these Socialists and tell them not in my state we the people of Texas honor our war dead. Ps how is your city manager getting by running this through.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Frank [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 2:45 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Save Confederate Memorial at Pioneer Park Cemetery

Attention: Katherine Seale, Chair of the Landmark Commission

Ms. Seale, I implore you to use whatever influence and/or power you have to preserve the Confederate Memorial at Pioneer Park Cemetery. Please do not let history be destroyed in the name of political correctness. Whether we agree or disagree on the meaning and/or purpose of the Confederate Memorial it is still "history" and should be preserved. This country was not founded on the premise that everyone must "agree" but it now seems that forces or at work to remove anything that is considered offensive by a force actively at work that decides for everyone what something means or does not mean.

Sincerely,

Frank Crisp
Proud American, Southerner and Texan!
Marshall, Texas
[REDACTED] landline
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sandra Callaway [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 1:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Re: Pioneer Park Memorial

It is my understanding that the City of Dallas wishes to eradicate all memorials to the history of our country. This is a very sad state, indeed. "Those who do not remember the past are condemned to repeat it". The War Between the States was a period in our history which should be remembered. Our country is once again divided due to a fringe of radicals with loud voices, who do not speak for the silent majority of the people of our nation. A few people should not be given the power to remove monuments to heroic historic figures. This just isn't right in any sense of the word. Once it begins, how will it be stopped? Do we begin by obliterating monuments to the War Between the States, and then go on to monuments to other wars and their heroic figures? No war is popular, but it is part of our history. Many of my ancestors died in these wars. They surely weren't fighting for slavery, as they owned none. They fought to preserve their homes. and protect their families. Now you want to eradicate every memory of these courageous men. Should they not be remembered?

If these men are not worthy of monuments to their courage, do we obliterate their names from everything? Dallas is trying to change history. First by removing a beautiful statue of General Lee and his aide, which in itself is a monument to art. Then they rename schools and streets. So will Burleson, Cleburne, and all the rest be required to change the names of their cities? It has become ridiculous. History cannot be erased, and it shouldn't be erased. I hope you will have the courage to vote against removal of anymore confederate monuments. Not only for the history, but against the needless use of tax dollars, which could well be spent in other areas of need.

Most sincerely,

Sandra Callaway

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Greg Cooper <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 12:45 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Disrespect to our monuments to veterans

Hello, as an ancestor of Confederate veterans and U.S. veterans of the Civil war. I understand it may be the intention of some members of the local government in Dallas to destroy the Confederate memorial in Dallas. When monuments to U.S. veterans are destroyed it sends a message to members of our military that we don't honor their service to our country. There has been a dramatic rise in vandalism in military cemeteries across this country recently, and I believe this is related to the disrespect being shown to our service members and the memorials to them. Please take a stand for history and our military and don't allow those who dishonor our veterans to have the loudest voice. Please protect U.S. military history and seek to protect and preserve it!

--
Greg Cooper

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: joyce cernosek [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 12:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monuments

It saddens me that so many politicians think they need to demolish the Confederate monuments. History can not be changed or erased just to please a segment of the population. The monuments for the Union officers who also were slave owners aren't being removed. History must be taught with truth accuracy and fact. Yes, my great grandfather rode with the Confederacy, and I feel confident that he and his father did not mistreat their slaves as they were workers to keep crops growing. I'm not too sure that Texans realize Texas was populated by Confederates who had no homes to go back to. Here in Erath county their are 600 confederate soldiers buried here that we have knowledge. Please help Texans understand their history.

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: robert fulmer [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 12:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition

So after you cave in and destroy all the statues, what's next, remove the books from the libraries and schools. With this act you judge everyone to have been racist, everyone who lived in a Southern state to be racist. Everyone who fought for the South to be racist. I know, today, it's the catch phrase everyone is afraid of, if you don't agree you're a racist and no one especially politicians want that.

I contend that the memorial is a contributing monument to the ideal that men are willing to fight for their beliefs whether you agree with those beliefs or not. It is part of our past and you can view the past anyway you want, but you can't make it go away by removing statues.

Government's that do what you are about to do are threatening to the citizenry. Using your power to remove religion, remove historical facts, yet breaking other laws that you don't agree with for convenience.

It will be a sad day when the day comes that you bury the past with this act.

My hope is that Texas voters will hold you accountable for this.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Nancy Stoll [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 11:20 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Appeal to remove War Memorial

I grew up in Dallas and come from a long line of veterans —as far back as World War II.

This is my official appeal to deny the application from City Manager, T.C. Broadnax to remove/destroy the Ward Memorial in downtown Dallas.

Do not destroy our monuments to Veterans, war heroes and to any historical statues, such as the Civil War or Christian values, crosses

Thank you.

Nancy Young Stoll
Lubbock, TX
[REDACTED]

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dray [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 11:12 AM
To: ;
Subject: Confederate War Memorial
Importance: High

I am writing in regards to the Confederate War Memorial located downtown Dallas in Pioneer Cemetery 1201 Marilla Street, Dallas, Texas. Case (CD 189-007 (LC)

I am a conservative Republican and most of my ancestors were in the union army. But I did have some on the Confederate side.

But regardless of what side your ancestors were on during the Civil War. Does not change from the fact that this is a memorial to all the people that died for the greater good of America...

Save America's history, it's the only way we can make sure we do not repeat it...

Dray Armstrong
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Greg Flowers <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 10:44 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Landmark Commission - agenda item March 4th

Ms. Hill,

I am 57 years old, and a lifelong Dallas County resident. I am greatly concerned over the demolition/removal request of the Confederate War Memorial in Dallas' Pioneer Park.

I pray that your group use the wisdom that is needed in these moments of consideration of the demolition/removal of this memorial. The short sighted political wants of identity politics has put us all in a very divisive place. But what should be considered is the long term history that this monument represents. I can see a time in the near future where monuments and memorials of the American Revolution (already under attack), World War I/II, Korean War, and Vietnam War will be under the same knee-jerk decision making by a small numbered politically-minded group.

As you might be guessing, I do come from a family where every one of my great-grandparents (both my mother and father's grandparents) fought for their home State during the War Between the States. None of my family members were slave-owners, as they themselves were small land farmers or share-croppers from Georgia, Alabama, Missouri, and Texas. They all migrated to Texas during or soon after the War. They survived Reconstruction in North Texas, eventually settling here to raise my grandparents, then my parents.

We only have a handful of 19th century monuments in Dallas, please do NOT let the mislead politicking confuse 19th century war with 20th century racism and 21st century identity politics; thus, leading to the demolition of what is our city, state's and country's history.

I, respectfully and strongly, request that you vote to DENY the request for demolition and/or removal of the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park.

Greg Flowers

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Joy Jenkins [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 9:15 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); markdoty@dallascityhall.com
Subject: stop the removal of the monuments

If you continue with the removal of the monuments you are creating a dangerous precedent. We have seen this with other attacks on 'anything Confederate' leading to attacks on anything with the name Lee, or Jefferson, etc. We have also seen the attack of one of the Confederate flags leading to attacks on the American flag and other symbols of our country. History cannot be erased. It should be learned; it is the only way to appreciate how far we have come; it is the only way to not repeat the mistakes of the past. The saddest part of the attacks on anything Confederate is the veterans were called to duty by POLITICIANS - now when it is more popular to dishonor their service to their communities, their states, their country, it is the POLITICIANS who call for the destruction of the memory of their service. It is time to make a stand to remember where we were, where we are, and where we are going. Tearing down monuments does nothing to change history. If you don't make a stand to defend our history now, today's service will face the same scrutiny by future generations - judging the past by today's standards.

Joy Jenkins



Virus-free. www.avast.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jackie Oakes [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 9:15 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Removal of monuments/statues

Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty,

I am writing to ask that you halt the removal of your city's monuments and statues pertaining to the War Between the States. It is so difficult for me to see how such a few protestors can make you decide that history needs to be destroyed. Apparently both of you have little Southern heritage because a true Southerner would stand up to these misguided individuals who only want to create chaos in our country. I am certain there are too many other things far more serious happening in Dallas that needs your immediate attention. Leave history alone and let's preserve it.

A North Carolina citizen ready to stand up for history.
Jackie Oakes

Home of Tippy's Treats

Coastal K-9 Bakery, Inc.
Jackie Oakes
5941 Carolina Beach Road, Unit D
Wilmington, NC 28412
PH: 910.794.4014
www.coastalk9bakery.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Angie & RW Smith <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:49 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

This fabulous monument has been in our community since 1897, just standing there and honoring our ancestors. We can probably all point back in history to our own great great grandfathers that served in the Civil War (I know I can). I visited this monument again yesterday. It has been 70 yrs since my first visit. Why all of a sudden has this become offensive? Just because someone claims they are offended; there are more of us, I believe, that are not offended. You really have to go out of your way to visit the monument. So someone just walking down the street should not be bothered.

This is our country's history. The men of this monument and those that served under them should not be erased from history but embraced for what occurred during their times. If you remove the monument from this historical sight will you next try to remove the graves of those that served during the Civil War?

I implore you, City of Dallas, to let this monument continue to stand as it has done for 122 years.

I have always loved being from Dallas, thought it was a great place to call home. But my thoughts will fade if you continue on this path. Do not give into these few that claim a violation to their moral or social code.

Benjamin Franklin once said "We are all born ignorant but one must work hard to remain stupid." Do let be led by those in our current society that have chosen to remain stupid. We learn from our past and our past includes the men of this monument.

Thank you, Angie Williams Smith



Virus-free. www.avq.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bill Carrell [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:23 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Protect our monuments

Ms Hill,

Please prevent Mr Broadnax from preventing the further education of the public about the evils of prejudice. If our public history monuments are destroyed it helps to prevent teaching about how tolerance and knowledge of your neighbor enhance not only our cities, state and nation but our own individual lives.

PROTECT OUR MONUMENTS!

Bill Carrell
[REDACTED]

Sent from my iPad

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: debra Lochtrog [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:18 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition...

Ms Hill,

Please prevent Mr Broadnax from preventing the further education of the public about the evils of prejudice. If our public history monuments are destroyed it helps to prevent teaching about how tolerance and knowledge of your neighbor enhance not only our cities, state and nation but our own individual lives.

PROTECT OUR MONUMENTS!

Debra Lochtrog
dlochnurse@icloud.com
Retired from the public school system after 18 years.

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:15 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Save our monuments!

Please, please, please save our monuments! They all are part of our history and removing them will change nothing to do with changing that. This hysteria does not erase a significant era of change, and lives lost in defense of our country.
Nancy Hood

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Casso, Liz Ana
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:07 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Memorials to our Veterans and Historical Preservation



Liz Casso
Sr. Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development & Construction
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-671-5052 | F: 214-670-4210
liz.casso@dallascityhall.com



****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE: This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.****

From: Larry Hill [mailto:████████████████████]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:36 PM
To: Casso, Liz Ana <liz.casso@dallascityhall.com>
Subject: Memorials to our Veterans and Historical Preservation

Landmark Commission Members,

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, ours and your children's future! If you allow them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting Soldiers Monuments, as enacted by the Federal Govt. Save our precious History for future generations to learn from.

Thank you,

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Casso, Liz Ana
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 8:01 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW:

Liz Casso
Sr. Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development & Construction
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-671-5052 | F: 214-670-4210
liz.casso@dallascityhall.com

****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE:** This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.**

-----Original Message-----

From: [REDACTED] [mailto:[REDACTED]]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:10 PM
To: Casso, Liz Ana <liz.casso@dallascityhall.com>
Subject:

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, ours and your children's future! If you allow them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting Soldiers Monuments, as enacted by the Federal Govt. Save our precious History for future generations to learn from.

Thank you,
Al Stidham



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Parent, Melissa
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 7:56 AM
To: Doty, Mark
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Memorials to our Veterans



Melissa Parent
Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-671-5094 |
melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com
M-F 8am – 5pm



****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE: This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.****

From: Larry Hill [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:31 PM
To: Parent, Melissa
Subject: Memorials to our Veterans

Landmark Commission Members,

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, ours and your children's future! If you allow them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting Soldiers Monuments, as enacted by the Federal Govt. Save our precious History for future generations to learn from.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: John Sullivan [mailto:jsullivan737@att.net]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 6:34 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Appeal

I would like to formally appeal to the city of Dallas and deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the confederate monument. What's going on in this country is disgraceful and disrespectful to all veterans. Under U.S. law confederate soldiers are veterans. Any city that is in favor of trying to erase history is no better than ISIS. I for one will not visit such a city. The people making these decisions and not listening to we the people are no better than Communists. A people who forget there past are doomed to repeat it.

John Sullivan

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sandra Bade <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 4:47 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Fwd: URGENT: Please forward

I appeal for you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the monument.

Sandra McPhail Bade
2126 Dewitt St.
Irving, TX 75062

sandrabade2011@gmail.com
214.883.4092

----- Forwarded message -----

From: Martha Bender <[REDACTED]>
Date: Sun, Feb 24, 2019 at 7:35 PM
Subject: Fwd: URGENT: Please forward
To: Ruth Cottrell <[REDACTED]>, Martha Bender <[REDACTED]>, Barbara Lancaster Tsirigotis <[REDACTED]>, Vikki Massengill <[REDACTED]>, Sandra Bade <[REDACTED]>, Diane Kreger <[REDACTED]>, Renita Hall <[REDACTED]>, Ruth Bowen <[REDACTED]>, Stacey Martin <[REDACTED]>, Charlotte Dockray <[REDACTED]>, Jean Brotherton <[REDACTED]>

Ladies,
For your attention.

Martha

Sent from my iPhone
[REDACTED]

Begin forwarded message:

From: mitzi lewis <[REDACTED]>
Date: February 24, 2019 at 5:01:31 PM MST
To: Pamela Armstrong <[REDACTED]>, Karen Esberger <[REDACTED]>, Alice Swank <[REDACTED]>, Martha Bender <[REDACTED]>, Margaret Widmer <[REDACTED]>, Marita Richards <[REDACTED]>, Nancy Brantley <[REDACTED]>, Linda Turner <[REDACTED]>
Subject: Fw: URGENT: Please forward
Reply-To: "[REDACTED]" <[REDACTED]>

Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android

----- Forwarded Message -----

From: "Cheryl Monteith" <cepmonte@gmail.com>

To: "Lois Lowe" <lc.loweudc@att.net>, "mgl288@yahoo.com" <mgl288@yahoo.com>, "Sandra Giarrusso" <smilesintx50@yahoo.com>, "nbhocr31@flash.net" <nbhocr31@flash.net>

Cc: "Debra Hamman" <debrahamman@att.net>, "psstep@yahoo.com" <psstep@yahoo.com>, "sheilarandolph@yahoo.com" <sheilarandolph@yahoo.com>, "Cheryl Monteith" <cepmonte@gmail.com>

Sent: Sun, Feb 24, 2019 at 5:58 PM

Subject: URGENT: Please forward

District Chairman:

This is an urgent email that needs to be sent to all chapter Presidents to send to their entire membership. Time is of the essence and must be done this week!

Thank you for your help in this urgent need!

Cheryl Monteith
POMM Chairman

The Protection of Monuments and Markers Committee (POMM) would like to ask all members to please email ASAP to stop this overreach by the City of Dallas.

URGENT!!!

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has pulled a fast one. He submitted the certificate of demolition or removal today and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for the public hearing nor no 65 day for them to consider the certificate.

Speakers must register to speak at the 1pm Landmark Commission meeting at 1pm on March 4th. Letters and emails must be sent to Elaine Hill (Phyllis) and Mark Doty Immediately.

Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com

Mark.Doty@dallascityhall.com

It does not matter if you are or aren't a Dallas City/Dallas County resident. It just matters that you appeal for them to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

Karen Pieroni

Dallas 6

kpudcdallas6@aol.com

214-502-2971

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gordon Mobley [mailto:gmobley@alumni.net]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 10:46 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Please deny the certificate of demolition or removal of the Dallas Confederate War Memorial submitted by the Dallas City Manager. Political Correctness and revisionist history are evil and need to be stopped immediately.

thanks,
Gordon Mobley

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: rick couvillon [mailto:rickc@worldnet.att.net]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 9:34 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL

Phyllis,

As a US Marine vet I believe in keeping all War Memorials be that for Texas Troops at the Alamo, D-day or Gettysburg. Keep the Memorial, we need more Memorials not fewer.

Thank you,
Rick Couvillon

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Rick Range [redacted]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 8:54 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial Demolition Permit Hearing

Please do not approve the Demolition Permit for the Confederate War Memorial. The City Council was presented with other and better options that will both preserve the beauty of the artistic structures and also be a more educational and unifying factor to our community.

Thank you very much for your consideration.

Sincerely,
Rick Range

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Don Smith [mailto:ds288@gmail.com]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 8:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial that sits in the downtown cemetery

I do not want the War Memorial that sits in the downtown cemetery moved or destroyed. History is history and we learn from our past mistakes and successes. Linda S. Smith

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Elizabeth Smith [redacted]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 8:38 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of Confederate War Memorial that sits in a Downtown Cemetery.

We need to remember our past and the people that gave their lives for us.

Keep our Memorial.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 8:15 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial Removal

This is a plight to change history and an injustice to Texans and Americans who have given their life sercig this country.
This MUST NOT happen!
Leslie White

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Elizabeth McEnery [mailto:ElizabethMcEnery@hotmail.com]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 7:21 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

Dear Ms. Hill,

I strenuously object to the removal of the Confederate Monument in Dallas and to the removal of Confederate monuments elsewhere. As it has in the past, the issue of the removal of Confederate monuments will play a paramount role in how I vote in all elections. Thank you for your consideration of my thoughts on this very important matter.

Respectfully yours,

Elizabeth McEnery

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lynda Breeding4727 [mailto:lynda.breeding@hotmail.com]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 7:16 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please don't allow the Confederate statues to be torn down.

Sent from my LG Phoenix 3, an AT&T 4G LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Nancy Simpson [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 6:35 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial

The brazen attempt by the corrupt and mal-contented of our society to disassemble our AMERICAN history is deplorable. Just because they don't like something they think it needs to be done away with. PLEASE do NOT let this be accomplished in Dallas. Please **deny** the application for the certificate of demolition that was submitted by the city manager. If the monuments are offensive to that element of society, then they don't have to visit that park. There are a majority of us who are quieter and we do enjoy the history found in that park. Please help keep out American history in tact for all of us to visit.

Nancy Simpson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Troyce Wood [mailto:troyce.wood@yahoo.com]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 4:27 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

Dear Madam,

It has come to my attention that the City of Dallas is planning to destroy an outstanding monument commemorating citizens of Texas who lived and served the State of Texas during the the time of our membership in the Confederate State of America. While I agree that period of our history is not Texas' finest hour, it is still a vital time in our history and those thousands who died because of the Confederacy, either in battle, from economic conditions or because of oppression or discrimination should not be forgotten.

Sam Houston was a brilliant man, and his accomplishments contributed greatly to the development and success of Texas. He also had great flaws that caused much sorrow and disappointments in his life. It is right and proper that we honor him for his successes but also remember his failures. So it is with Texas history: we must remember the bad as well as the good so that we may appreciate the legacy of this great state. Destroying the memories of one period of our history is an attempt to rewrite history; an effort that should not be allowed to happen.

Please use your influence and authority to keep the Confederate monuments as a memorial to those who lived, suffered and died not only during the time our State flew the Confederate flag, but for those who endured the cruel and degrading period of Reconstruction imposed on Texas.

With best wishes to you and hope that you will help ensure future generations of Texans will remember all of the sacrifices, errors and heroism of our ancestors.

Troyce E. Wood
18 Foothill Drive
Ransom Canyon, TX 79366

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gertie [redacted]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 4:16 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historical Monument

this is carry things too far. How is having a monument honoring our Veterans going to hurt anyone? Please stop this ridiculous of destroying our history and honoring our ancestors. Please I beg of you to have courage and stop this!!!! Thank you

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Mikhail Podolski [mailto:podolskiy@comcast.net]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 4:14 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please don't let destroy the beautiful Pioneer Cemetery Monument

Dear Dallas Landmark Commission members.

My name is Mikhail Podolski, I am a US citizen. I came to this country from Russia more than 20 years ago.

Over in Russia in 1917, when Bolsheviks came to power, they destroyed everything Russian Empire tried to build for hundreds of years. I was saddened to find out how much Russia has lost

I was always proud of my new homeland where the past is respected and preserved, but this morning I found out that the city is planning to remove the confederate monument.

That news shocked me as I feel like my American values are taken from me.

Dear sir or madam, please don't destroy the history of Dallas, it will only divide the nation, nothing good will come out of it.

We have so many other issues to take care of and fix and preferably we should stand united

I really do hope that my letter will make a difference

Thank you very much and god bless

Mikhail

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 3:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Please do not destroy the Confederate War Memorial.

That war freed the slaves. People who are living now couldn't know anyone who was involved, we are all too young. The last person who actually remembered would have died fifty years ago.

Destroying a sculpture designed by Frank Teich, the father of the granite industry in Texas, is WRONG.

We should stand up against hate-mongers and racists who want to incite conflict by feigning offense at something that happened years before they were born. **No one is responsible for something that happened before they were born.**

Joan Smith

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Karen Pieroni [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 2:37 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Cc: Karen Pieroni
Subject: Confederate War Memorial - Deny CD
Attachments: Pieroni Attachment - Landmark 2-2019.pdf

February 24, 2019

To Landmark Commission
Attn: Katherine Seale

I am writing to you as one who has lived in Dallas City and/or Dallas County for 31 years. I am writing to you also as an ancestor of over 40 Confederate veterans. I am writing as a private citizen and a registered voter.

First to address the Certificate of Demotion and Removal (CD) submitted by Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax upon the 11-4 vote of the Dallas City Council. I am dismayed, distressed, and disappointed in the less than ethical behavior of our City Leaders forcing this upon you as early as March 4th. They did **NOT** file by the first Thursday of the month by noon in order for it to be reviewed by the Landmark Commission on the first Monday of the following month and therefore I do not understand why you have it on your March 4th agenda. Nevertheless, it is.

In reviewing an application, the only demotion standard the City could possibly come up with is the one they did – non-contributing structure because newer than period of significance.

For this I beg to disagree:

The monument was erected in June of 1896. Because of the City, it was moved to Pioneer Cemetery in the early 1960's. The City and the Office of Cultural Affairs took part in its re-dedication in 1997. I'm sure at the time that seemed like a wonderful idea because there were already Confederate soldiers buried in that same cemetery and some of them, former Dallas dignitaries and citizens:

1. John Martin Stemmons – 16th Missouri Infantry
2. Robert M. Cooke – 19th Texas Cavalry (Burford's)
3. Nicholas Henry Darnell (Historical Marker) – 18th Texas Cavalry (Regiment named for him)
4. Alexander Harwood (Historical Marker) – Capt. – Field & Staff, TX Confederate States Army
5. James K. P. Record (Historical Marker) – Johnston's Mounted Volunteer – Field & Staff, CSA
6. D.W Broughton - Major – Company C, 20th (not 13th) Texas Cavalry
7. John Jay Good (Historical Marker) – Capt. TX Artillery (Unit named for him)
8. John W. Lane – 2nd Lieutenant, 18th TX Cavalry (under Darnell's leadership)
9. Samuel B. Pryor – 1st Lieutenant, Good's Artillery (under Good's leadership)
10. Barton Warren Stone – Colonel, Field & Staff, 6th Texas Cavalry (Unit named for him)

These are just ten that I have been able to research. I would think that there are other Confederate veterans buried in Pioneer Cemetery but as you know, there are many, many missing headstones.

In addition, William Lewis Cabell, is framed on the monument. The Confederate soldier at the top is said to be fashioned after W.H. Gaston. While those men are not buried at Pioneer Cemetery, (they are nearby at Greenwood Cemetery), they follow the same vein as those ten men previously mentioned. They are both also famous Dallas historical dignitaries.

I do not believe that there is enough to substantiate the monument being non-contributing nor is it newer than the period of significance. In 1962, it made sense to move the monument to Pioneer Park and it still does today. In 1997, when it was re-dedicated, no less than Dallas City Mayor Ron Kirk, an African-American, was present.

The **second** point I want to bring up is political in nature although I hope it actually ends up playing no part in the decision made by the Landmark Commission.

I realize that every commissioner was nominated by one of the City Council. However, I also understand that the Landmark Commission is a quasi-judicial functioning entity. Since the filing of the CD, no City Council member should have been contacting the Commissioner.

What this also means, is that no member of the Landmark Commission should do the bidding of the City Council, nor should any political aspiration of each's own come into play. As I mentioned, it is my fervent hope that I am concerned with this for no reason.

Lastly, this monument just like all the other hundreds throughout the country, was built as a Memorial. My own personal Confederate ancestors fought because they felt it was their obligation to do so. Their state went to war so they went to war. Is that any different today of men and women serving in today's military to protect their country? None of us were there in 1861 – 1865. None of us know exactly what their thought process was, but I, in my heart of hearts, cannot place blame nor fault on any one of them for joining the Confederacy. And for that, whether it be in Dallas, my home, or any other city/town which has a Confederate monument, I honor their memory as a perpetual memorial to their sacrifice.

The Landmark Commission is there for one thing and one thing only - To demonstrate outstanding interest in historic preservation and have knowledge and experience in the fields of history, art, architecture, or historic preservation.

The Certificate for Demolition and Removal does NOT fit the standard and therefore should be Denied (not Denied without Prejudice).

Sincerely,

Karen Ann Pieroni
2927 Renaissance Circle, Dallas TX 75287
214-502-2971
karen.pieroni@yahoo.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Eric and Ann Johnson [redacted]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 2:23 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: March 4th Landmark Commission vote

Dear Ms. Hill,

As I wrote to Mr. Doty, I am one of many in Texas who is very concerned about the recent underhanded move made by the Dallas City Manager, Mr. T.C. Broadnax, to further destroy Texas history that is not “politically correct” in today’s environment I would strongly urge the Dallas Landmark Commission to deny his request. This is nothing but another odious move on top of the previous disgraceful removal of the statue of R.E. Lee dating from FDR’s time. NO politician or city manager can erase history nor should they be allowed to rewrite it to suit their views alone. The history of Dallas (and other Texas cities like Houston) does not need “clarification.” Most folks are fed up with the daily garbage which emanates from people like Mr. Broadnax. There should be no further removal of Confederate statues in Dallas (or anywhere else for that matter) because they represent a significant part of Texas history! What is the next move by the Far Left and the goofy people among us? Will we see demands to remove the statues to Terry’s 8th Texas Cavalry Regiment and Hood’s Texas Brigade from the Capital lawn in Austin even though they represent two of the finest fighting forces ever seen on the North American continent regardless of which side they fought on? I certainly hope not! We are engaged in a similar battle here in Houston with regard to Confederate statues honoring those from Texas because some ignorant local people and cowardly politicians want to not only rewrite the past but to destroy it!

I would hope the Landmark Commission as well as a majority of the Dallas City Council put an end to these ludicrous attempts to expunge Texas history because those who favor the latter are a definite minority in Texas.

Sincerely,
Eric Johnson
1056 Augusta Dr.
Houston, TX 77057

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: julia.purtill@aol.com
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 1:50 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument controversy

Dear Madam:

We are watching the developments in your city and it has come to our attention that the public hearing and time to consider the certificate of demolition or removal of the Confederate statute in Dallas is being forfeited. This is unacceptable and is not a prudent action to be considered in regards to this historic landmark.

Therefore, it is requested that an appeal to deny the application of demolition or removal for this historic statue be issued immediately. To not do so would be to endanger historical property and deny the public's right to keep this statue safe and preserve it for future generations that may feel differently than the sentiments being pressurized on today's society. Please stand against this bullying tactic and keep our historical monuments safe.

Julia Purtill
Richmond, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: jack green, [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 11:03 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: heritage

Dear Councilman Hill,

I am dismayed to learn that you have decided to remove the Confederate memorial in Pioneer Cemetery. History and heritage is very important to the vast majority of Texans. This memorial recognizes veterans of BOTH sides of the War Between the States as Americans. Both of my ancestors who fought in that war were blessed to have returned from the battlefield. There were 620,000 who were not so fortunate and removing it is a slap in the face of the veterans who made the ultimate sacrifice, and their families.

It is not, allow me to repeat, NOT, a monument to slavery. It is rather, a monument to the memory of those who fought to preserve the GOD given right of men to govern themselves. Just as important as The Alamo is in Texans' memory. Shame on those who, out of ignorance and hate, seek to destroy our heritage.

Jack Green

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 10:05 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

May I ask why you are filled with so much Hate, that you want to remove our Historical Confederate markers? Markers and Monuments to those brave men that took up arms to fight against a Tyrannical government. We are the son's and daughters of those brave men. It is our Heritage you hate so much. The thing is how would you like it if we went to a cemetery where your family markers are and had them removed? After all that is basically what you are doing to us! My family fought for the great State of Alabama they protect their Confederate Monuments! I would think Texas would want to as well! Where will this Hate of our history stop? May as well remove the Alamo after all someone probably hates it or it's offensive to them.

I ask that you Please leave our Confederate Monuments where they are.

Deo Vindice!

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: James E. Embry [redacted]
Sent: Sunday, February 24, 2019 12:07 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition of Historical Monuments

For shame! The City of Dallas wants to destroy monuments in a cemetery. Please don't do that. The monuments should stand for all time. You're destroying our history. If you add some explanatory material, that's ok.

My great-great-grandfather died a POW in a Federal prison camp, Fort Delaware, where approximately 1/3 of the prisoners died from malnutrition, unhealthy living conditions, etc. This was U.S. government policy according to "North and South" magazine.

Sent from Mail for Windows 10

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Robert Brewster [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 9:01 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas history

Dear Council persons:

Please keep the historic Confederate landmarks erect. It's history. It's Texas. Respect what these people were considered - Veterans of the US.

Sincerely a Native Tejano with family who introduced the first Anglo families to Texas and who arrive to Texas in 1749 by way of Laredo with Escandon,

Eric Trevino, M.S.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kip Wright [mailto:kipwright@historical.org] [mailto:kipwright@historical.org]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:33 PM
To: Casso, Liz Ana
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Prior, Marsha; Parent, Melissa; Anderson, Jennifer; Casso, Liz Ana; Doty, Mark
Subject: Monument Destruction in Dallas

Dear Liz,

Long time, No See! Greetings from Puerto Rico PR! I'm working as an HP Specialist for a company with a FEMA contract . . . Doing Section 106 compliance on hurricane damage repair. I hope you and the preservation crew in Dallas are doing well!

As a historic preservation professional, I wanted to share with you my dismay and concern regarding the Confederate monument destruction going on in Dallas. It appears that the nationwide hysteria intent on removing historic resources related to the Confederacy has gripped Dallas? How sad.

Politics and history are continuously intertwined, but the righteous fervor with which the Removalists are destroying Confederate monuments reminds me of the frenzied religious reformers of 18th century England wrecking church icons. Or ISIS in Syria?

When will it stop?

Aren't the Removalists in violation of laws protecting veteran monuments?

Does the Dallas Landmarks law protect these historic resources?

I'm not a nut-job Neo-Confederate Southern-apologist, and I don't think slavery or Jim Crow is a good thing, but I do believe this movement is causing irreparable damage to American history and historic preservation. These monuments should be appropriately interpreted rather than removed. Otherwise, when will it stop? Should historic Southern plantations be demolished, too?

Recent removals have targeted monuments beyond the Confederacy. New targets include Pres. William McKinley and John Wayne.

As a historian, I could find "reason" to remove just about any monument we have in the U.S. today.

Thanks for listening — please let me know if I can do anything to help.

Sincerely yours,
Kip

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Michele Majewski michelemajewski@gmail.com
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:24 PM
To: Doty, Mark
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Civil War Memorial

Please do not destroy and remove the Civil War Memorial in Dallas! This is an important piece of history and has so much value just because of how old it is. It doesn't change history to remove it - this is a stupid decision.

Thank you,

Michele Majewski
Texas born and raised

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Niki Bohanon [mailto:niki.bohanon@gmail.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:19 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas Confederate War Memorial

Please stop the removal of this memorial! Removing it will not change history. Dallas is the city of my birth, but I am ashamed in what it has become as we are losing our history.

Niki Bohanon
863/699-3571

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: michelle miller [mailto:miller@valco.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 7:22 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Demolition and removal of Markers

I am appealing to you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition and or removal being submitted by Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax. I know some decisions aren't so easy to make. Some believe that if statues and monuments and markers are removed that it erases the history that caused them to be there in the first place. We know this isn't true. My family fought for the South and the Confederacy. My family didn't own slaves and I can prove that fact. But still two of my Great Great Uncles gave their lives in the battles. One died in a Union POW camp, and I had two Great Great Uncles who fought for the North and was Union, They too died in battle, one at the Battle of Franklin, again no one in my family had slaves We should never forget the sacrifices on both sides of that time in our country's history and taking down and destroying monuments, markers and just trying to erase history doesn't make what happened to my ancestors or any of those who died go away they all died for what they believed in. I also feel that racial relations between all colors and races are getting stronger in a positive way, I see this every day. Please deny the certificate and keep history where it is, where we can all see it and learn from it.

Michelle Davis-Miller

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jim Denison [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 6:39 PM
To: pat.fallon@senate.texas.gov; joan.huffman@senate.texas.gov;
dan.patrick@ltgov.texas.gov
Cc: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Texas SB226
Attachments: Dallas certificate for demolition and removal.jpg

Importance: High



Fences are up and demolition signs posted. This historic veterans' memorial located in a downtown Dallas cemetery will be destroyed by the city if the Landmark Commission approves the city mayor's certificate of demolition and removal filed February 21st.

The situation has now become a state of real emergency. The Landmark Commission is being forced to vote Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for a public hearing nor 65 days for the commission to consider the certificate.

Landmark Commission members to contact (and their addresses) to protest this outrage are:

Mark.Doty@dallascityhall.com
Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com

This despicable action by the Dallas mayor emphasizes the real and urgent need for measures to protect our State's historical monuments, particularly those honoring American veterans such as Sen. Pat Fallon's Senate Bill 226 — the Monument and Memorial Protection Act. Please ensure that Sen. Pat Fallon's SB226 receives a vote by the full senate asap.

Thank you,

Jim Denison
Houston, Texas

Fear not, for I am with thee. Say to the North give up, and to the South, keep not back. ~Isaiah 43:6-7
(Inscription on the spearhead of the flag of the 4th Texas Infantry Regiment, Army of Northern Virginia)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kevin Sullivan [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 6:01 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL

Please, I implore you to not allow the destruction or removal of the War between the States Monument at the coming meeting on Monday, March 4, 2019 of the Landmark Commission.

To destroy historical monuments in our nation is akin to the actions of the Taliban and ISIS in the middle east as they destroy the history of their perceived enemy's past in their attempts to erase the history in that part of the world. Surely, we are better than that.

We are not savages and we do not need to re-write/destroy the history of our Nation to satisfy those few who complain they're "in pain" because of the sight of such monuments.

Most of the monuments have been there over 100 years. Please do not make a mockery of the history our nation and allow this destruction. If it's gone, eventually there will be no memory of what happened in the past. To not study history and to wipe it clean to suit any current political climate is to deny the future populations of the knowledge of what took place 150+ years ago. IF we do not know our history as a nation, those who follow us are doomed to repeat the errors of the past.

Are we not better than the Taliban and ISIS? I fear those who would re-write our history to suit themselves will do irreparable harm to our nation and our history.

Thank you for considering my request to stay, to halt, the "execution" of this monument's destruction.

Respectfully,

Kevin Lee Sullivan
Citizen of the Great State of Texas

P.S.

Consider the following message from Jerry Patterson,

Dear Fellow Texans,

"In this enlightened age, there are few I believe, but what will acknowledge, that slavery as an institution is a moral and political evil in any country." Robert E. Lee 1856

Could General Lee's sentiments, expressed several years before the Civil War, deter the "tear down those monuments" crowd? Probably not.

Given their current success across the South in removing monuments to Confederate generals, clueless and historically ignorant politicians as well as those who make a career or at least a hobby of going through life seeking to be offended will soon run out of things to be offended by. Why not broaden the list of "offensive" symbols to include slave owners Washington and Jefferson and a host of other founders? Here in Texas you could add slave owning Texas heroes such as Houston, Bowie and Travis.

Which monuments, schools, streets or parks need removal or renaming? Maybe past historical figures who supported white supremacy, advocated secession, or made racist comments might be good candidates for banishment from public view. We could free up a lot of public space across the country because virtually all of our past and once revered historical figures would fall short to some degree.

Let's consider Abraham Lincoln. In addition to the massive Lincoln monument in the nation's capital, there's probably not a major city in the country without a school, street, or park named after Lincoln. What do Lincoln's own words tell us about "Honest Abe", "the Great Emancipator"?

During one of the famous 1858 debates with Senator Stephen Douglas, Lincoln explained to the crowd: "I am not, nor ever have been, in favor of bringing about in any way the social and political equality of the white and black races . . . I am not now nor have ever been in favor of making voters or jurors of Negroes, nor of qualifying them to hold office, nor to intermarry with white people; and I will say in addition to this that there is a physical difference between the white and black races which I believe will forever forbid the two races from living together on terms of social and political equality. And inasmuch as they cannot so live, while they do remain together there must be a position of superior and inferior, and I as much as any other man am in favor of having the superior position assigned to the white race."

Lincoln's prejudices weren't limited to blacks. During another debate with Douglas, Lincoln opined: "I understand that the people of Mexico are most decidedly a race of mongrels . . . there's not one person there out of eight who is pure white".

In Lincoln's 1861 inaugural address, he endorsed a constitutional amendment, commonly known as the Corwin Amendment which would forever protect slavery where it then existed, telling the audience: "I have no objection to its [Corwin Amendment] being made express and irrevocable". Lincoln's goal was to save the Union and he was quite willing to accept slavery, writing to abolitionist Horace Greeley: "If I could save the Union without freeing any slaves, I would do it".

Virtually all white men of that time were white supremacists. Lincoln was no exception, and his comments above belie his reputation.

Was Lincoln opposed to secession? Consider his remarks made on the floor of Congress on January 12, 1848: "Any people anywhere, being inclined and having the power, have the right to rise up and shake off the existing government, and form a new one which suits them better. Nor is this right confined to cases in which the whole people of an existing government may choose to exercise it. Any portion of such people that can, may revolutionize, and make their own of so much territory as they inhabit." This is exactly what the seceding states did in 1861.

One more discomfoting fact for today's advocates of political correctness: Buffalo soldiers were iconic black U.S. Cavalrymen who served on the frontier during the Indian wars. In 2011, I sponsored a commemorative Texas license plate for the Buffalo Soldier Museum. Couldn't today's Native Americans claim Buffalo soldiers were participants in a genocidal war against an entire race of people - the American Plains Indians - resulting in their enslavement on reservations?

If we're going to measure Confederates of 150 years ago by today's standards, shouldn't we do the same with Lincoln?

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 5:34 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Do not jump so quickly !!!

I am standing against another jump that is inappropriate for the city of Dallas. What happened 200 years ago needs to be rationally dealt with, not a removing of our history that needs to be evidenced to today's and tomorrow's citizen. This should be a ballot decision, not either of yours. I would appreciate a response.

Ann Quest
UnityQuest
Aquest@unityquest.org

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: praisemn [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 5:17 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War memorial

Do not bother the Confederate statue!

Sent from my MetroPCS 4G LTE Android Device

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gina Danna [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 5:08 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument status

Dear Ms. Hill -

It has come to my attention that the Confederate Monument in Dallas and its fate. This historical marker has been slated for removal or demolition and that Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has submitted the certificate for this without allowing a public hearing nor allowing the 65 day for the Landmark Commission to consider the fate of this. This is, I find, is appalling and with no regard to policy.

As a historian, an educator and interpreter, I find the removal and demolition of these monuments is detrimental to today's and the future's well-being. Our ancestors on both sides of this conflict, spent years raising money to erect these monuments to commemorate the loss those years of bloodshed brought to this country; of a war that brought this divided country together. We had fought and the result transformed this country into more than just a republic but showed the world that a democratic republic could face its own destruction and stay together, thriving and growing. Those who raised these honored what they had endured and elevated past. These people lost everything, on both sides, cried numerous tears and buried their dead as Americans.

These monuments are educational opportunities to teach today's youth, even society as a whole, what we can do and what challenges we have faced and conquered. To destroy them is not only hiding what happened in those years, but also takes away the honor of our ancestors. And frankly, I'm surprised to see Texas so disrespectful of our past.

What we do not learn of our past, we are doomed to repeat. Help us not go down that path, but find other solutions to this situation.

Thank you,

Gina Danna

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Theresa Bergeaux [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 4:47 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Certificate for Demolition and Removal of Historic Monuments

I was just made aware that a historic Veterans Memorial in a cemetery will be destroyed by the city of Dallas. This monument must remain in Pioneer Cemetery. It is very disturbing to me that Dallas is destroying history and pandering to the leftist ideologies. It is noble and necessary for a free people to preserve our history so we can understand who we are and how we should live.

These statues are also an outpouring of grief and remembrance for the hundreds of thousands who had died in the war. Nearly a quarter of Southern white men in their twenties were killed or died from disease. These memorials for our Confederate veterans help us to remember that generation.

The fact that these statues were erected in prominent public places is itself a powerful lesson in American history—a testament to our turbulent past that would be diminished if they were removed. Not every statue or piece of public art has to comfort and console us. Sometimes, they should oblige us to grapple with our nation's history and the vagaries of human nature.

It is a very bad trend when we have local authorities making democratic decisions about the disposition of public property. This property is not owned by these politicians, it is owned by the citizens for whom you are working for. Politicians have forgotten their place in society. You are supposed to be a servant of the people, not the other way around.

Where do we draw the line? Enough of this political correctness, which robs people of independence of thought. If we tear down statues of Lee, then activists would demand the removal of George Washington or Thomas Jefferson next. Politicians have now said the Jefferson Memorial should be abandoned. A pastor in Chicago asked the mayor to remove the names of Washington and Andrew Jackson from city parks because they owned slaves. A writer at Vice News called for Mount Rushmore to be blown up.

Leftists want the statues to go because they remind us constantly of a past that needs only to be overcome and forgotten. They want to rewrite history to suit their narrative. A more mature society would recognize that the

past is always with you and must always be kept in mind. There's a reason Christians in Rome didn't topple all the pagan statues and buildings in the city, or raze the Colosseum.

Tearing down Confederate statues, or any monuments from our history, will not change the past. But it will make for a poorer, less enlightened future.

Let them stand as a memorial of our ancestors who died, a challenge to understand their time and its troubles, and a warning for the present day.

Stop the madness,

Theresa Bergeaux

Texas Native and Resident for 52 years.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lou King <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 4:23 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Deciding

Please decide to KEEP our history ! It was a mistake to take away Robert E Lee !
Respectfully, Mrs. Robert King

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Mark Lynn [mailto:mlynn5997@gmail.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 4:10 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Cc: Mark Lynn
Subject: Save The Confederate War Memorial

Dear Madam and Sir,

I am writing to you to please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of this monument. This so-called "cultural cleansing" has got to stop. This is part of our history and my heritage. Please be a part of reason here. Stop this trend of removal. I guarantee it won't stop with just the Confederate monuments unless you take a stand. Thank you for your time.

Sincerely,
Mark Lynn

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jon Pinkston [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 3:55 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Cemetery

Concerning Pioneer Cemetery,

Why do y'all feel the need to destroy a landmark set by our ancestors? As the owner of a household, both in the City of Dallas & Dallas County, I'm personally insulted by you feeling the need to remove a family memorial confined within a cemetery grounds.

PLEASE vote AGAINST removing these family monuments as they're not racial in nature nor should they be.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kevin McCall [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 3:40 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: History

Dear Ms. Hill,

The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance necessary for preservation. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history. Not only that, the monument is a beautiful work of art that deserves the respect of current leaders for preservation.

These removal efforts are very divisive within the community. I implore you as a past resident of Dallas (graduate of Hillcrest High in 1979) to resist these efforts to rewrite our history and destroy our heritage. Are you aware that there are upwards of 75,000,000 descendants of Confederate Veterans across Texas and the USA. They (we) deserve our memorials. Our ancestors worked hard to raise funds to pay for these memorials. There is provenance back to an earlier citizenry of Big D. They were good people just as you are a good person or you wouldn't be involved civically. These memorials were not state sponsored or subsidized and the city of Dallas should be proud to display memorials such as this one that pays homage to those who came before us.

My confederate veteran ancestors who wore the grey were defending their land and property against the invasion of people from the north, whose mission was subjugation and empire. I submit that my people were the real defenders of freedom and the whole constitution of the United States of America.

What is happening across the southland these days has been tried before. This type of cultural genocide occurred in 1930's Germany and more recently in Iraq and Syria by members of ISIS. Do you want to be likened to these aggressive factions? Confederate is not a bad word. As I'm sure you know, Washington and Jefferson were southerners and proud of it. Will you be after their memorials next? I submit that your actions here open the door for that consideration. And I also submit that if the issue to remove this memorial were on a ballot, it would fail.

Sincerely,

Kevin McCall, Precinct Chairman, Smith County, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Thaddeus Hulsey <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 3:30 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: KEEP the monuments in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Case No. CD189-007(LC)

KEEP the Confederate monuments in Pioneer Park Cemetery! They were placed there by duly elected City Council members from a previous administration. Their removal will NOT change history. Even if you believe that they represent racism, their removal will NOT have any effect on racial feelings in the present day. In fact, EVERY BLACK PERSON should want them to remain, if only as a reminder of the trial that their distant ancestors may have overcome.

Thanks,
Terry Hulsey
1515 Postbridge Court
Arlington, TX 76012

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: laura marsh [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 2:59 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: IMMEDIATELY

Keep the History! Keep the Monument!

Thank You Laura Marsh

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Tonna Bouillion [tonnaibouillion@net...]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 2:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please leave our historical monuments standing. Leave them alone! You can't change history...you can only learn from it and do better with time. Stop letting political correctness ruin our republic!

Tonna Bouillion

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Peggy McClinton [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 2:39 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Veterans Memorial

Dear Mr. Doty and and Ms. Hill ,

Please reconsider the demolition of the Veterans Memorial in Dallas, Texas. The memorial should serve as a part of history that we need to remember so that we do not repeat it. The men , women and children who fought and died for their rights and beliefs should not be forgotten and removed from History like it did not happen.

From someone who has had ancestors who fought on both sides of this war and the ancestors was mixed heritage. My ancestors who fought for the South was African, Native American, and European descent. The removal and destruction of the The memorial stands for those who fought for the South. If it was a memorial for the Northern Aggressors it would not be on the block to be destroyed.

Why not instead of destroying the memorial that was paid for by the citizens in memory of their dead place another memorial of the Union side in the same park? Or maybe a Historical Memorial that outlines why the War was fought and the issues that was fought over. Along with Union Statues beside the Confederates.

Please reconsider and find a way to make the Statues and Memorial a learning experience about History instead of destructing them in order to forget or make believe it did not happen.

Thank You
Peggy McClinton

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Strfowens [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 2:22 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Case # CD188-007 (LC)

Dear Ms. Hill:

This is concerning the veterans' memorial in Pioneer Cemetery. It was erected to honor those who died and should not be tampered with. Its historical value is immense. The educational value for future generations is also at stake. "Those who fail to learn from history are condemned to repeat it. —Winston Churchill.

We are seeing way too many of our historical monuments be declared "politically incorrect" and demolished. I implore you to turn down the application for destruction and removal of this valuable historical monument!

Thank you for your kind consideration.

Sincerely,
Muriel D. Owens, D.C.
Alvin, TX

Sent from AOL Mobile Mail
Get the new AOL app: mail.mobile.aol.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 2:11 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

Dear Phyllis Hill

In respect to the Confederate monuments in Dallas I beg you to consider this, what kind of Americans would neglect to care for their war veterans or memorialize their war dead? Certainly not Texans! Please consider these words from the past...

"...every soldier's grave made during our unfortunate civil war [sic] is a tribute to American valor...." President McKinley ~ 1898

Ambrose Bierce, a distinguished hero of the UNION ARMY, said of a man who did not want to place flowers on Confederate graves . . .

The brave respect the brave.

The brave respect the dead;

But you - you draw that ancient blade, the ass's jaw,

And shake it o'er a hero's grave"

~Col. Columbus Upson 1900

*"... as to the vanquished or victorious, . . . [some] might wish invidious distinctions drawn between them; but that I will not do to mar the harmony of this occasion or cast a doubt of an earnest and heartfelt reconciliation between the peoples of **all sections** of our country as to the animosities and differences which existed before or were engendered by the war between the American States. This silent monument and others erected throughout the country in memory of the dead, speak higher and more lasting eulogy's than human tongue can utter."*

Jim W. Dean, editor of **Veterans Today** . . . ***"I point out that when they think it is cute to bash Confederate soldiers they are making fools of themselves and embarrassing the Vet community as they are actually bashing all veterans. And if they can do it...then why not Vet haters."***

In closing I will say that this generation has more than enough sins of its own to consider before it passes such harsh judgement on Texans who came before us and who lived in a much different time. I know not one person from North or South who agrees with the removing of Confederate monuments, just as every poll taken on the matter shows that the majority of those polled, of every race, want them left alone. Please listen to the voices of the majority of Texans instead of the loud voices of the few, and let us stop this un-American insanity!

Sincerely,
Alice Scott
10665 Shaenfield Rd.
San Antonio, Texas 78254

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Steve O [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:56 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historic Veterans Memorial in pioneer park cemetery should not be destroyed!

Mark Doty, Phyllis Hill, and please forward this to Katherine Seale, Chairperson, Dallas Landmark Commission, The historic Veterans Memorial in pioneer park cemetery should **not** be destroyed!

I believe pardon was given for most who participated in The Confederacy! The solders were forgiven and buried in national cemeteries. Are we going to dishonor our elected representatives of the past who pardoned them and moved for reconciliation. This is history, and those who do not remember history are bound to repeat it!

Thank you, be good, God bless you,

Steve Oettinger

265 Thorain Blvd.

San Antonio, Texas 78212

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Nancy Madson [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:56 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument

Please retain monument.
It's history.
Thank you.

[Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Michael Hurley [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please Spare Monument

Mrs Hill

As the descendant of 8 Confederate soldiers who answered the call of their respective states to offer their service in defense of their homes, reputation and family. I respectfully ask you to please spare the Confederate monument from destruction.

It takes great courage and leadership to stand for what is honorable in the midst of our politically correct society.

I pray you are that kind of leader

Respectfully,

W Michael Hurley
Tyler, TX

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); marc.doty@dallascityhall.com
Subject: Statue removal

All,
Please deny the application for the removal of the confederate statue.
We need to preserve history...,true history so all can learn of triumphs and mistakes.

The erasing or distortion of the past moves us closer to an Orwellian society which benefits no one

Thank you

Jim Pope

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: James Moore [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:40 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Statue removal

I am asking as a concerned citizen about the removal of statues from the cemetery in Dallas. These represent the history of the United States of America. Taking them down or destroying them does not and will not change our history. Instead of hiding the history why not teach our history to the youth so that we may prevent from repeating it in the future. These monuments have stood in place for years and now they have become a problem! It would appear that someone has an agenda to fulfill. I for one vote to keep our history intact so that we may learn from it.

Respectfully

James Moore
Concerned citizen
Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: attbrannum [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:32 PM
To: Doty, Mark
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Tell the city council stop destroying our History

Expires: Sunday, June 23, 2019 12:00 AM

I demand you stop destroying our History and turning our country into a Communist Nation. If you are not communist then quit acting like one.

One of their 45 planks for taking over a Nation is Destroy all History. Ed Brannum Texian American National

URGENT UPDATE ON THREATENED DALLAS MONUMENT

Fences are up and demolition signs posted. This historic Veterans Memorial in a cemetery will be destroyed by the city of Dallas if people do not stand up and let your voices be heard. Everyone needs to email and call:



Virus-free. www.avast.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Richard Mabry [mailto:rmabryes2@gmail.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:20 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: removal of confederate memorial

I used that confederate memorial in one of my books. I referred to it as a landmark, not as a symbol, and to remove that landmark is to deny a part of Dallas' history. Please reconsider removing it.

Thank you.

Richard Mabry

Richard L. Mabry, MD
Best-selling, award winning author of medical mysteries with heart
<http://rmabry.com>

"Some people hear voices when no one's around. They are called mad, and sit in a room all day and stare at the walls. Others are called writers, and they do pretty much the same thing." ~ Meg Chittenden

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Margaret Irby [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer park

Destroying the monuments to the past cannot change the past. It is a part of all of us. The monuments are not a remembrance of the way things were in that time but a remembrance of the people who we honor as our ancestors. Please do not vote to destroy our history

Sent from Yahoo Mail for iPad
Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Marcae Taurus [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 12:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: WAR MEMORIAL DEMOLISH/REMOVAL

Dear Dallas City Hall:

My name is Marcae Taurus, I am an American citizen, and reside in Laguna Hills, CA. In a recent feed on Facebook it describes another attempt at erasing American Culture by a scandalous move of City Manager T.C. Broadnax. Memorial Erasure seems epidemic and it needs to stop. Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of Confederate War Memorial that sits in a Downtown Cemetery. Actions engaged by T.C. Broadnax is forcing Landmark Commission to vote on this matter.

Get [Outlook for Android](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: j [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 12:52 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please save the monument in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Hello,

I'm emailing to ask you to please preserve the historic confederate monument in Pioneer Park cemetery. This is a beautiful piece of artwork and a tourist attraction.

Can you please forward this email to Ms. Katherine D. Seale as well?

Thank you very much,

J. Robinson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Laura McGee [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 12:46 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Land Marks

Leave the Land Marks alone!!

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Alice Swank [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 12:13 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument removal

Mrs. Hill

I am writing to implore you to stop the travesty of removing the Confederate Monument from Pioneer Cemetery. I am a life long resident of Dallas but I have never been more ashamed of this city than I am now. We learn from our history We Do Not Erase It. Please work with the Landmark Commission and keep the monument where it is. What Broadnax has done is a sneak attack and unworthy of this city.

A very concerned citizen

Alice Swank

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Charlotte Forst [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 11:41 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Save the Alamo

Save the War Memorial that sits in a downtown Dallas cemetery from demolition

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Cathy Lester [mailto:cl@tcom.net]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 11:34 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Dear Ms Hill.

I respectfully urge you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the War Memorial in downtown Dallas. Erasing history does not make it go away! If we do not learn from history - chances are that we will repeat the same mistakes.

Thank you for your consideration of my request.

Cathy Lester
19701 North County Road 21
Ackerly, Texas 79713

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Doc Van [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 11:20 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of memorial from cemetery

Are you aware that the removal of the memorial will be removing a memorial dedicated to United States Veterans?

All civil War veterans are considered BY LAW granted by the U.S. Government to be U.S. veterans - both sides, not just northern. The Confederates were also given a pension by the U.S. government as well as veteran status so to destroy the memorial is to disgrace both the dead as well as the U.S. GOVERNMENT and it's promise to those veterans..... PLEASE read your REAL HISTORY before you listen to the squeaking mouse....

Be Historically Correct, not politically.
Texas above all should know it's history,

Paul Van Eekhoven

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Cheryl Leverett [mailto:cheryl@wade.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 10:58 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Destroying monuments

Dear Ms Hill,

It has been brought to our attention that the rampant virus of destroying history has now infected Dallas. Please discourage this onslaught of disgrace and remind Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax that not all Texans want to forget history. It is reprehensible to native Texans to make Texas into California, or anything other than Texas.

We vehemently object to destroying historical monuments in the name of political correctness. If anything should be destroyed, it should be the hate that envelops some hearts toward our ancestors. Much blood was shed to preserve the uniqueness of Texas and of America. Please respect that sacrifice.

Sincerely,
Cheryl & Wade Leverett

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: CH Ranches [redacted]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 10:15 AM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate ancestors statue

Please leave our stature standing. It's our history and should not be erased.
Best regards,
Carolyn Houston

Sent from my Verizon, Samsung Galaxy smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Frank Polk [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 9:35 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Application for Demolition/Removal for the War Memorial

I request that you do not approve the Application for Demolition/Removal for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery

Sincerely
Captain Frank Polk

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lucia Hilderbrand [mailto:lhilderbrand@gmail.com] >
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 9:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas monument

Dear madam,

As a 5th generation Texan, I am requesting a reprieve for the Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park. I am not a citizen of Dallas but grew up in nearby Greenville, went to SMU and have spent many years in Dallas.

The destruction of history is favorable to no one. We lose our focus on what's right and wrong and as the adage goes, are doomed to repeat it.

There were Confederate soldiers on both sides of my family. They fought, not for slavery - they had no slaves. They were fighting for states rights. I am proud to have a legacy of standing up for what we believe. (I also have ancestors who fought in the Revolutionary War. My direct ancestor was a part of the "tea episode " in Boston harbor. He is my Confederate ancestor's grandfather.)

Please reconsider your role in the destruction of history. If you are a Texan of many generations you may have an ancestor who fought for the Confederacy and thought he was doing the right thing. Remember these men, and their families who sacrificed so much.

Respectfully,
Lucia McKinney Hilderbrand

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: John Hawkins [mailto:john.hawkins@mci.com] >
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:44 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Katherine Seale, Chair of the Landmark Commission,

I read in the Dallas morning news where the ultimate responsibility for the removal or that the Confederate War Memorial stay in Pioneer Cemetery is up to the Landmark Commission now.

The facts that support the monument staying are very clear to me. The state of Texas did succeed from the Union and was part of the Confederate States of America. This is part of our Texas history and should not be destroyed to satisfy a few discontents. When these monuments were built they simply were done to honor the great sacrifice paid by over 600,000 citizens who died of which many were from Texas. Where does this stop?

The theme park Six Flags is called this based on the fact that six flags including the Confederate Flag flew over the capitol building in Austin at one time or another. It is history. Should they need to change to Five Flags. Where does it stop. ?

Please vote to keep our Texas history in tact and preserve all our monuments.

Respectfully,
John Hawkins
MCI Performance Group
214-403-8004

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carol Sue Boll [mailto:csboll@att.net]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:40 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: History

Why are we doing away with all out History?

This is what happen in Germany.

What has happen to a free United States of America.

Please think about this.

Look what happen in Germany, one way of life many people paid a price.

Thank you for a higher level of knowledge.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: BJ Hawkins [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 8:16 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: CONFEDERATE MONUMENT - PIONEER CEMETERY

Katherine Seale, Chair of the Landmark Commission,

I read in the Dallas morning news where the ultimate responsibility for the removal or that the Confederate War Memorial stay in Pioneer Cemetery is up to the Landmark Commission now.

The facts that seem to support the monument staying are very clear to me. The state of Texas did succeed from the Union and was part of the Confederate States of America. This is part of our Texas history and should not be destroyed to satisfy a few discontents.

I am a seventh generation Texan and proud of my ancestors who served in the Confederacy.

Please vote to keep our Texas history in tact and preserve all our monuments.

Thank you, Barbara Jean Hawkins

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Janebuckman [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 7:55 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition/application removal

Please stop the demolition application for the removal of these monuments. Let's not erase history whether the past is good or bad it is the history of America. Thank you Jane Buckman

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Janelda Kay Cook [mailto:janeldakay@gmail.com]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 7:39 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historic monument

Please vote to save the historic monument in Dallas. It should not be destroyed or moved. We should not try to erase history but should learn from it. Otherwise we may be doomed to live in ignorance.

Thank you,
Janelda Cook

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Anna Shepeard [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 7:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of War Memorial

Ms Hill,

Please vote not to demolish or remove this work of art in Pioneer Cemetery. This was created by a well known artist and should be left as a memorial. If you council and mayor looked at the cost and the voters knew the true figures they would be outraged that money was spent to destroy art rather then repair their streets and infrastructural needs. Please do all you can to stop this movement.

Sincerely,

Anna Shepeard

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bobby R. Smith [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 7:30 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument in Dallas

There is an 1958 law which does not allow this. These are war heroes Same as Vet's plaque in DC.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Caroline Crimm [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 5:42 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Civil War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am a retired History Professor Emeritus from Sam Houston State University. After over 30 years of teaching history, I am opposed to the removal of Civil War Memorials on the grounds that they are part of our history. Removing the statues does not remove the stain of slavery. Respecting the statues does not indicate support for Skin heads or White Supremacists. The people those statues honor did die for their beliefs, and they should be respected.

Slavery is certainly an embarrassing part of our history. Perhaps what we should be doing instead is issuing an apology to the descendants of those slaves as the South African government did for Apartheid.

We will never be done removing statues for every wrong that whites did to the Native Americans for every broken treaty and land theft, to the Mexicans when they stole the entire Western United States, to all our immigrants from the earliest racism and mistreatment in the ghettos of our cities, to the Chinese for their mistreatment during the building of the railroads, to the Japanese for their internment during World War II. We have a problematic history, as all cultures do, but removing statues is not the answer. Education is.

Sincerely,
Carolina Castillo Crimm, Ph.D.
Professor Emeritus, Sam Houston State University

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sue Aills [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 5:28 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of Historical Monuments

Councilwoman Hill:

I have contacted Mayor Mike Rawlings asking him to bring this issue before the Council. As the old saying goes to the victor goes the spoils. We as students in the lower levels of education were not taught that the war between the North and South was never over slavery but because of massive tariffs being charged to the South for industrialize goods. To continue decimate historical statues and monuments our children or their children will never be inspired to learn or appreciate our countries history.

Respectively
Sue Aills
sueaills@icloud.com

Sent from my iPhone
Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Janet Holmes [mailto:janet.holmes@att.net]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 1:12 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

Ms Phillis Hill,

Ancestors on all four sides of my family served during the Confederate Civil War. They may not have been privy to much information about the war. but they left their homes to serve. They were not people of means, but they knew what a hard days work was and loved their families according to my only living grandmother who passed down some information about her family. Memorials were given by surviving family to remember those who served and sacrificed. There was no malice in their actions, just to remember.

Confederate Civil War Monuments need to stay to remind us of those who served and suffered for a War that was part of their time and not ours.

Mrs. Janet Holmes
Mississippi

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Raymond Settle [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:29 PM
To: dan.patrick@ltgov.texas.gov; pat.fallon@senate.texas.gov; Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

The wise treasure history for the lessons it contains. Only the ignorant destroy or hide history and the symbols that cause us to remember it. Want some examples – dictators, communists, Islamic terrorists and other despised of our human history. Is that what you want to be remembered for – intellectuals who are too dumb to recognize the value of the monuments until after they are gone?

I propose there is room for any group to memorialize their history without having to remove or destroy the symbols of another group. Government creates animosity and discord when it takes sides in these issues when it should be providing equal protection under the law for all. You are actually showing yourself to be racists and bigots by becoming accomplice to the demands of one group against another. Use a little wisdom and abandon this destructive mission before you join the ranks of the despised I listed above.

Raymond Settle
Blue Mountain, MS

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Newell Rambo [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery



Ms. Katherine D. Seale
Chair of the Dallas Landmark Commission
(District 15 - Rawlings) Reappointed: 09/13/17

Mrs. Seale,

I am contacting you as one Texan to another regarding the Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery. On or before March 4th, The Office of Cultural Affairs on behalf of the City will submit a "Certificate of Demolition or Removal" - Case No.: [CD187-007\(LC\)](#) for the Dallas Landmark Commission review on April 1, 2019.

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

The monument was dedicated on June 25, 1896, and believed to be the city's oldest public sculptures designed by Frank Teich, an American sculptor from San Antonio; stone carver and businessman often referred to as the father of the Texas granite industry. The "Cenotaph" pays homage to the cavalry, infantry, and naval forces Sons from the Dallas area whose remains are elsewhere. One inscription says, "This stone shall crumble into dust ere the deathless devotion of Southern women be forgotten." The Confederate Memorial "Cenotaph" was moved to the Pioneer Park Cemetery in 1962 from Old City Park to Pioneer Cemetery due to the city creating the R. L. Thornton Freeway.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. As you know the duty of the landmark commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city and to protect, enhance and perpetuate such places and areas which represent distinctive and important elements of the city's historical, cultural, social, economic, archaeological, paleontological, ethnic, political and architectural history as stated in SEC. 51A-4.501 (1). Your responsibility is to save our local Texas history not destroy it. I am a fourth generation Texas and had three great uncles who served, please don't let the Dallas Landmark Commission dishonor their and other men and women's memory from the local area who fought for Texas during those trying times.
Regards,

***NEWELL V. RAMBO, AIA/RID
RAMBO ARCHITECT
14415 TIERRA GRANDE DRIVE
NEEDVILLE, TEXAS 77461
(979) 793-7100***



Sender notified by
[Mailtrack](#) ---

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gary Swain [mailto:gs@scv.com] [mailto:gs@scv.com]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:30 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument removal

Dear Mrs Hill I hope you consider the actions your city is about to take. It will not change history. Texas has a long and honorable history of brave and courageous people making hard decisions. As a member of the Louisiana SCV I can say that taking down monuments, (especially in cemeteries) does not make friends of people that vote! Ask mayor of New Orleans these monuments where erected to honor brave men that stood up for what they believed in! Please reconsider these actions at the very least give the people with the most to lose, have a voice. Thank you Mrs. Hill for hearing me out

GARY L SWAIN

LA DIVISION SONS OF CONFEDERATE VETERANS Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Renee Sullivan [mailto:renee.sullivan@gmail.com]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:05 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Beautiful monumnet in Pioneer Cemetery

Hello! I have had the pleasure of visiting Dallas twice and will soon be visiting again. While there, I enjoyed touring the city and seeing several historical sites, although I didn't have time to see all that I wanted due to work demands since I was there on business trips. I understand that the Landmark Commission is planning to remove the beautiful Confederate monument from the Pioneer Cemetery. I am urging you not to do that and am really confused as to why anyone would want to remove a monument dedicated to the memory of soldiers who gave their lives to protect their homes, families, and the land that they loved, especially when it is in a cemetery dedicated in their memory. This particular monument is a beautiful and extraordinary work of art that I hope is still in place when I am able to return to Dallas so I can see it in person.

I understand that some people do not understand the meaning of these beautiful works of art and perhaps neither do some of the members on your committee so I encourage them to do as I have been doing and read some diaries, journals, and letters from soldiers, officers, and the families of those who served in the War Between the States and I bet you will gain a new perspective that will probably differ from what you may have been told that might even cause you to think about the monuments in a more positive manner. For instance, did you know that there were Confederate soliders of various ethnicities to include African Americans like Bill Yopp (Co. H, 14 GA Inf, Drummer), Jerry May (7th GA Reg), Turner Hall, Jr. (Robert E. Lee's Orderly) or Pvt. Holt Collier? How about Hispanic Confederates such as Sgt. John W. Cordero who enlisted as a Private in Co. C, 1st Reg. SC Volunteers but was quickly promoted to 2nd Sgt before being wounded at Fredericksburg? There were also Irish, French, Jewish, English, Indian, Italian, and Scottish Confederate soldiers as well. I even found some journal pages written by a female ancestor in local courthouse records where she described in detail the horrible conditions that she and her children endured just before Northern soldiers ran them out of their home, took from their belongings what they wanted for themselves and then torched the rest while the woman and her children were forced to stand and watch. There were other details described that involved how the soldiers treated the young girls and women but I will spare those for now. This family was left to seek whatever shelter and food they could find. The mother had thought ahead and buried some fresh vegetables that she had canned but had she not done that, she and her children would not have had anything to eat because just as the soldiers burned their home, they did the same to other families in town, including businesses and even the courthouse.

War is never a "good" thing and history is not always full of pleasant memories but that does not give us any right to attempt to "destroy" the parts that we don't agree with by "hiding" monuments, flags, and other artifacts, and most certainly but not teaching our young about the events of the past. If we do this, then how will they know the truth and not simply rely on whatever they are told and I think we all know how much trouble "fake news" has caused our society in this generation.

Please reconsider your decision and leave the monuments in the cemetery. I would like to close by sharing with you a letter written by a Confederate Veteran that was sharing but his grandson in a NC newspaper::

Thank you and God Bless Texas!

Confederate soldier's letter shows feelings

Having read the "apology" from a Confederate soldier (Daily Progress letter to the editor, Nov. 25), I would like to offer thoughts from another Confederate soldier.

I am 82 years of age. My grandfather served the Confederacy under North Carolina Gen. J. Johnston Pettigrew. He died at the Battle of Gettysburg. I will allow his thoughts, written to my grandmother just a couple of weeks prior to that battle, to speak for themselves.

"My lovely wife. I do so miss you, and the life we have there on the small plot of land God has given us. More and more, it seems that my thoughts are drifting back there to reside with you. Yet, as badly as I desire to be back home, it is for home for which I deem it best for my presence here with these other men. The proclamation by the Lincoln administration six months prior may appear noble. Were I here in

these conditions, simply to keep another man in bondage, I would most certainly walk away into the night and return unto you. God knows my heart, and the hearts of others here amongst me. We know what is at stake here, and the true reason for this contest that requires the spilling of the blood of fellow citizens. Our collective fear is nearly universal. This war, if it is lost, will see ripples carry forward for five, six, seven or more generations. I scruple not to believe, as do the others, that the very nature of this country will be forever dispirited. That one day, our great great grandchildren will be bridled with a federal bit, that will deem how and if they may apply the gospel of Christ to themselves, their families and their communities. Whether or not the land of their forefathers may be deceitfully taken from them through taxation and coercion. A day where only the interests of the northern wealthy will be shouldered by the broken and destitute bodies of the southern poor. This my darling wife, is what keeps me here in this arena of destruction and death."

Jefferson Smith

Charlottesville

Renee L. Sullivan
153 Marcar Road
Macon, GA 31216
(478) 718-1306
renee.l.sullivan@gmail.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Rebecka [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:48 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Please read!! Important

I appeal for you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the Pioneer Park monument!

1. Its a piece of art
2. Its historical
3. Its in a cemetery that was there before downtown built up around it
4. Its a memorial to veterans
5. We cannot erase Americas history and where we came from, it's part of us
6. Take a poll. Most people want it to be left alone
7. Visitors come from around the USA to see it.
8. Do the right thing :(it's over 100 years old. Once it's gone, that's it. Theres no getting it back. Who are we this many decades later to be the one who decides to erase this? I wouldnt want to be a part of that decision.
9. There is no rush on this matter. Why not take a vote with the next council members to see where they stand?
10. Save Dallas' residents tax dollars by leaving it alone. They would rather the money be spend on something else!
11. It's not a hate or racist statue. It memorializes all the men in the war that did not make it home to be buried. Most were left where they fell to rot or be eaten by animals. So sad that brave young men were slaughtered. Did you know that around 12,000 men died within 15 min in battle several times during the war? Can you imagine??? What harsh times.
12. This decision is being driven on emotion and haste, not the true facts on what this stands for and asking the public for their opinion
13. Why demolish it?? Move it instead

Please take this to heart! I had ancestors that fought proudly for Texas during this war! I bet you would be surprised how many people on the council and maybe even your cells have ancestors that fought for the south. It's nothing to be ashamed of. It was just a different time, a different way, and it's what built The United States and made it what it is today.

Thank you-

Rebecka Jackson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Stephen McNallen [mailto:stephenmcnallen@yahoo.com]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:40 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Request to speak before the Landmark Commission meeting, 1 PM, March 4, 2019

Dear Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty,

I respectfully request to speak before the Landmark Commission in its meeting scheduled for 1 PM, March 4, 2019.

Sincerely,
Stephen McNallen

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Larry Hill [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:28 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Memorials to our Veterans

Landmark Commission Members,

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, ours and your children's future! If you allow them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting Soldiers Monuments, as enacted by the Federal Govt. Save our precious History for future generations to learn from.

Thank you,

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: z.regan [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:13 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas memorial

Dear representative,

It is imperative that we protect our history, all history, my history. This monument is in a cemetery. The precedent this will set is unamerican and denies many their right to honor their fallen. Many of us are descended from Confederate soldiers. There is nothing wrong with monuments to these boys who fought for what they believed. Please do whatever is in your power to protect my heritage. Thank you.

Respectfully,
Zach Regan

Sent via the Samsung Galaxy S7, an AT&T 4G LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sherry Thomason <Momnkatemcy7@yahoo.com>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:14 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Demolition order

What is accomplished by destroying our history? You continue to remove our history under the guise of a generations feelings being hurt that never experienced any of the pain personally that they express. What about our feelings and memories. I ask that you stop the demolition and protect my rights as well.

Sharon Thomason
Momnkatemcy7@yahoo.com
(Cell) 903-217-4235

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Glenda Black [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:06 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: You need to deny the permit for removal of historic monuments!

Sent from my iPad
Please vote to not destroy our history! Glenda ?Black

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Mark Holley [mailto:markholley@texas.com]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:59 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: The Monument - please save it

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal. This monument is beautiful...it is old and enriches your history. We must cling to our historical roots in America and in Texas in order to ensure we remain connected to what made us great in the beginning.

We must protect our inter-generational cultural timeline and monuments are a key to that cause.

I promise you that removal of this landmark will only diminish the city and its value.

Sincerely,
Mark Holley

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:57 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate monuments

Dear Madam and Sir,

I ask that you please deny the application for the Certificate of Demolition or Removal of the Confederate monument that resides in Pioneer Park Cemetery. There are over two dozen Confederate soldiers buried in the cemetery, as well as numbers of other war veterans, and the monument is a fitting memorial to those Confederates who died for their state, homes, and families.

Works of art that memorialize fallen soldiers and sailors should be preserved and protected. Confederate memorial statues and markers have been a part of the Southern landscape for decades. Memorial monuments located in both the South and the North since the War Between the States were erected by grieving communities, widows, and children to honor their farmers or fishermen, rich or poor, who became military men (some reluctantly) who fought and died defending their families and homes. The memorials are not symbols of hatred and bigotry, but of love and honor, and those who want them preserved and protected are not racists.

I oppose efforts to move, remove, or alter any monuments memorializing Confederate soldiers, sailors, and patriots, or their families, and I am shocked and saddened by the destruction of monuments, e.g., in Durham, in Chapel Hill, in Dallas, New Orleans, etc., etc. The list continues to grow. Our veterans' memorials are in danger of disappearing altogether. Those responsible for their protection definitely are not doing their required jobs. Please do not remove your Confederate monument again or destroy it.

Thank you.
Norma Longo
Concerned Citizen

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Roselane Magee Polnick [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:36 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historical Monuments

Dear Phyllis Hill

I am very distressed that you would even consider removing these historical monuments!
What would taking these monuments prove? It is history and it was my ancestors that fought in that war.

The war was over more than 150 years ago! Why are you allowing this action to be taken NOW? These men were declared United States Veterans.

Please reconsider your actions!

Sincerely,

Roselane Magee Polnick

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Edward Campbell [REDACTED] >
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:58 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please deny application

Dear Mrs. Hill:

As a concerned citizen, I am writing to urge you to deny the application submitted by City Manager Broadnax in reference to the proposed demolition/removal of the Confederate Memorial Monument. Those who do not remember History are condemned to repeat it. As a History teacher, I know that slavery was not the only issue involved in causing the American Civil War. Economic issues of high tariffs the issue of States Rights, which is still being debated today, played a huge role in the cause of the War. Most Confederate soldiers never owned slaves and fought to defend their states from invasion by a foreign power. The tactic of taking down and destroying Historical monuments has long been done by people such as Adolph Hitler and Joseph Stalin and today by the Taliban. I urge the city of Dallas to seriously reconsider its recent moves to change street names and remove statues. Our History is important to us as Americans and as you can see in the news, those who wish to take down or destroy monuments will not stop at Confederate monuments as a World War II monument has just recently been vandalized by anti-History forces. You have a beautiful city with a rich History. Please keep it that way.

Thank you for your consideration of this matter,

Edward Campbell
Vicksburg, Mississippi

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gary Counihan [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:44 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Landmark demolition

NO landmarks should be demolished. We need an ordinance to PROHIBIT destruction with severe penalties. Rewriting history is what happens in communism and dictatorships.
Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: John Ross Bryan [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:34 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historic Veterans Memorial

Dear Sir and Madame,

As a native of the great City of Dallas and a 5th generation Texan, I am disheartened by your city council's decision to demolish the Veterans Memorial and the removal of the statue of Gen. Robert E Lee.

I understand some people in today's society cannot tolerate Confederate memorials, but these memorials were not erected at the whim of the people of a bygone society, but those people sacrificed and saved to fund these memorials to their fathers, sons, uncles, and brothers because there was no national effort to do so.

Will future societies demolish memorials to Vietnam War or WWII veterans because they disagree with the politics of the war that sucked those veterans into it? I should hope not, and I would fight to ensure that never happens.

I ask you to reconsider your plans to move forward in removing these monuments in the city we both love. The men these monuments were erected in memory of are as much a part of Texas, and Dallas, as you and I. Their memory deserves to be preserved.

With regards,

John R. Bryan Heritage Operations Chair, Arkansas Division, Sons of Confederate Veterans Camp Commander, "Col. Allen Rufus Witt Camp 615," Sons of Confederate Veterans

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dusty Kobs [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:24 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Park Cemetery

Please deny the application for certificate of demolition / removal of the Confederate memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. This beautiful war memorial and work of art should be preserved for posterity. Thank you for your time and consideration.

Ernest "Dusty" Kobs

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: (null) (null) [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:13 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Save the War Memorial

Please save the War Memorial. This is our history. Our families fought and gave their lives for our future. Shouldn't we honor them?

Thank you.

Christi Blackwell

Lubbock, Tx

DRT Member

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ryan Crain [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Pioneer Park Monument

Please do not allow self serving politicians and politically correct historians to erase our history and destroy the beautiful monument in the cemetery at Pioneer Park. Please don't allow our unique history to be scrapped for cheap political points.

[Sent from Yahoo Mail for iPhone](#)

1/2

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dick Bonds [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:38 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial

Ms. Hill,

I sincerely urge you to do all in your power to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the Confederate Memorial in Dallas.

These memorials were paid for from the efforts of the widows and descendants of our fallen ancestors, most of whom never owned a slave, to honor their valor in defending their homes.

Thank you.

Sincerely

R.H. Bonds

Anderson Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Don Midkiff [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:33 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments.

Please dont remove our Historical Memorials. Many thousands of Texans answered the call to fight . Many never came home including one of my kin. Slavery had nothing to do with our people who answered Texas request for its army.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carlos Serna [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:51 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Do not demolish or remove the War Memorial that sits in the downtown cemetery

The tax payers and voters do not want you to demolish or remove the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery

Do not demolish or remove the War Memorial that sits in the downtown cemetery

Represent the people and not special interests.

Respectfully,

Carlos Serna

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Durhl Caussey [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:46 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: wrong

Ms. Hill, I always get suspicious when folks try to rush things. Back in the summer, when I spoke to the Dallas Mayor about removing any statues, he assured me he had turned the matter over for study to the historical committee. And would act on their recommendations. When I contacted them, they indicated they were opposed to removing any statues. Then the Mayor told me it was going to a Cultural Affairs Committee. (Hank Tatum was on the committee) Thinking these were mostly liberals. But they appreciated art more than focusing on slavery over 150 years ago and were against removing any statues. Finally, at a Press Club meeting the Mayor suggested a vote of the people. Polls indicated removal would be voted down. So in the dark of night the statue of Lee was removed. At the expense of a life and half-million dollars. And now there are others statues about to be removed quickly without any thought of the majority of Dallas citizens' opinion. Just think of all the babies in south Dallas that could have been fed or educated with the thousands of dollar used to remove statues of some old dead men that no one remembers or cares about. You will get your way I am sure. But the scars you leave will be everlasting. The majority of folks disagree with what you are about to do. Why want you listen to the whole community rather than the voices of some black ministers that lost the battle against helping their own communities, so they pick on statues that no one know little or nothing about their

historical significance. You may Win the War of the Statues, but lose the Battle of Civility. Thank you Durhl Causey 7912 Autumn View Circle Dallas, Texas



Virus-free. www.avast.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Mark Brown [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:17 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Deny the certificate of demolition and removal

Please follow the will of the majority of Dallas citizens and DENY the Certificate of Demolition and Removal of the Historic Dallas Civil War Memorial, which honors so many of our founding city fathers and citizens who defended our State. Please dont buy into the false narrative that these men fought for slavery.

Sincerely,
Mark Brown
Richardson, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:15 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument

Please reconsider your decision of removal.

Joshua Stover

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Joe Luna jr. [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:15 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Upset Veteran

I CAN NOT believe you guys are going to destroy a monument for Veterans. It doesn't matter if it's Union or Confederate. Confederate soldiers are recognized as Veterans if you didn't know. Plus you're going to destroy a monument in a cemetery.....IN A CEMETERY???? What the hell is wrong with you people. Do you have no respect? As a US Army Veteran who went to combat in Afghanistan I'm so mad right now. I can't believe I woke up this morning and saw this. You should be ashamed of yourself. I'm notifying everybody I know, the VFW and the VA. I think I might just drive up from San Antonio. I'd like to hear your reason why you're going to desecrate the dead? I'll be leaving my contact information below and I expect an answer.

Joe Luna Jr.
US Army Veteran OEF
joelunajr@yahoo.com
(210)833-0961

[Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:11 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Cemetary Monuments

Dear Ms Hill;

I understand Confederate Monuments are to be removed from the Pioneer Cemetery. I would ask that you reconsider this decision. Removing monuments does not change history. We as Americans should always embrace our history and use that history of a reminder of mistakes we've made in the past. No nation is perfect and trying to hide imperfections by removing monuments is absolutely wrong. It serves no purpose. What is proposed is no different than what ISIS has done in the Middle East. Are we as a society going to revert to third world actions? I pray we have not declined that far.

Sincerely,

H. T. Pettigrew

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:05 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, ours and your children's future! If you allow them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting Soldiers Monuments, as enacted by the Federal Govt. Save our precious History for future generations to learn from.

Thank you,
Al Stidham

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Caroline Ratliff [mailto:caroline.ratliff@valpo.edu]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:56 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Statue Removal

I am insulted that you would even consider removing a historical statue.

Caroline Ratliff

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:44 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty:

I am voicing my concern on the Certificate of Demolition or removal of the Dallas War Memorial by Mr. T.C. Broadnax, Dallas City Mgr.

I am requesting for each of you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removed.

Thank you for your time and attention in this regard.

Sincerely – Lola Hurt

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Patricia [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:26 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: DENY THE APPLICATION FOR THE CERTIFICATE OF DEMOLITION!

Dear Ms. Hill:

You must **DENY THE APPLICATION** for the certificate of demolition for the beautiful and historic Dallas Confederate Monument, which has stood there for DECADES!

P. Terry

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ellen McWhorter [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:31 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Parent, Melissa; Prior, Marsha; Anderson, Jennifer; Casso, Liz Ana; Doty, Mark
Subject: Memorial

Dear Landmark Commission Members,

Please DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery! Please execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

We must protect our future by protecting history, heritage and community. If you allow them to demolish this memorial, which one will be next?

Destroying this memorial will be committing a Federal Offense.

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

Please obey laws pertaining to protecting veterans memorials and war memorials as enacted by the federal authorities. Preserve our history for future generations.

Thank you,

ME McWhorter

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: CONNIE TAYLOR [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:20 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition and Removal of Monuments

Please stop the destruction of ALL monuments, markers and historical things of interest. It breaks my heart to see these historical things destroyed. I am a 5th generation Texan and I can't believe that some of the people that are citizens of this great state would take steps to do away with historical items. I have seen the destruction of Vietnam Veteran's monuments and even read about Revolutionary War soldiers grave being destroyed. Is there no end to this madness? Someone must stop this destruction. Please let it end with you.

Thank you,

Connie Mize

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jeraldine Wooldridge [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:16 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument in Pioneer park

Dear Ms. Hill,

I appeal to you and beg you to take any action and authority that you have to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/ removal of the monument. I feel that the majority of the public would like the monument to stay. Please do not allow just a few to make a political statement by destroying a beautiful monument.

Additionally, not another dollar of the taxpayers money should be spent in destroying or removing monuments which have been accepted as beautiful art during the past decades. I would like the money to go to police and fire departments for our safety instead of being wasted by a group of racial political discontents.

Thank you for your help in this matter,
Jeraldine Wooldridge
214-773-9212

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: C & T Brown [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:45 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments

My great- great grandfather died in the Civil War. He was a small farmer from Mississippi, did not own slaves, and left his wife with young twins among their other children to raise (including my grandmother's father). He never fought in a battle, but died of a camp disease, maybe measles, shortly after entering the war.

He entered the war because he was from Mississippi, and Mississippi joined the Confederacy. It was that uncomplicated. He did not join to make any social statement but paid the ultimate price. So did his wife and children. I consider him a Confederate hero because he left his family to defend Mississippi. I refuse to feel shame for him or his brief service. Nor will I apologize to anyone because of his service. He did what he thought was the right thing to do with his limited knowledge about the war.

I am also a retired history teacher. I taught seventh and eighth grade history. I always told my student that as a country we made our share of mistakes, but so did other countries, and we were still the best place in the world to live. We also learn from our mistakes, and many of them were made in the context of the times. It is a mistake to judge our history based on our lives today.

Attempting to change our history is also a mistake, and a "Hitler" thing. You can't put a modern twist on things that happen decade or centuries ago. Tearing down these monuments to our past, good or bad, is a slippery slope. Learn from our mistakes and MOVE ON!

When it comes to slavery, it is possible there are more slaves in the world today, than two hundred years ago! Sex slavery is a thriving industry. We need to focus on the problems of the world today and do what we can during our lifetime to make a positive difference. Too many make their livelihood on problems of the past that cannot be solved in modern times. Lets "fix" today's problems and leave the past where it belongs, in the past!! Thanks, Cathey Brown

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: steve hartsfield [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:44 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Re: Heritage

Dear Phyllis

I am a concerned Native Texan regarding our historical values my family fought and died for during the civil war. My Great Great Grandfather, James Henry Hartsfield, fought for his beliefs and family. What gives now. Most protesters I am sure have nothing to do with our history. Why tear it down? This isn't the Berlin Wall or Russia. America where we as Americans can live free. My family fought for those that couldn't or wouldn't. Thank you

Sincerely

Steve Hartsfield

Sons of Confederate Veterans

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Sculpture in Pioneer Park

Dear Katherine Seale, Chair of the Landmark Commission, and Landmark Commissioners,

The Teich Monument referred to as "The Confederate War Memorial" that was begun in 1886, completed in 1897, moved from Old City Park in 1961 to its present location in Pioneer Park is the oldest public sculpture in Dallas. The granite and marble of which it is composed has survived the ravages of time and weather.

Frank Teich who designed the monument was called the father of the granite industry in Texas. His work should not be destroyed.

History is a series of events long past which we should remember lest we be tempted to repeat mistakes. We cannot change history. We should not try to hide it or rewrite it, but make the facts easy to find.

Those soldiers depicted in the monument did other things besides answer the call of the military of their state. They weren't all bad because they fought against the northern states. Read their letters and diaries: Read the declaration that the State of Texas wrote when Texas legislators decided to go to war.

The pyramids were built by slaves. I do not think they should be destroyed either. Slaves are not slaves by choice but by circumstance, and slaves have proven over the centuries that they are mighty men and women who can accomplish great things even while enslaved. Wells they dug are still producing water: structures they built still stand as mighty monuments to their abilities, just as the Frank Teich monument stands.

When enslaved people were freed in Texas, many of them came to Dallas to start their new lives. The tiny town of about 400 souls grew at the end of that war. Freed people found purpose and work in their new home and contributed greatly to the growth of a mighty city. That monument also marks the rise of business and enterprise in Deep Elm and other areas of the city that brought a richness and fullness to the culture and wealth of Dallas and makes this a great place - warts and all.

Nothing is perfect. Should we hide and ignore our flaws? No, We learn from our mistakes. We own them and We change like this nation has changed. We aren't white and black. We don't see white and "People of Color". We see Texans; We see Americans.

Please, lets build, not tear down.

\$480,000 could do a lot of good. It could buy computers for a number of schools.

Thank you for your consideration,
Joan Smith
Teacher

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Annienjack [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:40 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

Do not destroy part of our history...you can't change it but must learn from it.
Janie Hornsby Dolecek

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Diana Hoover [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Application for demolition/removal

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal for the War Memorial that sits in the downtown Dallas cemetery.

--
Diana Hoover, Chairman
Lipscomb County Republican Party
PO Box 289
Booker TX 79005
Office 806-658-9113
Fax 806-658-9114
diana.hometownrealty@gmail.com

"In God We Trust"

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carson Foard [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 3:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate Memorial

I hope you will deny the "speedy" demolition permit proposed for this memorial by the City Council. This action avoids due process and smacks of unnecessary and irrevocable hyper-political motives that will serve no real purpose. For a great many people, the Memorial is just that, a memorial to our forebears who served - many of whom died and were never recovered - in the Confederate Army. We have no political agenda, do not hate anyone, and would appreciate being able to commemorate our history without rancor or shame. Most importantly, the Memorial speaks to the incredible destruction and loss of life in a conflict that was a defining moment in American history; we would appreciate having it continue to deliver that message as we move forward to a better place for the country and all its citizens.

Thank you for your consideration of this message.

Anne Carson Foard

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: william goar [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 2:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Park Memorial

PLEASE DO NOT grant a Certificate of Demolition for the Memorial monument in the Pioneer Cemetery! And/or Please Execute a Demolition Delay immediately!

Please protect our future, our-your children's future! If YOU ALLOW them to demolish this memorial, where will they stop? I believe if you allow them to destroy this memorial they along with you will be committing a Federal Offense (I and friends are studying into it):

According to 18 U.S. Code 1369- Destruction of Veterans Memorials- Says: Anyone willfully injures, destroys, or attempts to injure or destroy any structure, plaque, statue, or other monument on public property commemorating the service of ANY person in the Armed Forces of the United States shall be fined, imprisoned not more than 10 years or both.

According to Public Law 85-425 of the House Of Representatives 358 (3) Section 432 & 433 (e) The term Veteran includes a person who served in the Military or Navel Forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War.

PLEASE LISTEN! PLEASE DO NOT BREAK THE LAW! LEAVE ALL MONUMENTS, MEMORIALS ALONE!!!! NO DEMOLITION!!!!

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Debra Cole [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 2:31 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War memorial

I'm emailing to ask that you please deny the permit to remove the War Memorial. Thank you,
Debra Cole

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: pennypickles [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 2:08 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

Please save our u.s. history. All history should be saved and learned from by all.
From a confederate solider's descendant.
Thank you.
Penny

Sent from my U.S. Cellular® Smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 2:04 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Our Confederate History

Suppress by CENSORSHIP for POLITICAL Reasons

IS THIS STILL AMERICA? HOME OF THE BRAVE AND LAND OF THE FREE?

Best Regards,

Mary Humphrey

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Laurie Knotts [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate Monument in Pioneer Cemetery

Dear Sir and Madam,

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the confederate monument.

Thank you,

Laurie Knotts

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Pat Harper [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:50 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Please do not allow the removal of the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. History cannot be changed by the destruction of historical markers. History needs to be reserved as a way to track happenings. Please consider voting no to removal.

Pat Harper

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ray Trosper <raytro174@yahoo.com>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please do not remove any monuments in your city.

Thank you.

Ray Trosper
Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Cheryl Ann Walkup [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:38 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition of Confederate Monument in Pioneer Park

Dear Mr. Doty and Ms. Hill

Two of my Great-great Grandfathers fought and died for the Confederacy. They did not own slaves. They were both farmers. To me, and I am sure to other descendants, Confederate Memorials honor the lives of them and the other Confederate soldiers who gave their lives defending their families and their land.

On the City of Dallas website, you listed your core values as empathy, ethics, excellence, and equity. According to Google, the definition of empathy is: the ability to understand and share the feelings of another and the definition of equity is: the quality of being fair and impartial.

I would appreciate it very much if you would reconsider your decision to demolish the Confederate Monument in Pioneer Park and apply these words and definitions in your reconsideration.

Sincerely yours,

Cheryl Ann Walkup
A proud descendant of two Confederate Soldiers.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bill Loving [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:36 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial Monument

Dear Ms. Hall,
Please deny the certificate of demolition or removal requested by City Manager T. C. Broadnax of the Confederate War Memorial Monument.
Thank you,
William E Loving
Cypress, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Margaret Kelly [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:34 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument at Pioneer Cemetery

Please leave the Confederate Monument in place at Pioneer Cemetery. It is a part of our history and simply shows respect for our departed ancestors.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Hiram Patterson [redacted]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:25 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am requesting that you strongly consider denying the Dallas City Manager's certificate of demolition/removal that he submitted to take down and remove the 122 year-old Confederate War Memorial at the Pioneer Park Cemetery. It is imperative that a vote on the certificate not be hastily considered and that the scheduled April 1st public hearing and a full 65-day period for the Landmark Commission to consider the certificate is not circumvented.

As a lifelong historian, I consider that removing historical monuments (regardless of the subject) for the sake of political expediency is nothing more than wanton destruction of cultural heritage that in the end benefits no one nor their perceptions of the object being removed. I feel it would be more beneficial to retain the Confederate War Memorial and erect interpretive plaques to educate our citizens regarding its historical context.

Respectfully,

Hiram Patterson
Dallas, TX

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Leave our MOONUMENTS and history alonne

Folks,

STOP destroying our HONORABLE history as DEMANDED by the Socialist-Progressives who don't know the history of last week. You cant have an lawful, civil society when you CAVE into stupidity, lies & hate. This entire crusade by ignorant, hateful LEFTISTS is only DIVIDING our Citizens, not uniting them via common experience & culture. DO NOT follow the path set by Maa, Lenin, Stalin, the Taliban and Hitler (Great folks to emulate)? LEAVE OUR MONUMENTS ALONE.....

Captain Phil Walters
GatorGuides.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Christian Lee [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:18 PM
To: Doty, Mark
Subject: Submission Inquiry

Hello, my name is Christian Hilmar Lee, 7th Gen Texan. Born in Terrell, TX raised in San Antonio. I'll keep it brief.

Adina De Zavala, the Alamo's most sacred preservationist, created the 6 Flags of Texas legend to teach our states ethnic diversity. Her grandfather Lorenzo de Zavala was a Texas revolutionary and drafter of the Texas Constitution. She was a Latina whose father and uncle served in the Confederate army alongside Jose Navarro's sons. Even the son of Alamo defender Gregorio Esparza was a Latino Confederate soldier.

Please please don't let people with a vendetta make the mistake of removing the pioneer park monument. Every monument, plaque or memorial destroyed is 'Extended Retribution' which Lincoln warned would only reopen old wounds and slow down the process of unification.

Thank you for your time & thank you for your consideration. Deo Vindice.

Christian Hilmar Lee

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Vicki Harris [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:06 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Protection of monuments!

Hello,

Please do not let any monuments be removed or demolished, that signify a part of history!

Please vote against removal of ANY monuments that have been donated by ANY society, person, etc. Someone thought enough for those monuments to be erected because of factual data based on heroism or patriotism.

Research history and you will see that the Civil War was NOT about slavery. It was about the Constitution and rights of Southern people.

I pray for you to make a great fight against anyone that condemns historical figures, good or bad, as it is a part of history.

Vicki Harris

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dana Howard [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:05 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Landmark Commission Hearing

Please do not approve the certificate of demolition or removal of historical monuments. Good or bad....history is history and cannot be erased or changed. Perception is the difference. Perception should be addressed, but not with "erasing". Do not be bullied into this decision.

Dana Howard
10416 Mapleridge Drive
Dallas, TX 75238

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: craig stone [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:58 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); marc.doty@dallascityhall.com
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission,

MS. Seale,

My name Craig Stone, I hold a B.A. in History from the University of Texas Rio Grande Valley. My primary focus has been the era of sectional conflict through the Westward Expansion. I also had the pleasure of serving 2 terms (2012-2015) on the Cameron County Historical Committee as Historical Marker Chairman as well as the Palmito Ranch Sesquicentennial Committee Chairman. I had ancestors who fought and died on both sides of the War between the States. My studies of that era tells me that Dallas as well as many other southern cities was build by Confederate Veterans: men like A.H. Belo and William Lewis Cabell who returned from the ravages of war and set out to build better lives for themselves and their communities. The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It serves as a memorial to those men who did not return. Being in a pioneer cemetery is the perfect place for such a memorial. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. As I understand it the memorial is in already in a Historic Overlay District, if it is not safe there where would it be protected. You were appointed for your wisdom and interest in preservation . We are counting on you to preserve the remaining monuments in Dallas and its history for future generations. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorials as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history.

Thank You for your time and consideration,

Craig Stone
Citizen, Taxpayer & Historian

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jane Ann Middleton [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:51 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument

Do not remove or destroy historical monuments

Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:37 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Save the Confederate Monument

Dear Ms. Hill:

It is my greatest prayer that the Landmark Commission will vote against destroying any more monuments.

We cannot erase our history. We certainly cannot erase our history by destroying monuments that were built to help us remember the missteps and sometimes even great moments. When we fail to learn our history, when we fail to teach our children, when we turn a blind eye to our history, we are doomed to repeat those mistakes. We don't have to be proud or even approve of the historical moment that is depicted in some of our monuments. Our history is what has made us so great today and will help us grow better tomorrow. We should at least acknowledge the history and vow to never repeat the travesty.

These monuments are not just historical documentation, many are beautiful and great works of art that should be admired for the talent that was involved. Many of our monuments were designed, built and placed so many years ago we should be amazed at the mechanics of moving such large slabs of marble, hoisting them up on their bases and defying gravity for so many years. We should work on the education and true appreciation of the "Art" of the monuments.

For so very many children today, this history will not be learned in school and it will not be learned at home. Sometimes, the only opportunity for a child to learn about the history is to visit the monuments and read the plaques with the historical information available. Please do not authorize any more destruction of monuments. It is a horrible waste of money for the area and the destruction might prevent one child, even one child, from learning a piece of history that would encourage that child to be an even greater activist for a greater cause.

I cried while I watched the coverage of the removal of the Robert E. Lee monument from Lee Park. I cried for several days afterwards whenever anyone would want to discuss the travesty. I want to cry every time I drive by that corner and it is still bare. I want so desperately for the Lee monument to be returned to its historical place. I would be there dancing in the street along with many, many others.

Many of the monuments depict very brave and strong men, warriors and defenders of their hearts and minds of the time. The people who want to destroy our history today seem to be weak, maybe even afraid and intentionally hurtful, just the antithesis of the subjects of the memorials.



Please vote against the destruction of any more memorials or statues. Please force the City Council to focus on building, strengthening and growing Dallas into a grander place for the residents and visitors instead of destroying history.

Regards,

Mari-Kathryn Braswell

P.O. Box 28
Forestburg, TX 76239
Cell - (214) 649-7590

These monuments are not just historical documentation, many are beautiful and great works of art that should be admired for the talent that was involved. Many of our monuments were designed, built and placed so many years ago we should be amazed at the mechanics of moving such large slabs of marble, hoisting them up on their bases and defying gravity for so many years. We should work on the education and true appreciation of the "Art" of the monuments.

For so very many children today, this history will not be learned in school and it will not be learned at home. Sometimes, the only opportunity for a child to learn about the history is to visit the monuments and read the plaques with the historical information available. Please do not authorize any more destruction of monuments. It is a horrible waste of money for the area and the destruction might prevent one child, even one child, from learning a piece of history that would encourage that child to be an even greater activist for a greater cause.

I cried while I watched the coverage of the removal of the Robert E. Lee monument from Lee Park. I cried for several days afterwards whenever anyone would want to discuss the travesty. I want to cry every time I drive by that corner and it is still bare. I want so desperately for the Lee monument to be returned to its historical place. I would be there dancing in the street along with many, many others.

Many of the monuments depict very brave and strong men, warriors and defenders of their hearts and minds of the time. The people who want to destroy our history today seem to be weak, maybe even afraid and intentionally hurtful, just the antithesis of the subjects of the memorials.

Please vote against the destruction of any more memorials or statues. Please force the City Council to focus on building, strengthening and growing Dallas into a grander place for the residents and visitors instead of destroying history.

Regards,

Mari-Kathryn Braswell

P.O. Box 28
Forestburg, TX 76239
Cell - (214) 649-7590

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Anderson, Jennifer
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:40 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: FW: Save the Confederate Monument



Jennifer Anderson
Senior Planner – Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-670-5825 |
jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com



****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE: This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.****

From: mkmbkpr@aol.com <mkmbkpr@aol.com>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:38 PM
To: Anderson, Jennifer <jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com>
Subject: Save the Confederate Monument

Dear Ms. Anderson:

It is my greatest prayer that the Landmark Commission will vote against destroying any more monuments.

We cannot erase our history. We certainly cannot erase our history by destroying monuments that were built to help us remember the missteps and sometimes even great moments. When we fail to learn our history, when we fail to teach our children, when we turn a blind eye to our history, we are doomed to repeat those mistakes. We don't have to be proud or even approve of the historical moment that is depicted in some of our monuments. Our history is what has made us so great today and will help us grow better tomorrow. We should at least acknowledge the history and vow to never repeat the travesty.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Joan Watkins [mailto:joan.watkins@att.net]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:24 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of a Veterans Memorial

I do not agree with the removal of the Veterans Memorial, it's is history.
My Great Grandfather was a veteran of the War between the State and I feel by it's removal dishonors his memory.

So please reconsider your decision to remove the Veterans Memorial.

Joan Watkins
510 S Waverly Dr, Dallas, TX 75208

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: David McLaughlin [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:23 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: director@preservationdallas.org; donovan@preservationdallas.org; nora@dallashistory.org; michelle@dallashistory.org; research@dallashistory.org; katherine@dallashistory.org; karl@dallashistory.org; molly@dallashistory.org; irene@preservationdallas.org; mprycer@dallasheritagevillage.org
Subject: Demolition of The Confederate War Memorial located in Pioneer Park Cemetery

Dear City of Dallas Landmark Commission,

The proposal by the Dallas City council to demolish the Confederate Monument in the Pioneer Cemetery is appalling to me as a Civil War historian, US Navy veteran, descendant of both Union and Confederate veterans, and historical preservationist. This is just becoming insane. How can you seriously go into a cemetery and just blatantly desecrate and destroy something over 100 years old? Please just stop this madness and leave it alone. If you have to add a contextual marker, then so be it. Removal will resolve nothing in our communities and will create more problems ahead for anything else deemed historical yet offensive by some. I cant understand the sheer waste of money that is being put into this when the City has no money for Police, schools, etc. Why not use that money elsewhere to help the police department and school be better and safer? This is just beyond ridiculous.

Sincerely,

David McLaughlin

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: sondracm [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:11 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

I request of you to please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the Confederate War Memorial which sits in Pioneer Park Cemetery.

Please understand that there were thousands of soldiers who died in fields & streams all across our Southland, unknown numbers have never been found & lie in mass graves...thus the true reason of Monuments, It is their head stone...Thank You, Sondra May

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: paul parker [mailto:parker1@told.com]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:28 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please honor our ancestry as Texans, American, and Southerners by not removing the monument from the downtown cemetery. Only by knowing our history may it not be repeated.
Thank you
Paul Parker

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Prior, Marsha
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:33 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Memorial/Cemetery



Marsha Prior
Planner - Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-670-4131 |
marsha.prior@dallascityhall.com



****OPEN RECORDS NOTICE:** This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly. **

From: David Palmer [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:32 AM
To: Doty, Mark <mark.doty@dallascityhall.com>
Cc: Prior, Marsha <marsha.prior@dallascityhall.com>; Parent, Melissa <melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com>; jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com; Casso, Liz Ana <liz.casso@dallascityhall.com>; elaine.hill@dallascityhall.com; Dean, Neva <neva.dean@dallascityhall.com>
Subject: Memorial/Cemetery

Dallas Landmark Commission-

Please do not destroy our history. Please do not desecrate this cemetery. This is a historic memorial we should be proud of that pays tribute and recognizes those who valiantly fought to defend against an illegal invasion. This was the American Holocaust and should not be whitewashed by the few who do not understand our history. **Dallas has very few historical monuments... do not destroy what's left. As a citizen of this city, I am passionate about our history and what we have.**

David Palmer
508 Parkhurst Dr.
Dallas, TX 75218
(214)529-0079

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Prior, Marsha
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:33 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: FW: Memorial/Cemetery



Marsha Prior
Planner - Historic Preservation
City of Dallas | www.dallascityhall.com
Sustainable Development
and Construction Department
1500 Marilla St, Room 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201
O: 214-670-4131 |
marsha.prior@dallascityhall.com



OPEN RECORDS NOTICE: This email and responses may be subject to the Texas Open Records Act and may be disclosed to the public upon request. Please respond accordingly.

From: David Palmer [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:32 AM
To: Doty, Mark <mark.doty@dallascityhall.com>
Cc: Prior, Marsha <marsha.prior@dallascityhall.com>; Parent, Melissa <melissa.parent@dallascityhall.com>;
jennifer.anderson@dallascityhall.com; Casso, Liz Ana <liz.casso@dallascityhall.com>; elaine.hill@dallascityhall.com;
Dean, Neva <neva.dean@dallascityhall.com>
Subject: Memorial/Cemetery

Dallas Landmark Commission-

Please do not destroy our history. Please to not desecrate this cemetery. This is a historic memorial we should be proud of that pays tribute and recognizes those who valiantly fought to defend against an illegal invasion. The was the American Holocaust and should not be whitewashed by the few who do not understand our history. **Dallas has very few historical monuments... do not destroy what's left. As a citizen of this city, I am passionate about our history and what we have.**

David Palmer
508 Parkhurst Dr.
Dallas, TX 75218
(214)529-0079

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ronald Arrington <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:44 AM
To: Staley; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark; T.C.Broadnax@dallascityhall.com
Subject: Fwd: THREAT TO DALLAS CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL JUST GOT MORE URGENT

STOP THE INSANITY ...The Left is alive in Dallas too. History is History whether good, bad or indifferent. Erase history and erase a country.

----- Forwarded Message -----

Subject:THREAT TO DALLAS CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL JUST GOT MORE URGENT
Date:Fri, 22 Feb 2019 05:16:30 +0000
From:Save The Alamo Committee <[REDACTED]>
Reply-To:Save The Alamo Committee <[REDACTED]>
To:[REDACTED]

[View this email in your browser](#)



**URGENT EVERYONE!!! WE NEED YOUR
HELP!!!**

Dear Precinct Chair,

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has pulled a fast one. He submitted the certificate of demolition or removal today for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for the public hearing nor no 65 days for them to consider the certificate.

Speakers must register to speak at the 1 p.m. Landmark Commission meeting on March 4th. Letters and emails must be sent to Elaine (Phyllis) Hill and Mark Doty immediately.

Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com

Mark.Doty@dallascityhall.com

It does not matter if you are or aren't a Dallas City/Dallas County resident. It just matters that you appeal for them to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

P.S.—The above information just now reached us. Please send this to your voters. We ask that everybody email the two individuals listed IMMEDIATELY. This could well be our one shot to prevent this disaster. -Rick Range



Copyright © 2019 Save The Alamo Committee, All rights reserved.

You are receiving this email because you signed up on the 'Save the Alamo' website:

<http://www.savethealamo.us>

Our mailing address is:

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

[Add us to your address book](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: David Vandiver [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:27 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please STOP this destruction of Statues ,monuments of this Great State and of our Nations history. Removing these will not put an in to the racial hate ,in this Nation. It will still be there these pieces of artwork , pays tribute to Veterans of American . All Monuments and statues need to be protected . thank you

[REDACTED]
David Vandiver [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gayle Arnold [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:12 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of Statue

Dear Ms Hill
Please don't agree for the removal of the Statue in the
Cemetery. This is American History.
Gayle Arnold
[REDACTED]

Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Patrick Steiert [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:11 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Appeal to Deny the Application for the Certificate of Demolition/Removal of Confederate War Memorial.

Dear Mr. Doty and Ms Hill:

As a resident of Dallas County I urgently appeal to you to deny the application of Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax for the Certificate of Demolition and Removal of the Confederate War Memorial.

Such an inconsiderate action makes a mockery of the city government process. This decision should not rest on the City Commissioner's untimely actions. This is a matter that should be presented to the citizens of Dallas to vote on. Only then would you truly know the intent and desires of the citizenry.

We do not make our cities, county or state a better place by removing and destroying our history. Monuments are a reminder of who we were, and challenge us to never forget our legacy while looking forward to a brighter future. I hereby urge you to deny this certificate and to allocate the full measure of time for public hearings, as well as the 65 days afforded to consider the certificate.

Sincerely:

Patrick J. Steiert
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: jlloyd1861 [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:07 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Mounment Pioneer Park

I write this short email to strongly deny the city request to remove the Confederate Mounment from Pioneer Park. As I write this not only do have ancestors who in that war but also a history buff I ve heard it many times over that that for certain people who think these Mounments should be removed to cemtery were they would be safe an better place to honor. So the city now want to cut up and remove a mounment that seats in a cemetary to which that mounment honors fallen war dead it absolute disgrace and I am quite ashame of the members on the city council and certain citizens of that city who want ut to happen. I ask for you to deny the permit to allow the removal of this statue thst furture generations can see this Mounment as well as other Mounments in your great state of Texas.

Jason Lloyd

Sent from my Verizon, Samsung Galaxy smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lori Hagemeyer <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:50 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Keep the War Memorial

I'm emailing you today to voice my opinion on the War Memorial. I believe the War Memorial should not be removed. Thank you for reading this email.

Have a great weekend.

Lori Hagemeyer

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Diane Dyess <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 6:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Dallas Confederate Monument in Pioneer Park Cemetery - Deny the demolition permit!

Dear Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty,

I am dismayed to learn of the change in process for hearings on this historic Confederate monument. There are many things taking place about this memorial and Dallas history that are concerning to me.

To deny this part of Texas history, will not 'fix' any of the problems in Dallas. It will not fund the police and fire pensions, it won't fix pot holes and stop murders. What it will do is spend money to remove an inanimate object that does not have the ability to hurt anyone. 'Move them to cemeteries' was the cry, this one sits in a cemetery and was an instrumental part of getting the designations and protection the cemetery enjoys. It isn't easily seen from the street - one has to seek it out to be 'offended.'

To look at history of the late 1800's and early 1900's through the lens of 2019 is a disservice to the founders of Dallas - I am heartbroken at the remarks made by the Dallas City Council about my ancestors and about me as I honor them. These memorials may be used to teach how far we have come as a society and as a nation. These monuments were a part of the reconciliation and healing process for a Southland that was denied that opportunity during reconstruction.

All monuments and memorial markers should remain where they are - regardless of what part of history they recognize. To remove this removes five years of Texas history - *please deny the demolition permit!*

Respectfully,

Diane Agerton Dyess
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Colbaugh, Barry <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:47 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal

I understand the city manager has submitted the certificate of demolition or removal today for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. Please reconsider such a foolish move. The monument is in a cemetery honoring veterans that have long since passed. It is exactly where it should be. There is no room for political correctness and the cost of removing a historical monument is a burden to tax payers. Please reconsider such a move and deny this application.

Thank You
Barry Colbaugh

The information contained in this email is privileged and confidential information intended for the use of the addressee listed above. If you are neither the intended recipient nor the employee or agent responsible for delivering this message to its intended recipient, you are hereby notified that any disclosure, copying, distribution or the taking of any action in relation to the contents of the email information is strictly prohibited. If you have received this email in error, please notify the sender immediately by telephone or reply email and destroy this email and any attachments.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sheila SheRok Williams [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 5:17 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Texas monuments

Stop falling into the communistic traps set by liberals by destroying our state's monuments. We the people are sick and tired of a few loud mouth idiots getting to run the show for the rest of us. They will eventually come for something you yourself holds dear, because that's what they do. They will never be happy no matter what they destroy. They are miserable people who want everyone to fall to their level. Is it going to take another civil war for you people to wake up to the fact we are done with this crap?

Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: fbbussey <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 4:34 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal

My oldest son was born in Dallas and we are requesting that you **deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.**

Thank you,

Becky Bussey

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Louise Avery [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 2:49 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Landmark Commission meeting

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of Confederate Statue's . I feel they are beautiful works of art and are important to our history.

Thank You, Louise Avery

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jan Spitzenberger [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:44 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: My vote in stopping removal of War Memorial in Dallas, Tx

Dear Phyllis Hill,

It is February 22nd and it has come to my attention that Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has submitted the certificate on demolition/removal today for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery . I wanted to send you an emergency email. The Landmark Commission is to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th.

This is the largest Confederate monument still existing in the state of Texas. If it be any way humanly possible, please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal, as fast as possible. This is the only means of stopping this atrocity.

Don't let Texas be another follow the leader in a scheme of shams. This is a part of history that does not need to be erased. Stand up for Texas. Please do all that you can!

Sincerely,
Jan Spitzenberger
Native Texas tried & true

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jan Spitzenberger [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:44 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: My vote in stopping removal of War Memorial in Dallas, Tx

Dear Phyllis Hill,

It is February 22nd and it has come to my attention that Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has submitted the certificate on demolition/removal today for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery . I wanted to send you an emergency email. The Landmark Commission is to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th.

This is the largest Confederate monument still existing in the state of Texas. If it be any way humanly possible, please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal, as fast as possible. This is the only means of stopping this atrocity.

Don't let Texas be another follow the leader in a scheme of shams. This is a part of history that does not need to be erased. Stand up for Texas. Please do all that you can!

Sincerely,
Jan Spitzenberger
Native Texas tried & true

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Linda Galliton [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 1:35 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate statutes

Please do not destroy our USA history. The Civil war is part of our history. The war memorial in Pioneer Park is a reminder of something we did wrong and should stand lest we forget.

Thank you for your consideration,

Linda Galliton

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: David Hicks <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:14 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate War Memorial.....

Hello, My name is David Hicks from Knoxville, Tennessee.

I am a member of Sons Of Confederate Veterans- Longstreet-Zollicoffer Camp 87.

I find it very disturbing and quite distasteful that members of city council and government are willing and able to take down monuments/markers that have stood for decades.

I don't fully understand the politically correct atmosphere we find ourselves in, and it is most unsettling to members like me who try and preserve our heritage and try to establish a "Heritage Not Hate" attitude within the public eye. I implore you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of this monument.

THE ONLY THING NECESSARY FOR THE
TRIUMPH OF POLITICAL CORRECTNESS IS
FOR SCV MEN TO DO NOTHING.

Charge to the Sons of Confederate Veterans:

To you, Sons of Confederate Veterans, we submit the vindication of the Cause for which we fought; to your strength will be given the defense of the Confederate soldier's good name, the guardianship of his history, the emulation of his virtues, the perpetuation of those principles he loved and which made him glorious and which you also cherish. Remember, it is your duty to see that the true history of the South is presented to future generations."

Sincerely,

David Lynn Hicks, Jr.
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: crwcatz [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:05 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal/Destruction of Memorial Statues

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am writing to ask you not to destroy or remove ANY memorial statues. Just because a memorial doesn't mean anything to you doesn't mean it doesn't mean something to someone else. It's akin to toppling headstones in a cemetery. A toppled & destroyed headstone of a person you may not know or personally care about is devastating to the loved ones. If the belief is that it somehow causes adversity in today's society? I can assure you, no statue has that power. Feeling adversity comes from within not from a memorial. These statues MEAN something to people and the meaning is not hate or racism or anything of that nature. The meaning is family & unity for a cause and the cause at that time was patriotism to rebel against the unfair act of taxation by the government. I assure you the war was NOT fought over slavery as depicted erroneously time & time again. I urge you to know the REAL truth to the cause of the war by educating yourself on the real truth not on a false proclaimed myth. Ask any person that is opposed to destroying memorials 'why' it bothers them and you will learn the truth.

I urge you to please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of ANY memorial. It's like giving approval to vandals to desecrate memorials of the heart, whether you know the heart that grieves or not or whether you know the departed, memorials are just that - Memorializing a dearly departed.

Thank you for your consideration,

C. Renee Womble

Sent from my Samsung Galaxy , an AT&T LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Michele Thompson [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 11:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Deny Certificate

Please deny application for the certificate of demolition or removal of the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery.

Thank you, Michele Thompson

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Glenn G <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 11:39 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Con War Memorial

Ms Hill,

Please help all of us Texans (DFW) preserve our history . The subject memorial means that we remember and will never intend to suffer the horrors of civil war again. Destruction of the monument means it never happened and no lesson learned.

Respectfully,
G.H.Goebel

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: vettelover58 [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 11:24 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas Confederate War Memorial

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

Sent from my Samsung Galaxy , an AT&T LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kenneth Rich [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 11:16 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Ms. Phyllis Hill

Please ask the Landmark Commission to preserve the Confederate war memorial in pioneer park cemetery. It is the oldest public sculpture in the city of Dallas. The memorial is in a cemetery. Everyone that fought in the Civil War were Americans. They were the National Guard of their day. Some of us are lucky and we know where our Texians are buried. But for most, many of those Texians did not come home. No one knows where those soldiers are buried or who they are. Monuments were dedicated on the battlefields, and in the towns North and South, on the anniversaries of the battles, and the war. 10th, 20th, 25th 30th, 40th, 50th ect. The South was financially devastated after the war It would take ten long years for the women and survivors in the South to raise enough funds to remove the Southern dead from the battlefields. If they were going to erect a monument, they would not place it on a Northern battlefield where they faced a major defeat. And they were not going to visit. They would place it in their town or cemetery where they could see it. Please help preserve our cultural history.

Thank You
Ken Rich

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Paula Strickland [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 11:14 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: STOP the removal of the Civil war memorial from the down town Cemetery

How can the City of Dallas allow this to happen to the war memorial for those lost in the Civil War of this country? The words that come to mind are those of cowards who have no kin or relatives who have served this state or this great country. And I find this to be a total disgrace to this city and to our country. The very thing that makes this country great is the inherent desire to strive to do what is right and what is noble and considerate to those who gave so very much for this country. Not only am I horrified I am so extremely disappointed in a city that would even consider this much less allow it. For all those that are no longer here to speak, I speak NOW. DO NOT REMOVE THE STATUES that commemorate our brave fallen who gave all for this country. They are so very much a part of our History. They deserve any respect that they can be given. It sickens me to death to think that some upstart thinks that this is proper and goes to these great lengths to destroy our heritage.

This attempt by your city manager T. C. Broadnax is a mark on the reputation of your city and an insult to every person who has ancestors that served. I find his attempt to do this behind everyone's backs and to circumvent any open and honest exchange a mark on and against his own character. God will have to forgive him because I will not be able to as the people of Dallas will not be able to either when they find out his underhanded tactics. We defile the memory of the brave and those willing to sacrifice all for this country. SHAME on this backstabbing underhanded man who tries to push his way around and behind the backs of all our citizens. He is a disgrace. He should resign from office.

Respectfully, P Strickland

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jason Bertera [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 10:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument

Please stop the Destruction of our History n the Disresoect of our Veterans n former Texas Confederate Soldiers. The Monument in Pioneer oark is a Great location n I've taken my family here many times. Please allow future Generations the same oppurtunity. The Opposition want these put in a museum. What better place than a Cemetary. Not 1 Monument removed has been put in a Museum. The Lee Statue in Dallas.Forrest in Memphis n the 4 monuments in New Orleans were removed n have sit at City owned Maintance lots since their urgent removal. The attacks on our History will stop when Politicians draw line in sand n say enough is enough n do whats correct not just politically correct. Thank u. Jason

[Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Kathleen [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 10:46 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate monuments

I am a 7th generation Texan, and a 5th generation Dallas native.

Please do NOT remove the Confederate monuments. We must not try to erase history, nor should we.

We cannot know the reasoning nor motivation for every single soldier as to why they fought. Many fought simply for "home". Being on the wrong side does not cancel out nor diminish their sacrifice, their bravery, nor any other accomplishments they may have had.

I ask you to leave the monuments in place, to learn from, if nothing else.

"Those who do not know history are doomed to repeat it."

Kathleen

"Therefore I say unto you, All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them."

Mark 11:24 ASV

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: robert traylor <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 9:56 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Destroying history.

WE NEED SCV HELP!!!

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax,
Are you a Yankee, or just plain close minded and stupid?
I protest the certificate of demolition or removal for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery and deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.
Disappointed,
Robert Pace Traylor [REDACTED]
Idaho

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Pat Stephenson <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 9:48 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Landmark Commission - Confederate War Memorial

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery. The monument was erected by the wives and children of the men who fought in the War. Whatever your belief in their motivation, no one can deny their valor. In another hundred years when, hopefully, common sense will again prevail, what has been destroyed cannot be resurrected.

Patricia Stephenson

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Paul Rhea [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 9:39 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Please deny approval

It's history, please do not remove our heritage and history our children need to know history and children to come thank you

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Janis Susan May Patterson [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 9:13 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: vandalism

Dear Ms. Hill -

I hope you are not siding with the anti-American vandals intent on destroying the artwork in Pioneer Park and other art works. These people will not stop with Confederate monuments. They are intent on destroying all American history. In other places there have been similar attacks against statues of Christopher Columbus and other American icons.

A few weeks ago I was in Germany and, on learning I was from Dallas, many people laughed at me, asking what kind of people were we to stand by while our history was eradicated and beautiful works of art were destroyed. That's what the Communists do, they said; they destroy people's history, then take them over and subjugate them. These Germans were right; they see more clearly what is happening than you do.

Which side will you support? The communists? Or Americans who prize all sides of our history? How do you want to be known the rest of your life?

Janis Susan May Patterson

...committing crime with style!

[REDACTED]
...always a good story!
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Minor Hull [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 8:49 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Removal of statues must stop!

Removing histroy does not change histroy. STOP THIS MADNESS!

HOWARD HULL
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Rob and Lisa Emmick <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 8:45 PM
Subject: Confederate monument

I have been following the Confederate Monument in Pioneer Park story, and heard that a Certificate of Demolition or Removal has been filed.

I would like to appeal to you deny the application. The monument is a historic structure and is in an appropriate place, being with the cemetery marking so many veterans and founding city fathers. If something is done, I think it should be adding an educational marker. I feel that removing the monument will set a precedent for disturbing other historical items.

I feel like the monument might not even be noticed by many except for the news coverage. It sat there for years without any problems, and was even restored not too long ago in partnership with the city.

I also oppose the monument removal/demolition because doing so would cost a lot of money - the city says we don't have money to spend on police and firefighters but they have money to spend on this?

I appreciate your consideration.

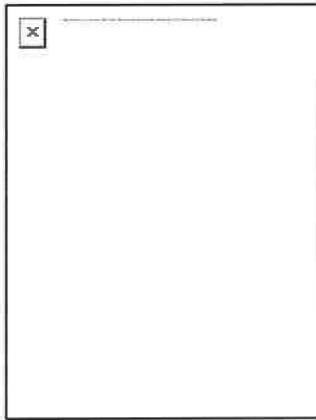
Sincerely,
Lisa Emmick

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Michael Simons [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 8:43 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monuments in Dallas

[REDACTED]



**Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission**

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City

of Dallas.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history.

Thank you Michael Simons



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Richard Powell <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Thursday, February 21, 2019 8:30 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Heritage of my family. Pleases read, Ms. Hill.

Dear MS Hill:

My family came to the Dallas area in the 1840's and other side in 1860.. A uncle was a Texas Ranger with Hays in the Mexican American War, and the First Presbyterian Preacher in Texas He was killed in the Civil War, he was a Major and Preacher. (Gen. Houston went to several of his meetings.) . I had family in every war since, many died.. Including the Civil War. yes they had a man and woman slave and their children. My grandfather released them after the war, but they stayed on as share croppers on the family farm and leased farms. Their kids and grand kids stayed working for my family until the last great grand daughter died in 1992. We loved them and they loved us.

I can't believe what is happening to our Confederate Heritage. Remember all Confederate soldiers were made United States Veterans by a act of Congress with all benefits. They were honorable men. The Confederate soldiers were fighting for Dallas. Texas and the South..

Robert E. Lee released all his slaves, well before the war, and many stayed as hired help. Slavery was on its way out, most countries paid the owners for the slaves to release them. But, the United States would not ?

The 1850s and 60s were a different time. A majority of the greatest men in this country owned slaves and most treated them well. Should we removed the monuments of: Washington, Jefferson, Houston, and many many others. Stonewall Jackson before the war held Sunday school classes for the Blacks in his town and he could have been arrested for it. Many of the founding fathers of Dallas fought in the war for the South. And many had no slaves.

Many slaves fought for the South and others stayed home and help the South war effort.

Someone once said : " the winners write the history of war. "

Lincoln even said that he was neither for or against slavery. 1859. It was a part of culture, even the Bible tells slaves how to act and behave. Only a small percentage of Confederate soldiers and people of the South owned slaves, like 5 % or less. They fought for God, family, and country. Just like we fight for now. These were American soldiers fighting for freedom.

I ask you PLEASE don't remove the Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery, if you have to, move it to some other location. If I had the land or money to buy the land, I would take it and the Lee memorial, and make a Southern history park, out in the country somewhere. . You want to sell me 5 acres some where, for a couple of hundred dollars, all I can afford.

I believe this has to be one of the oldest monument in Texas and Dallas. And it is beautiful, like the Lee Memorial was. This is mine and Dallas Texas Heritage and many of good God fearing men died for what they believed in.

Remember, you will be remembered for what you do by all the citizens of Dallas. Protect our history. Please Don't lose our heritage. We love this country and these men who fought and died for it. Help .We grew up in a different time.

Thank you for your consideration and time. Please help.

Richard M. Powell EMT/PPO
[REDACTED]

I'm not very much of a writer, but think you will understand my love for my country and Dallas. And above all our History and Heritage Save it for our children to come.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: robin smith <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:52 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition

Dear Ma'am

Please deny the application for the certificate for the demolition /removal Thank you Robin Poteet

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Douglas Barron [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:53 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: RE: demolition/removal of a Civil war monument...

Please, I implore you to not allow the destruction or removal of the Civil War monument at this coming Monday's meeting on March 4, 2019... of the Landmark Commission. To destroy historical monuments in our nation is akin to the actions of the Taliban and ISIS in the middle east as they destroy the history of their perceived enemy's past in their attempts to erase the history in that part of the world. Surely, we are better than that. We are not savages and we do not need to re-write/destroy the history of our Nation to satisfy those few who complain they're "in pain" because of the sight of such monuments. Most of the monuments have been there over 100 years. Please do not make a mockery of the history our nation and allow this destruction. If it's gone, eventually there'll be no memory of what happened in the past. To not study history and to wipe it clean to suit any current political climate is to deny the future populations of the knowledge of what took place 150+ years ago... IF we do not know our history as a nation, those who follow us are doomed to repeat the errors of the past. Are we not better than the Taliban and ISIS? I fear those who would re-write our history to suit themselves will do irreparable harm to our nation and our history. Thank you for considering my request to stay, to halt, the "execution" of this monument's destruction.

I am: Douglas D. Barron, a U.S. citizen, a Vietnam Veteran and a 1966 graduate of TCU. I am a former FTW ISD school teacher and a former USAF Captain and an independent business owner. I was born in Texas and reside in Texas. I am now retired at 76 yrs of age. My [REDACTED] [REDACTED] should you have any questions.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: David Bailey <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 12:05 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial

Hate is in the hearts of people. History is all around you, How many years has history been in place. Dallas is seen across the Texas landscape as a lost cause.

Not because of statues or Confederate memorial but because of political correctness, and some foggy impact it has on people and the way they think.

Removing statues will not make hate and bigotry from either side go away it will only deepen the effects.

Keeping statues and memorials will show you have a firm grip on what history is and how it can be used to improve everyone's life.

Without Statues and memorials where will you turn to for education and the monuments that were but then never will be.

I assure you erasing history will portend the future will repeat the past.

Thank you David L. 'White Horse' Bailey

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sanford Reed <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:02 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas War Memorial

**To: Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission**

We must remain dedicated to ensuring that a true history of this terrible war period is preserved and presented to the public. We must continue to educate the public of the memory and reputation of soldiers of all wars, as well as the motives for his suffering and sacrifice. I can honestly say that even if I did not have numerous direct lineage forefathers who fought honorably in these conflicts, I would still support leaving all monuments to history and heritage. As a politician, family leader, and example for others, you must come down on the right side of history and protect the Dallas War Memorial.

Please consider whether you or any civic or governmental agency has the right or authority to limit or dictate the display and use of the historic statues and memorials that are in your custody to protect, defend, and honor. This is indeed a slippery slope for you or any organization to start down, and rest assured this whole issue is not just about our honored cenotaphs and statues, but definitely about much more. Next, you will be in a position of having to regulate and ban all sorts of things that you treasure. Other groups will also surely come under your restrictions, activist groups that are the current rage. Your support of what is right and correct can never be criticized, and we call on your good character, education, and sense of historical relevance and balance, to not remove historical monuments.

Respectfully,

*Sanford C. Reed, Commander
"Sul" Ross Chapter 184, Military Order Stars & Bars
SCV National Genealogy Committee
SCV Texas Division Chaplain
National Society Sons of American Revolution, Boerne 64
National Society of War of 1812
Confederate Cemetery Association
Sons of Union Veterans
State Association of Texas Pioneers
Society of Independent Southern Historians*

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dianne Moore <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:00 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of Veterans Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am writing to ask that you and your commission work to preserve the veterans memorial in Pioneer Park cemetery as is. I believe that its removal will desecrate the adjacent graves and is disrespectful to those Texas veterans who fought to protect their State, without regard to their lives. As designated by Congress Confederate soldiers have been deemed U.S. Veterans, as others who fought in previous and subsequent wars are. No public statues, all beautiful works of art, that pays homage to our military members should be desecrated by removal in this manner.

The desecration of our monuments and memorials must stop. Without you and your colleagues' support to stop these type of acts, continued acts against our military's memorials will continue and will be on your heads.

Please act. As Board Coordinator, please disapprove this decision of the Dallas City Council to remove this memorial. If possible I would also ask that you forward this request to Ms. Katherine D. Seale, the Chair of the Dallas Landmark Commission.

Thank you for your consideration of this matter,

Linda D. Moore

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: kay mix <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:59 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: THREAT TO DALLAS CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL

I am not much for words, but why do the American people wants to destroy our history????

Why not go back in history and learn that the colonies where not founded on Black Slavery, but on white slavery. Black slavery did not start until the late 1700's, early 1800's, white slavery was before this. Over 5000 Scottish men were captured during the war between Scotland and England. These men were brought to the colonies and sold into slavery. Children were taken off the streets of England and sold into slavery in the colonies. Were these children or men part of your ancestors???

Read the book 'Without Indentures White Slavery', study your ancestors, did they own slaves??? Are you ashamed of them??? Most likely not.

The War of the Rebellion was over states rights, not slavery. Who are these monuments hurting??? There are monuments all over America that bother me do I ask that they be destroyed NO. They are a part of history. LEAVE them alone!!!!

Sincerely,
Kay Mix

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sheran Weible [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:13 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument at Pioneer Cemetery

Katherine Seale, Chair of the Landmark Commission

I am a very concerned Texas citizen and I beg you to not remove this beautiful work of art in Dallas. Please do your part in stopping the destruction of our monuments and our history that made us all what we are today. Texas is a great state, I am a 7th generation Texan and very proud to be one. Our state was mainly settled by men and women escaping the devastation of the Civil War, I don't see the monument as a sign against any race but a tribute to the guts and determination it took to come to Texas and start life anew, many whom served under Robert E Lee and Stonewall, Johnson and others. These monuments are a reminder to us all to never let that dark time in history happen again! We must not forget and neither should our grandchildren and great grandchildren. Please stand up for our history. I thank you for your time, Sheran Weible

Sheran Weible
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ralph Tucker <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:55 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Protecting the History of Our Community

Elaine Hill
Board Coordinator
Dallas Landmark Commission

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas. This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history.

Sincerely,

RALPH TUCKER

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]*****

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Nancy Clay [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:21 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Deny Application - Demolition of Confederate War Memorial

Importance: High

Phyllis Hill and Mark Doty. I am appealing to you today to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of one of our historic monuments, the Confederate War Memorial.

Regards,

Nancy Clay
[REDACTED]

Nancy Clay
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Patrick Ainsworth <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:37 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: C.S.A. Memorial-For the sake of Texas History please leave the Memorial alone.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Tommy May [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate War Memorial

Please do not destroy the Confederate War Memorial. When I went to see this memorial I was mesmerized with its beauty. Such a beautiful work of art. Too bad the city will not restore the cemetery. Allowing people to actually walk on and destroy these graves is the true travesty in this area. Where has honor gone in this country.

Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Yvonne Flowers [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:28 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Landmark Commission - March 4th agenda item

Ms. Hill,

I would like to express my deep concern over actions taken toward the removal of the Confederate War Memorial from Pioneer Park. I am a 56 year old native Dallasite, a lifelong Dallas County resident, and the daughter of Dallas-born WWII veteran.

I can not strongly enough request that you vote to DENY the request/attempt at removal of the Confederate War Memorial (or any) historical Dallas Landmark from our city's Pioneer Park.

I feel strongly that the demolition of any historical monument that has been placed in our city/county by our ancestors is not a good precedent to set. At a previous time this monument was given a landmark status. It is saddening to think that historical status could be wiped away with a simple vote, allowing for the removal of this landmark, or frankly any others. As a retired educator, I recognize the importance of our history and the need to continue to teach about our past, and I believe that monuments raised by our ancestors allow those that live in Dallas (and those that come to visit) to learn about the values, ideas and beliefs of those that lived here before us.

Thank you for your belief in the history of Dallas and your hours of work on behalf of my city's history.

Thank you,

Yvonne Flowers
God Bless Dallas, and Texas and our United States of America

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Melissa Spence [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 11:21 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Civil War Memorial

Good afternoon,

Please deny the application for demolition of the Memorial. This is part of our history and many people do not want it removed.

If we do not learn from history we are doomed to repeat it.

The Memorial allows us to discuss and learn together and see how far we have come.

Regards,
Melissa Spence

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:53 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate Monument At Pioneer Park Cemetery

To Whom It May Concern

I ask that the Landmark Commission deny the Confederate War Memorial removal request of the City of Dallas.

Taking down beautiful statues that represent the past will not erase the past. Whether good or bad, in the opinions of those who view them, these monuments offer opportunities to discuss our heritage and learn from the past.

It is true that many things from the era of the Civil War are wrong by today's standards. I am old enough to remember that the Vietnam War was a time of great division in our Country. But I will never refuse to honor the men who served in that war, even though many did not support it.

I understand that the Confederate War Memorial was moved to the cemetery in 1962 when it was moved from Old City Park to Pioneer Cemetery due to the city creating new roads.

I grew up and lived in Dallas for 35 years. I still take my children and grandchildren back to visit your museums, the zoo and parks. Please protect our history.
Thank you for considering my request.

Respectfully,
Donna Irby

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: paul parker [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:28 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please honor our ancestry as Texans, American, and Southerners by not removing the monument from the downtown cemetery. Only by knowing our history may it not be repeated.

Thank you
Paul Parker

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: CAROL ZACHARY STRYHAL [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument

Trying to erase history by tearing down statues of soldiers is an act of great sadness. Most Confederate soldiers neither owned slaves nor supported the cause, they fought because they had to due mostly to pressure. They endured and payed a terrible price .

People may not have supported the US involvement in the Viet Nam War but surly would not advocate dishonoring the soldiers who fought and died in that conflict.

Carol Stryhal

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: CAROL ZACHARY STRYHAL [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument

Trying to erase history by tearing down statues of soldiers is an act of great sadness. Most Confederate soldiers neither owned slaves nor supported the cause, they fought because they had to due mostly to pressure. They endured and payed a terrible price .

People may not have supported the US involvement in the Viet Nam War but surly would not advocate dishonoring the soldiers who fought and died in that conflict.

Carol Stryhal

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: KATHY HENDON <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:21 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate statue in front of city hall

PLEASE DENY THE APP
for the demolition/removal of the Confederate statue in front of city hall.
Do not let them destroy our history like the did with that wonderful statue of Robert E. Lee in Lee park Kathy Hendon
[REDACTED]

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Loyd Smith [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:16 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Park Cemetery. ATT: Ms. Seale

Dear Ms. Seale,

It is upsetting to think that our treasured Texas Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery could be taken down by those who wish to "erase history". One would think that Americans would not behave in the same manner as the Taliban, when they destroyed the Buddhas of Bamiyan; but unfortunately, some Americans are behaving like the Taliban by doing their best to destroy history via removing historical Southern monuments. I hope this will not be the case for the beautiful Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park. This Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park is one of the oldest (if not THE oldest) public sculptures in Dallas. Its contribution is historical and is humbling. Please do your duty to save history and serve Texans (and Americans) by recognizing the significance of this memorial as part of the history of the city.

Sincerely,

Loyd Smith

Texan and Taxpayer

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Patti Edgar [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:11 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: monument

Dear Ms.Hill,

I am appealing to you to NOT remove the Confederate Memorial in Dallas. It is part of our history of our country. History cannot be erased but must be learned from. These are tactics done by the Nazi's and the Russians. Please do not go that direction.

Sincerely,
Patti Edgar

Patti Edgar
[REDACTED]

Direct: [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Patricia Edgar Travel LLC is an Independent Agency in the Avoya Travel Network
[[https://\[REDACTED\]images/logos/AvoyaUSA/affiliate/logo_250x38.png](https://[REDACTED]images/logos/AvoyaUSA/affiliate/logo_250x38.png)]
CST# 2085569-40 | Fla. Seller of Travel Ref. No. ST36781

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Martha Curry [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:02 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Pioneer Park

Please do not remove the monument from Pioneer Park. It is park of our history and I believe my eleven Confederate Veterans did what they believed was right at the time. Do not erase our history.

Martha Kirkley Curry



Virus-free. www.avq.com

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Russ Foster <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:34 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate statue

I would like you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/rename the war memorial in Pioneer Park.
Russ and Susan Foster

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Janis Susan May Patterson [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:32 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: addendum

In yesterday's email I forgot to mention the Dallas Morning News survey put out last year before the vandalism of the Robert E. Lee statue. It had several options regarding Confederate monuments, which I remember because the whole concept was so egregious. They were : leave the statues alone just as they are - leave the statues but put up explanatory signage - remove the statues to a designated historical park - tear down and destroy the statues like Saddam Hussein's were.

The News congratulated itself and spread the news of the survey far and wide. Until - the results started coming in. When the first option (simply leave the statues alone, period) got close to 70% and the last option (tear them down and destroy) barely reached 3% suddenly the survey disappeared without any explanation - several days before its announced termination date. And - surprise! surprise! - nothing was heard of it ever again. Of course the anti-history crowd just kept on doing what it intended to do - erase our history - in spite of the stated will of the citizens of Dallas.

The question is, why is the ruling body of Dallas so determined to squander tax money on eradicating historical monuments? I believe that the total is close to two million dollars so far and after the Lee statue was stolen, the City Council was so blatant as to say Dallas needed more money and so a tax increase was necessary. That is unacceptable - to go against the wishes of the citizens and then to take even more money from them for doing so.

In far too many places our streets resemble those of third world countries. Our schools need more financing to bring them up to a barely acceptable

scholastic level. We have homeless and hungry and aged and children who need help. The citizens are taxed to death - our tax rate is obscene. And yet the powers that be squandered money uselessly removing world class heroic-sized art pieces - to say nothing of making us a laughing stock of the world. That is hardly to be considered good or even acceptable stewardship of the monies confiscated from the citizens who didn't want the memorials touched at all!

History is history; it is past, over and done with; it is a learning experience. Those who do not remember history - good, bad and indifferent - are condemned to repeat it. Remember, Karl Marx said that the way to destroy a people is to destroy their history.

The question is, are you a representative of the people or are you part of a dictatorship that orders what they want us to accept or else?

Janis Susan May Patterson

...committing crime with style!

...always a good story!

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carol Owen [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:26 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate monument in Pioneer Park

Hello, I am requesting that you deny the application for the certificate of demolition /removal of the Confederate Monument in Pioneer Park.

Thank you. Carol Owen [REDACTED] [REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Cindy R <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:11 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Cc: Doty, Mark
Subject: Demolition and removal of Confederate War Memorial

The only reason to destroy and remove an historical memorial is to attempt to erase and forget history.

As I have recently reviewed some American legends and lies, it occurs to me, the removal of memorials is a challenge to the Bill of Rights and Freedom of speech. There is a history that the memorials commemorate and there are citizens who commissioned, executed and paid for that remembrance.

The headstones around that memorial as well represent memories to those who cared them.

Apparently those who wish to demolish the Confederate memorial have no respect for men and women who are willing to fight for their beliefs and/or were willing to submit themselves to the authority of the government.

I respectfully request you reconsider the demolition of the Confederate Memorial. It portrays a significant episode in American history. Generations to follow must learn from mistakes of the past but will not have that opportunity to investigate without seeing memorials such as the one you wish to destroy.

Thank you for reading my comments.

Cindy Rodibaugh.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: James Turnage <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 9:10 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery
Attachments: The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery.jpg

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. We have come to a crossroads and it is up to you to stand strong and keep its last, largest and oldest historical monument to her Texas sons that served in the Civil War.

The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city; being built and dedicated in 1897 this memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance. It was moved from Old City Park to its current location in 1961 by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas to make room for R. L. Thornton Freeway.

As the oldest public sculpture in the city it is the duty of your commission and that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history.

Respectfully,

J. B. Turnage, Citizen and Taxpayer

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Colleen Lindsey <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:50 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please deny the application of demolition/removal of War Memorial.
Trying to blame Historical Statues over 100 years old for the problems of today.....what a lame excuse.

Respectfully yours,
Colleen Lindsey

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Steve O [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:45 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: demolition or removal of War Memorial in downtown cemetery

It is a crime to demolition or remove the War Memorial that sits in your downtown cemetery! It is not only history, but it will be an expense for what reason? This is history, and if we fail to learn from history we are bound to repeat it!

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Benna Askew <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:39 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the War Memorial which is in the downtown cemetery!!!!

We must keep our history, good or bad!

Benna Askew
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: John Suzow <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:30 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial (Pioneer Park)

Madam,

I find no reason among the five given on the application for CD that the monument referred to in the above subject line should be removed.

No one can call it a "non-contributing structure newer than period of significance".

Nor can they call it a safety threat.

I urge you to not let the Dallas City Council ramrod this through.

Deny them this political stunt.

Thank You,
John Suzow

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jim & Deborah [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 8:07 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Civil War Memorial at Pioneer Park Cemetery

Dear Mrs. Hill,

My name is James B. Collinsworth, Jr. and am a very concerned citizen of the State of Tennessee.

Please hear this plea to deny any application for the certificate of demolition/removal of the Civil War Memorial that sits in Pioneer Park Cemetery.

One of the most beautiful things about Texas when I have the opportunity to visit, as I did at the Capitol in Austin last spring, is to see all the wonderful monuments that have been erected over the years.

You see, My GGG-Uncle was James Collinsworth, the first Chief Justice of the Republic of Texas. It was James that struck the gavel that opened the convention at Washington on the Brazos, March 2, 1836. It was James that nominated Sam Houston to be commander and chief of the Texian Army, it was James Collinsworth who was Chairman of the Military Committee at the Convention. James fought with Sam Houston at San Jacinto. James Collinsworth was acting Secretary of State and signed the Treaty of Velasco.

James Collinsworth's name is forever stamped into Texas History, he is even one of those memorialized on the Hall of State in Dallas.

We accomplish nothing good by destroying monuments like these. History is to be a lesson, both good and bad, so we do not repeat the same mistakes.

Texas and the United States need to remember the Alamo! Texans need to remember the American Civil War. This memorial was erected for the fallen heroes of Texas!

Thank You for hearing my plea. Please do the right thing!

Gratefully Yours,

James B. Collinsworth, Jr.
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: debbie mullins <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:59 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: MONUMENTS

STOP TRYING TO DESTROY OUR NATIONS HISTORY... IF YOU DO NOT LIKE WHAT OUR MONUMENTS STAND FOR THEN YOU NEED TO PACK UP AND MOVE TO A DIFFERENT COUNTRY... THESE MONUMENTS STAND FOR WHAT OUR FOREFATHERS FOUGHT FOR... STOP ... TRYING TO DELETE OUR HISTORY

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Charles and Sadie <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:50 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Cc: Info@GregAbbott.com; LTGConstituent.Affairs@ltgov.state.tx.us
Subject: Application for the certificate of demolition/removal by Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax

My fellow Texans

We implore you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal of any and all historical statues, Confederate or otherwise, from any location in the DFW Metroplex. Texans have a rich history and it must be preserved. To ascertain that one segment of that history is repugnant to all and should be abolished is abhorrent to the majority of my fellow Texans. If we allow the social justice warriors that compose but a microcosm of our society to remove a Confederate statue from a Dallas cemetery, or any other location, think what they will come for next. I can assure you it will be the statue of Sam Houston, or Travis, or Crockett. They will lie and tell you that is not their intention, but you know as well as we do, the eradication of all Texas history is their overall goal,

Again, we implore you to deny this destructive piece of legislation and stop these modern day carpet baggers in their tracks.

Charles and Sadie Traylor

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jean Lattimore <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:49 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Be fair

Do the right thing about this piece of history; take high road, slowly look into what is best!

Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Michael Finn <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:49 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Please Deny the Application

Dear Commissioners:

Please deny the request to move or destroy the War Memorial in the downtown cemetery. Thank you in advance.

Michael P. Finn
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ron Ledbetter <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:32 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please do not approve the destruction of the confederate war memorial. This current trend is a waste of time, money and an attempt to erase history. Our State has a rich history and we can learn from history.

Respectfully,

Peggy Ledbetter

[REDACTED] Sent from my iPhone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ron Ledbetter [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:32 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial

Please do not approve the destruction of the confederate war memorial. This current trend is a waste of time, money and an attempt to erase history. Our State has a rich history and we can learn from history.

Respectfully,
Peggy Ledbetter

[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: David Vandiver <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:27 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monuments

Please STOP this destruction of Statues ,monuments of this Great State and of our Nations history. Removing these will not put an in to the racial hate ,in this Nation. It will still be there these pieces of artwork , pays tribute to Veterans of American . All Monuments and statues need to be protected . thank you

[REDACTED]
David Vandiver [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: JAMES MOYERS [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 7:20 AM
To: Save The Alamo Committee
Cc: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Re: THREAT TO DALLAS CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL JUST GOT MORE URGENT

Mr. Range,

This 70-year-old white Southerner (Tennessee and rural East Texas in my blood) supports the removal of the Dallas Confederate War Memorial.

James A. Moyers, CPA
Dallas, Texas
Sent from my iPhone

On Feb 21, 2019, at 11:16 PM, Save The Alamo Committee <newsletter@savethealamo.us> wrote:

[View this email in your browser](#)



**URGENT EVERYONE!!! WE NEED YOUR
HELP!!!**

Dear Precinct Chair,

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has pulled a fast one. He submitted the certificate of demolition or removal today for the War Memorial that sits in a downtown cemetery and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for the public hearing nor no 65 days for them to consider the certificate.

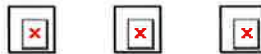
Speakers must register to speak at the 1 p.m. Landmark Commission meeting on March 4th. Letters and emails must be sent to Elaine (Phyllis) Hill and Mark Doty immediately.

Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com

Mark.Doty@dallascityhall.com

It does not matter if you are or aren't a Dallas City/Dallas County resident. It just matters that you appeal for them to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

P.S.—The above information just now reached us. Please send this to your voters. We ask that everybody email the two individuals listed IMMEDIATELY. This could well be our one shot to prevent this disaster. -Rick Range



Copyright © 2019 Save The Alamo Committee, All rights reserved.

You are receiving this email because you signed up on the 'Save the Alamo' website:

<http://www.savethealamo.us>

Our mailing address is:



[Add us to your address book](#)

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Trey South <[REDACTED]>
Sent: Friday, February 22, 2019 10:57 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: confederate statues suck

Put the statues and monuments in museums and teach history from books. Over 80% of the Civil War statues and monuments were put up in the Jim Crow period as a further expression of white supremacy. You can't find a single statue or monument to Hitler or the Nazis anywhere in Germany because they were traitors to their country and subsequently it's against the law to depict them in any manner.

Why should the public be required to respect and honor public traitors to this country?

Trey South

"If you think education is expensive, try paying for ignorance." Derek Bok

"Ars longa, vita brevis." Hippocrates

If there is no wind, row.

---Latin Proverb

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED] TX 75201

Dallas Landmark Commission
Katherine Seale, Chairperson
1500 Marilla St 5 BN
Dallas TX 75201

February 22, 2019

Dear Ms. Seale,

I am writing to you regarding City Manager T.C. Broadnax's request to demolish the Dallas Confederate War Memorial. This monument, which was originally erected 123 years ago in 1896, is Dallas' oldest public sculpture. I respectfully urge the Landmark Commission to deny this request, and to leave the monument alone.

As a US Army veteran, and a historian, I am very concerned at this attempt to remove a historic monument which pays tribute to Confederate veterans' defense of their homes. Confederate Civil War veterans are also US Veterans (according to US Public Law 85-425, 1957). If this removal is allowed now, it will set a dangerous precedent for future generations to attempt to remove additional historic monuments which they may no longer consider favorable. What if future generations wish to remove the Vietnam Veterans Memorial at Fair Park? Unfortunately, if the precedent is set, that would definitely become a possibility.

This issue reminds me of George Orwell's quote from his book 1984: "Every record has been destroyed or falsified, every book rewritten, every picture has been repainted, every statue and street building has been renamed, every date has been altered. And the process is continuing day by day and minute by minute. History has stopped. Nothing exists except an endless present in which the Party is always right."

Again, I urge the Commission to deny the demolition request, and to leave the monument as it is.

Sincerely,


Sean G. Partee

[Redacted Address]

Dallas Landmark Commission
Katherine Seale, Chairperson
1500 Marilla St 5 BN
Dallas TX 75201

February 22, 2019

Dear Ms. Seale,

I am writing to you regarding City Manager T.C. Broadnax's request to demolish the Dallas Confederate War Memorial. I respectfully beg you, and the rest of the Landmark Commission, to deny this request, and to leave the monument alone.

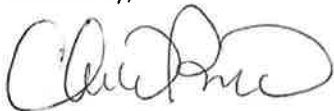
As a descendant of two Confederate Civil War veterans (who are also US Veterans according to US Public Law 85-425, 1957), and a member of several historic lineage societies, I am very concerned at this attempt to remove a historic monument which pays tribute to Confederate veterans' defense of their homes.

By all definitions, this monument, which was originally erected 123 years ago in 1896, is Dallas' oldest public sculpture. If this removal is allowed now, it will set a dangerous precedent for future generations to attempt to remove additional historic monuments which they may no longer consider favorable. What if future generations wish to remove the JFK Memorial? Unfortunately, if the precedent is set, that would definitely become a possibility.

Furthermore, the monument currently stands in a historic cemetery, and it is highly likely that the heavy equipment necessary to remove it would damage the cemetery and disturb the graves that are literally only feet away from the monument. With all of the national media coverage that will certainly result from the demolition, the negative publicity regarding the inevitable disturbance of these graves will be very detrimental to the City.

Again, I urge the Commission to deny the demolition request, and to leave the monument as it is.

Sincerely,



Christie L. Partee

Albert Hendricks



February 22, 2019

Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission

RE: Demolition/Removal of Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery

**Dear Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission:**

I am a native of Dallas and am proud of that. I went to Dallas Public Schools (W.H. Adamson High School) and still live in Oak Cliff. My great-great grandmother is buried in the Pioneer Park Cemetery, very close to the Confederate War Memorial.

This monument honors the men who fought to protect their homes and families during the Civil War. The U.S. Congress has even recognized Confederate Veterans grave sites as U. S. Veterans grave sites. Many in the Pioneer Park Cemetery are Confederate Veterans.

Things like this removal remind me of a book I read in high school, George Orwell's 1984, but then I always return to my No. 1 Book, the **BIBLE**,

Proverbs 22:28: "Do not remove the ancient landmarks which your fathers have set"

Please consider that this monument has been around for well over 100 years (and now all of a sudden needs to be destroyed?). As I close, I wanted to include a photocopy of my relatives at the monument, before it was moved. This was back in the 1920-30's sometime. As a history buff, I just do not believe in destroying our history.

Sincerely,



Albert Hendricks



William J. Bozic, Jr.
[REDACTED]
Houston, Texas [REDACTED]
February 22, 2019

Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission
1500 Marilla Street 5BN
Dallas, TX 75201

Dear Chairperson Seale:

I am a resident of Houston Texas and a retired high school teacher in Cypress Fairbanks ISD. I hold a BA in History and an M. Ed. from the University of Florida. While a college student I took courses in Art History. I am still particularly interested in outdoor sculpture, so any plan to remove any sculpture is abhorrent to me. Artistic expression lends itself to various opinions and causes the viewer to ponder, so I urge you to oppose the removal of any sculpture from the city of Dallas, especially the statue of the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. Removing historic monuments from a cemetery seems contrary to the mission of the landmark commission, so I hope you will consider not destroying this historic outdoor sculpture.

Thank you for your time and efforts in considering my appeal. Please let me know your thoughts on this matter.

Sincerely,



William J. Bozic, Jr.

c/o Katherine Seale - Chairperson
Dallas Land Mark Commission

22 Feb 2019

Dear Chairperson Seale,

I am taking the time to write to request that the commission preserve the old Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. It is one of, if not the, oldest monument in Dallas. Despite the fact that some may find it distasteful, it is a beautiful war memorial that should be preserved. Thank you so much for your consideration of this matter. I hope and pray that Dallas does the right thing and saves this work of art for posterity.

Sincerely,



Ernest C. Kobs, IV



February 22, 2019

Donna Irby
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Katherine Seale

Chair of the Landmark Commission

I ask that the Landmark Commission deny the Confederate War Memorial removal request of the City of Dallas.

Taking down beautiful statues that represent the past will not erase the past. Whether good or bad, in the opinions of those who view them, these monuments offer opportunities to discuss our heritage and learn from the past.

It is true that many things from the era of the Civil War are wrong by today's standards.

I am old enough to remember that the Vietnam War was a time of great division in our Country. But I will never refuse to honor the men who served in that war, even though many did not support it.

I understand that the Confederate War Memorial was moved to the cemetery in 1962 when it was moved from Old City Park to Pioneer Cemetery due to the city creating new roads.

I grew up and lived in Dallas for 35 years. I still take my children and grandchildren back to visit your museums, the zoo and parks. Please protect our history.

Thank you for considering my request.

Respectfully,



Donna Irby

Please see this priceless piece
of history.

Julie Bernman



P.S. It's so far tucked into the
corner no one can see it
unless that is what they are
looking for.

People should be grateful for
this great country, the benefits we
have. We have so much.

**Katherine Seale, Chairperson
Dallas Landmark Commission**

Dear Ms. Seale,

The Dallas Landmark Commission has the responsibility of protecting the history of our community. The Confederate Memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery is the oldest public monument in the city. It was moved to this location by prior responsible members of the City of Dallas.

This memorial fits all the requirements for age, contribution, and historical significance necessary for preservation. The duty of your commission is that of a responsible group of citizens recognizing the significance of the memorial as part of the history of the city. Your responsibility is to save our history. Not only that, the monument is a beautiful work of art that deserves the respect of current leaders for preservation.

These removal efforts are very divisive within the community. I implore you as a past resident of Dallas (graduate of Hillcrest High in 1979) to resist these efforts to rewrite our history and destroy our heritage. Are you aware that there are upwards of 75,000,000 descendants of Confederate Veterans across Texas and the USA. They (we) deserve our memorials. Our ancestors worked hard to raise funds to pay for these memorials. There is provenance back to an earlier citizenry of Big D. They were good people just as you are a good person or you wouldn't be involved civically. These memorials were not state sponsored or subsidized and the city of Dallas should be proud to display memorials such as this one that pays homage to those who came before us.

My confederate veteran ancestors who wore the grey were defending their land and property against the invasion of people from the north, whose mission was subjugation and empire. I submit that my people were the real defenders of freedom and the whole constitution of the United States of America.

What is happening across the southland these days has been tried before. This type of cultural genocide occurred in 1930's Germany and more recently in Iraq and Syria by members of ISIS. Do you want to be likened to these aggressive factions? Confederate is not a bad word. As I'm sure you know, Washington and Jefferson were southerners and proud of it. Will you be after their memorials next? I submit that your actions here open the door for that consideration. And I also submit that if the issue to remove this memorial were on a ballot, it would fail.

Sincerely,

Kevin McCall, Precinct Chairman, Smith County, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Jannlynch [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 4:05 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Memorial

Landmark Commission, Dallas

The Southern States should have a voice in the history of the United States. It should anger all people in the South to have their history taken away. All history has good and bad, because there will always be good and bad people whose stories make it. This becomes particularly important when one takes into account the fact that the generally accepted definition of what is good and bad changes over time. If you were living in the South during the War Between the States, you were most likely concerned about your loved ones, family and friends who would suffer economically as well as lose husbands, fathers, brothers and sons defending their homeland from an invading army. Most had grandfathers and fathers who had helped create the United States and had their own ideas about States' rights and a large Federal government. That war was devastating on both North and South. Each wanted those who had given their lives for what they believed was the correct political view to be remembered. Many mothers would never know where their sons and husbands were buried. They wanted some monument to honor their deceased sons (some as young as 12) who were not able to live a productive life. Many women contributed nickels and dimes they had saved so there would be something – a monument- for future generations to see that would show the sacrifice their sons, husbands and fathers made in a war many of them did not want.

These monuments inspire people to study and search for truth in history. They are an important part of the story of the people that helped create a large part of our country's history. Why would so many young men give their lives for their homeland and not have the right to tell their stories? Even the Northern States allowed Southern mothers and wives to place monuments then without protest.

Most African Americans and Caucasians in the South helped one another carry on and endure in such devastating times after that war. My great grandfather fought in that war at age 15. I have a picture of him and his black friend. They grew up together and after the war, they farmed beside each other until they died. The remains of their log cabins can still be seen on the land.

If we tried to record the personal stories of people instead of tearing down and destroying their memorials, stories, and history, we might leave future generations with a better understanding of their experiences. If we take note of the sacrifices they made in that war and the difficulties they had to overcome, we might be less judgmental of all people regardless of their race or political view.

The parents of Trayvon Martin created the Trayvon Martin Foundation dedicated to honoring and perpetuating his memory and that of other young black men who lost their lives tragically to gun violence. My husband and I recently attended a banquet to see our daughter receive an award from the Trayvon Martin Foundation. She is a literary agent who represents people who want to tell their stories. I couldn't help but wonder how the mothers at that banquet would feel if someone wanted to erase or tear down the "monuments" they were creating to tell the stories of those young men whose lives were tragically cut short.

In each generation, there are physical and documentary markers and monuments created to tell the stories of men and women whose stories and lives need to be told. These newer monuments and markers, just like the old monument in Dallas dedicated to long dead sons, husbands and fathers, deserve to be there. Don't the mothers and wives of Southern soldiers deserve as much? The South deserves a voice in history and every Southerner, black and white, should unite for that cause together. Instead of spending millions of dollars tearing down each other's history, we should be

2/24/2019

Welcome to Dallas Pioneer Park Cemetery, 154 years of Dallas history in the making!

3/31/1948

The Dallas City Council, following a recommendation by City Manager Roderic B. Thomas refuses a request by JB Bonham Chapter of DRT to take over and maintain Old Cemetery . Reason given was the cemetery was the property of E. W. Morton & Rhodes S. Baker

10/1951

The City of Dallas assumes responsibility for the care & maintenance of Dallas Pioneer Park Cemetery

12/1/1954

White granite marker placed in " Pioneer Memorial Cemetery " in memory of John Neely Bryan "First Citizen of Dallas" which was sponsored by JB Bonham Chapter of DRT & Mrs. Carlisle. The cemetery is now cared for by the City Parks Dept. & contains an estimated 800 graves

5/23/1955

New tombstone dedication by Mrs. Carlisle, Tom Plath Green & Rev. Harry Sarles at the cemetery on grave of Chaplain Dempsey W. Broughton

9/25/1956

Harry S. Miller, Sr. appointed by Judge Sarah Hughes as trustee of the old Jewish Akard St. Cemetery because "City of Dallas might try to abate it as a nuisance". Miller's petition says the cemetery was established in 1874 after George Swink gave 4500 square feet to Old Hebrew Benevolent Assn for burial grounds. 52 persons were buried there. Emil Tillman (d. 1915) was last trustee

5/28/1952

New tombstone dedication for Rev. George Rottenstein (Episcopalian minister) and John Long (veteran of 3 wars) held at cemetery

1957

\$8.5 million Dallas Memorial Auditorium opens

3/30/1958

City plans Park for Auditorium. City owns Odd Fellows & Masonic cemeteries & wants to acquire Old City Cemetery

8/12/1961

City moves Confederate Monument of Robt E. Lee, Jefferson Davis, Stonewall Jackson & Albert Sidney Johnston with 60 foot obelisk with confederate soldier from its 1896 location in then City park, which was formerly Sullivan park, to Pioneer Park near Dallas Memorial Auditorium because of installation of RL Thornton Frwy. The 1896 dedication of the monument, which was an all day event, was attended by 400 Confederate & 65 Union veterans. No plans to rededicate the monument in its new location.

7/11/1962

Parks Dept officials negotiate with donor to purchase Old City Cemetery to create "an attractive city park near the Auditorium" per article in the Dallas Morning News. Mayor Earle Cabell suggests "any existing graves could be moved to a central location with an appropriate marker. Winfield Morton is part owner of a 1.4 acre tract.

8/8/1964

John Ormshee Simonds of Pittsburgh , President of American Society of Landscape Architects, gives first place to fulfillment of the City's plans for Pioneer Park (7 acre open tract adjacent to the Memorial Auditorium on S. Akard) in his listings of three opportunities to create a "green park-like heart" in Downtown Dallas, quotes Sam Acheson article on this date

3/18/1969

City acquires Old City Cemetery and City Manager Scott McDonald says "cemetery contains just a few scattered graves" and is not maintained. The rest of the cemetery area will be utilized as downtown "open space". The city agrees to go to court to remove the dedication of the land for cemetery purposes and pay for re-interment of bodies at a different location.

Congressional Recognition of Confederate Veterans with same rights as any American Veteran

Documentation of legislation giving Confederates the same rights as any US serviceman: The complete act can be found in the United States Statutes At Large (passed by the 85th Congress in 1958) part 1, volume 72, pages 133-134, and is known as Public Law 85-425.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,
Section 432 (e) "For the purpose of this section, and section 433, the term 'veteran' includes a person who served in the military or naval forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War, and the term 'active, military or naval service' includes active service in such forces."

Section 410

"The Administrator shall pay to each person who served in the military or naval forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War a monthly pension in the same amounts and subject to the same conditions as would have been applicable to such person under the laws in effect on December 31, 1957, if his service in such forces had been service in the military or naval service of the United States."

Section 2

This Act shall be effective from the first day of the second calendar month following its enactment.

Approved May 23, 1958.

CITY OF DALLAS § Response to Application for
 § Certificate of Demolition or Removal
LANDMARK COMMISSION § 1201 Marilla; CD 189-007(LC)

TO THE HONORABLE MEMBERS OF THE LANDMARK COMMISSION:

Statement of the Case. The city government of Dallas has applied for a certificate of demolition or removal of the Confederate Monument, which the application describes as an historic structure located within the Pioneer Cemetery Historic Overlay District. The city government seeks demolition or removal on the claimed grounds that the structure is "...non-contributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historical significance." DALLAS CITY CODE 51A-4.501(h)(2)(B)(iv).

Applicable Rule of Decision. The landmark commission must deny an application to demolish or remove a structure that is noncontributing to the historic overlay district because it is newer than the period of historic significance unless it finds that:

- (i) the structure is non-contributing to the historic overlay district;
- (ii) the structure is newer than the period of historic significance for the historic overlay district; and
- (iii) demolition of the structure will not adversely affect the historic character of the property or the integrity of the historic overlay district. DALLAS CITY CODE 51A-4.501(h)(3)(D).

Each of these will be addressed in turn.

Evidence and Exhibits. Eight photographs of Pioneer Cemetery and the Confederate Monument are attached to this response. In addition, the following exhibits are also provided:

Exhibit A – A copy of the ordinance establishing the Pioneer Cemetery Historic Overlay District

Exhibit B – A copy of the Pioneer Cemetery Landmark Nomination Form

Exhibit C – Dallas Morning News clipping, June 30, 1897, page 1

Exhibit D - Dallas Morning News clipping, June 30, 1897, page 2

Exhibit E - Dallas Morning News clipping, August 12, 1961

Exhibit F - Dallas Morning News clipping, October 13, 1997

Exhibit G – TSHA article, Frank Teich

Exhibit H = Houston History, Frank Teich

ONLY monument or marker identified by name. It must, therefore, receive the protection afforded by the ordinance.

Staff concedes that the monument is an “impressive historic structure” and is the “oldest piece of city-owned art.” Actually, it is even better than that. A 1997 Dallas Morning News article about the rededication of the monument that year characterized it as “...the city’s oldest monument in the city’s oldest cemetery.” That sounds pretty contributing.

Definition of “contributing.” The city government purports to rely on “guidance” from the National Park Service. Notably, however, they fail provide a copy of it, or even include a specific citation to it. It is impossible to adequately respond to such an assertion without benefit of the actual wording and the context. In fairness, the Commission should not consider it – especially when guidance can be found within the City Code.

Code Provisions. While the Overlay and Conservation District Regulations (DALLAS CITY CODE DIV. 51A-4.500) do not provide a specific definition of “contributing,” there are, nevertheless, suggestions elsewhere in the code as to its meaning. For example, the code provision regarding historic property tax incentives defines a “contributing structure” as a “...structure that retains its essential architectural integrity of design and whose architectural style is typical of or integral to a historic district.” DALLAS CITY CODE ART. XI, SEC. 51A-11.102. Comparison of photographs and images of the monument as it was in Old City Park and in Pioneer Cemetery show that it has retained the same form. (see photographs). As previously noted, many of those commemorated lie in nearby graves. The presence of an authentic monument of that period with a significant connection to those interred there is powerful evidence that it is integral to the district.

Frank Teich, designer. The identity of the designer is also relevant to the “integrity of design” issue. The Handbook of Texas Online entry for the designer, Frank Teich, notes that he “...was responsible for, or worked on, many monuments throughout Texas and other states, many of them Confederate monuments in the southern states.” Handbook of Texas Online, *Teich, Frank*, accessed February 27, 2019, <http://www.tshaonline.org/handbook/online/articles/fte05>. (Exhibit G). The entry also notes his work on the statue “Grief” in Scottsville Cemetery near Marshall, Texas. *supra*. An article in the Houston History magazine (Exhibit H) notes his work on the Texas Capitol and many Houston monuments, including a number in cemeteries. Susan Teich, *Frontier Sculptor Remembered Through His Houston Monuments*, Houston History, Vol. 10, No. 2, <https://houstonsourcemagazine.org/wp-content/uploads/2013/07/Teich-final-proof.pdf> (accessed 28 February 2019). Thus, his work is representative of monuments of the time, including those in cemeteries. The Confederate Monument is obviously much larger than any other monument or marker in the cemetery, but its style is obviously typical of funerary monuments of the time. The monument has a strong connection to Dallas history and is located among some of those it sought to honor. It is hard to imagine how it could be more integral to the district.

The Monument as a Physical Record. The City Code actually incorporates certain provisions from the Secretary of the Interior’s Standards for the Rehabilitation of Historic Properties, which the Commission is directed to consider when reviewing certificates of appropriateness. It is instructive to examine those in this context:

(7) Unique visual feature: Unique location of singular physical characteristics representing an *established and familiar visual feature* of a neighborhood, community or the city that is a source of pride or *cultural significance*.

DALLAS CITY CODE SEC. 51A-4.501(b). (in part).

The building and dedication of the monument was a significant historical event. A Dallas Morning News article from 1897 opens with the report that the monument was unveiled “With impressive ceremonies and in the presence of a vast concourse of people...” Dallas Morning News, 30 Apr. 1897, Final Edition, p. 1. NewsBank, infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/image/v2:0F99DDB671832188@EANX10728979A3F51FB8@2414045-10728979D0E2F7B0@1?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019. It was further reported that “The street parade by the Daughters of the Confederacy, ex-confederate veterans and military, civic and industrial organizations yesterday was the most imposing ever witnessed in the history of Dallas.” *supra*. The article covered the first and second pages of the newspaper that day and described in detail the numerous persons of note in attendance, including Governor Culberson and members of the Legislature. The presence of a number of former Union soldiers was also noted:

One of the pleasing features of the day was the fact of the participancy in the exercises of large numbers of ex-union soldiers. It was no uncommon sight to witness the erstwhile deadly foes arm in arm, each recounting scenes of the long ago. It has been truly said that in no country on earth could bitter enmities be so soon forgotten and relegated to the past.

Supra, at p. 2.

Certainly, the former slaves in the city probably did not see much to celebrate. Today, many view the monument as controversial and divisive. But this Commission is not called upon in these proceedings to take sides in such matters. The relevant considerations are historical. There is no question that the monument is representative of the historical development of Dallas and Texas. Many prominent people of the time were Confederate veterans or members of the daughters of the Confederacy. However, they were more than just that – they were also people who contributed to the culture and development of the city and the state. It is not in keeping with historical preservation, or even healthy, to obliterate their memory. Yet, that seems to be the intent of the city government. It is perverse to argue, as they do, that an admittedly historic and impressive artifact of history should be hidden away in a warehouse only because it is “removed from its original historic context” when that context was destroyed and cannot be restored.

II. Period of Historical significance.

The second finding that must be made is whether the *structure* is newer than the period of historic significance for the historic overlay district. The period of historic significance was established in the cemetery ordinance as “the period from 1849 to 1921.” DALLAS CITY ORD. 24938 Ex. A, para. 1.8, p. 4. It is immediately evident that the *structure* itself fits perfectly within the period of significance. The city government, however, chooses to focus on the fact that the monument

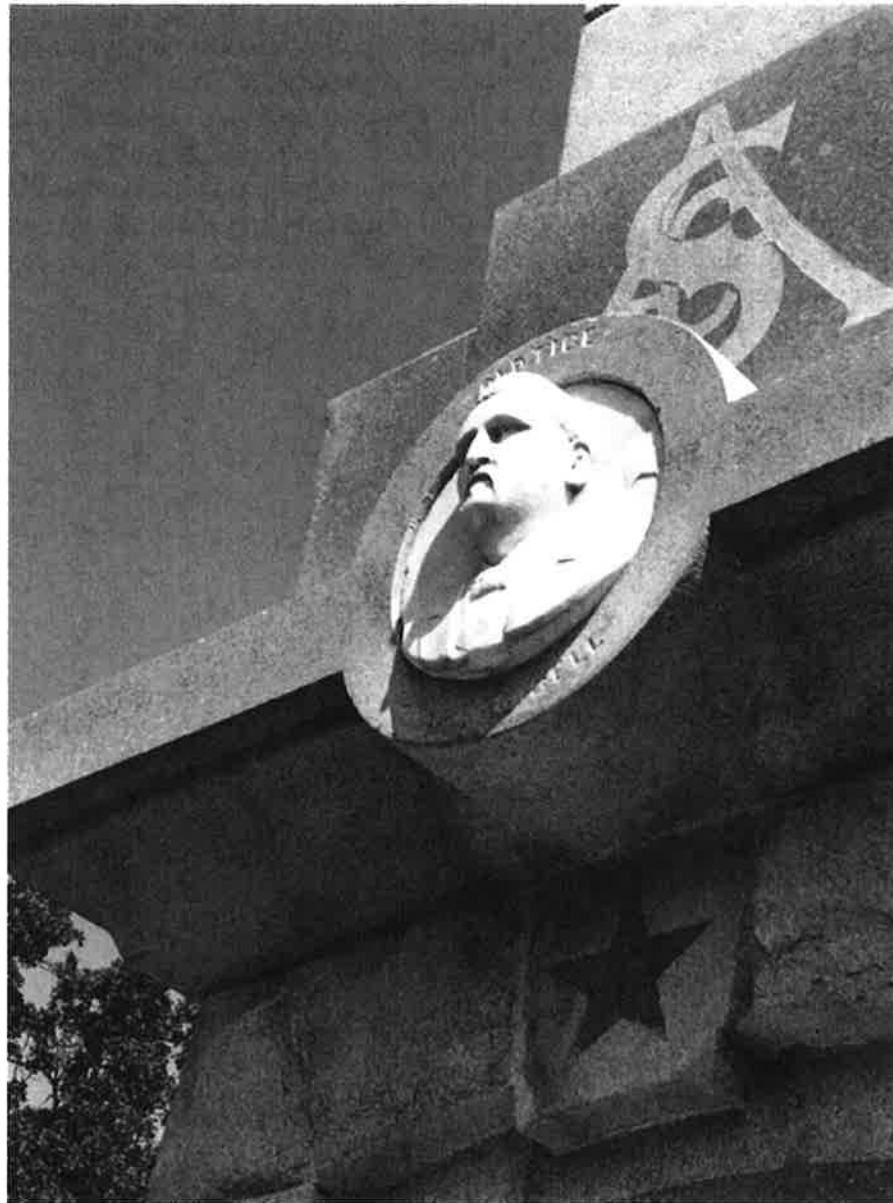
it is the duty of the Commission to recognize the historic significance of the monument to the historic district of which is a part.

The city government has presented no evidence that the removal of the monument will not adversely impact the historic character or integrity of the district. The remarks in the staff report are merely conclusory. Here's an impact: it won't be there anymore. There will be a vacant patch of ground where a significant piece of Dallas history once stood. Regardless of your preferred version of or interpretation of history, there is no question that the monument is a significant physical artifact of that history. Passions, political views, and prejudices should not be relevant to your determination of this case. Historical significance is relevant, and should be the only basis upon which you decide this case.

Respectfully Submitted

Kenneth R. Bennett
8416 Baumgarten Dr.
Dallas, TX 75228

Photograph 2



Pioneer Cemetery
William Lewis Cabell
Brigadier General, CSA
Mayor of Dallas, 1874-1876, 1877-1879, 1883-1885.
Nickname: "Old Tige"
Grandfather of Earle Cabell, Dallas Mayor and U.S. Congressman
(roundel on Confederate Monument)

Photograph 4



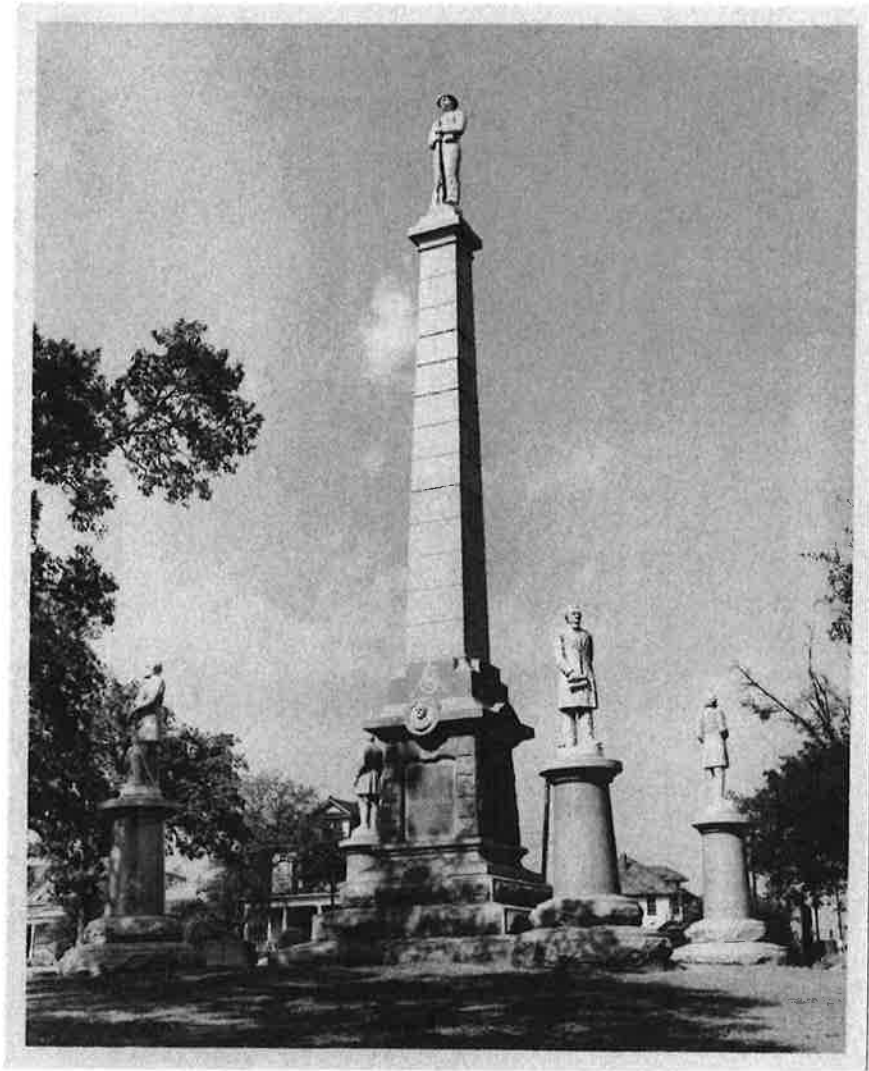
Pioneer Cemetery
Historical marker for John Lane

Photograph 6



Pioneer Cemetery
Historical marker for James K. Polk Record
CSA

Photograph 8



Dallas (Tex.). [The Confederate Memorial], photograph, September 16, 1960; (texashistory.unt.edu/ark:/67531/metaph129095/; accessed February 26, 2019), University of North Texas Libraries, The Portal to Texas History, texashistory.unt.edu; crediting Dallas Municipal Archives.

Veil Has Been Drawn

Dallas Morning News - April 30, 1897

Article Type: News Article Page: 1 Location: Dallas, Texas

Copyright: © This entire product and/or portions thereof are copyrighted by NewsBank and/or the American Antiquarian Society. 2004.

Article Piece: 1 of 2

VEIL HAS BEEN DRAWN.

CONFEDERATE MONUMENT STANDS REVEALED IN ALL ITS BEAUTY, SYMMETRY AND PURITY.

IMPRESSIVE, GREAT PARADE.

THOUSANDS AND THOUSANDS OF PEOPLE PARTICIPATE AND DELIGHT IN THE EXERCISES.

ORATORY AND BATTLE OF FLOWERS.

Imposung Scene When the Cavelling Took Place—Banquet in the Afternoon—Notes and Stucies.

With impressive ceremonies and in the presence of a vast concourse of people, the monument erected in the city park by the Daughters of the Confederacy to perpetuate the valor and fortitude shown in the memory of the heroes of the south, was unveiled yesterday.

It was a perfect day and a magnificent audience. In that great assemblage were thousands of gray-haired and scarred veterans of the Lost Cause, to pay homage to the glories of the past, a tribute to the chivalrous dead.

The daughter and grandchildren of Jefferson Davis, the widow of one of the most illustrious and dashing chieftains, Stonewall Jackson, and the niece of that splendid Louisiana soldier, Gen. Beauregard, were the honored guests of the occasion.

Hon. John H. Reagan, for fifty years a prominent figure in national life and the surviving member of the confederate cabinet, was the orator of the day, as to him was assigned the pleasant duty of paying a tribute to the valor, statesmanship and sublime courage of his dead friend and chief executive of that government which fell—Jefferson Davis.

Thousands of the fairest daughters of Texas and thousands of her bravest sons were present on this occasion. Hoary age and blushing manhood were represented. The beauty and chivalry of this fair land was there. There were many thrilling incidents and pathetic scenes. The widow of Jackson and the daughter of Davis were wildly cheered by the old heroes who were the gray and the young who love the men who fought for the cause that was emboldened forever at Appomattox. The familiar figure of "Old Fitz" was making its way to the right of his friends. Judge Reagan was given a whirlwind of applause when the crowd caught sight of him on the platform and again when introduced by Capt. Flatow as "the noblest Roman of them all."

The street parade was the largest and most imposing ever witnessed in this city and the decorated carriages and floats filled



JULIA JACKSON-CHRISTIAN GRANDDAUGHTER OF STONEWALL JACKSON.

with stately matrons, beautiful girls and bright-faced children added to the attract-

the other side, who said in his dying moments, "Let us have peace."

An Imposung Pageant.

The street parade by the Daughters of the Confederacy, ex-confederate veterans and military, civic and industrial organizations yesterday was the most imposing ever witnessed in the history of Dallas. The decorated floats and private carriages of citizens formed a most attractive feature of the street display.

Capt. A. P. Wessendorf officiated as grand marshal with twenty assistants, all mounted on spirited chargers.

The first division formed on Preston street with its head resting on Commerce street, with Mr. E. G. Knight as assistant marshal. First came Chief of Police J. C. Arnold and platoon of mounted police, headed by the Dallas union band, with Honorary Grand Marshal E. G. Bower, the commander of Camp Sterling Price and his staff, Gov. Charles A. Culberson, Gen. W. H. Mabry and Col. L. J. Polk and Lieut. J. H. Normoy's were seated in an open carriage with Cole L. M. Standifer, E. A. Stuart and Mayor G. W. Foster, mounted, as a guard of honor. Judge John H. Reagan, Hon. Norman G. Kittrell and Miss Kittrell rode in an open carriage. Then came elegantly decorated carriages in which were seated Mrs. Hayes, Jeff Hayes Davis, Lucy Hayes and Mrs. Kate Cabell Currier; Mrs. Stonewall Jackson and family, with Mrs. M. L. Crawford; Daughters of the Confederacy in carriages and the orators of the day. In this division appeared the visiting legislators in carriages placed at their disposal by the Dallas Commercial club. President J. F. Zang, James Moroney and other leading members of the Commercial club were in line. Also the members of the city council and other officials of the municipal government. The float bearing the representative maidens of the sixteen confederate states and territories rode in a float that attracted attention on account of its beautiful decorations and fair inmates, who were robed in white and laced down with floral offerings. Personnel of the party:

for their departure from the school grounds. The third division was commanded by Capt. Ben E. Cabell, which was headed by the Dallas fire department. Then came a decorated float containing Daughters of the Confederacy, closely followed by carriages in which were seated Sons of Hermann, the Turners and members of other social and benevolent organizations, Patriarchs Militant, uniformed rank Knights of Pythias and union printers.

The uniformed rank of the Ancient Order of Hibernians were in the third division, commanded by Capt. Hugh J. Blakenev. The knights had one of the handsomest equipages for their sponsor and party in the entire parade. It was drawn by four white horses, was elegantly decorated. Green was the color theme. Miss Marguerite Flanagan was the sponsor of the Hibernian Knights. Her maids of honor were Misses Annie Richardson and Annie Kivian. Mrs. P. E. Davoren was the chaperone. Miss Flanagan carried a magnificent floral harp in the colors of the Daughters of the Confederacy. It bore this inscription: "From the Daughters of Erin to the Daughters of the Confederacy." Later in the day the floral harp was presented to the Daughters of the Confederacy and was the first offering of its kind placed on the streets of the immortal Robert E. Lee.

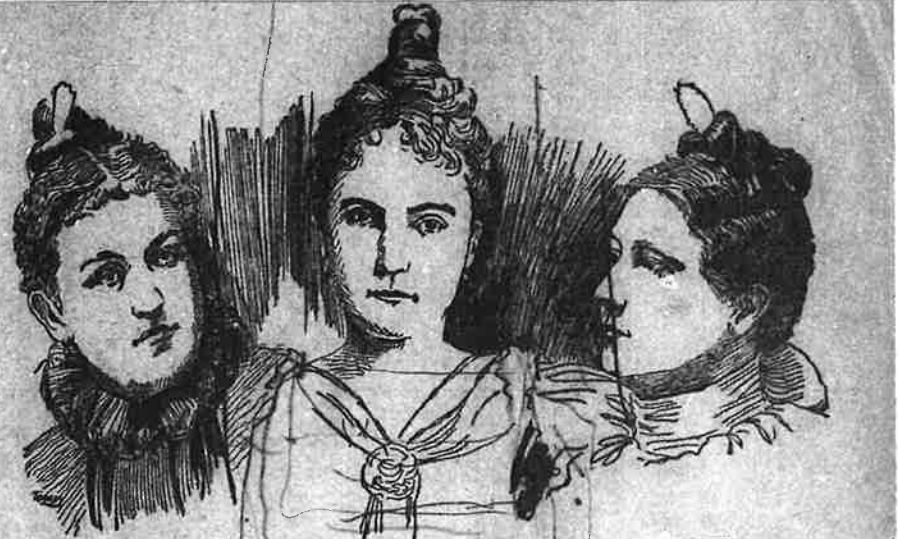


MRS. MARGARET HOWELL DAVIS HAYES, THE DAUGHTER OF JEFFERSON DAVIS.

Dallas five No. 8 Ladies of the Maccabees, and the ladies of the T. L. F. B. and T. societies had decorated carriages in this division, with members of their respective orders seated therein. The fourth division was commanded by Mr. K. J. Kivian, president of the Dallas Manufacturers' association. The Carpenters and Joiners' union had 300 men in line. The Manufacturers' association had three large decorated floats in this division, filled with young girls appropriately costumed. The decorations were elaborate. The manufacturers had upwards of 800 men in line, and were jubilant over the showing made.

The Improved Order of Red Men, fifty strong, in war paint and feathers and Apache costumes, served at the rear guard. The Red Men were mounted on feet Indian ponies, commanded by War Chief V. P. Armstrong, "Big Medicine Man," and created a sensation. Seven or eight hundred ex-confederate veterans, members of Camp Sterling Price and visiting brethren, formed on Brady, near Canton, and marched to the city park grounds. The parade was reviewed by Gov. Culberson, Judge Reagan, Messames Hayes and Jackson and other prominent personage near the entrance to the park grounds. The line of march was given in the afternoon of yesterday. There wasn't a jar or an accident from start to finish, and it was the most successful street demonstration in the history of the metropolis.

Grand Marshal Wessendorf was assisted by the following aides: T. E. Menogou, James Secord, H. H. Williams, E. A. Stuart, J. M. Carey, I. M. Standifer, Albert Jackson, Richard L. Winfrey, Henry Boston, R. C. Glover, E. L. Gaston, E. O. Ness, Fred Weldon, Mark Ellison, E. J. Camp, J. E. Robertson, L. H. Hester, Ben M. Melton, John Herford, A. A. Madden, Price Cross, John N. Simpson, Tom Ryan, Robt. Astin, Dr. E. J. Oano, Tom Vardell, L. D. Jolley, Hunter Craycroft, Manning Shannon, Hugh Stratton, Geo. V. Hughes, Sam L. Randall,



MRS. KATE M. BRYAN, Vice President of the Daughters of the Confederacy.

MRS. KATE CABELL CURRIE, President of the Daughters of the Confederacy.

MRS. E. M. PATTERSON, Secretary of the Daughters of the Confederacy.

the city of Dallas. Capt. Flatow announced that owing to the illness of that gentleman Col. W. L. Crawford, Texas' silver-tongued son, had consented to take the place of the chief executive of the city. On behalf of the people of Texas, Gov. C. A. Culberson was introduced to deliver the address of welcome. "He will speak for the greatest state in the greatest coun-

try on earth," said Capt. Flatow, "and he is the great governor of the Lone Star state and the son of a grand old confederate soldier." The governor met with a most cordial reception.



MRS. STONEWALL JACKSON.

Mrs. Hayes and her children and Mrs. Stonewall Jackson and her grandchildren were each in turn introduced to the vast audience. The ladies were escorted to the front and bowed their acknowledgments. After the cheering had subsided, Adjt. Charles L. Martin of Camp Sterling Price was introduced, and in the name of that organization, welcomed the old soldiers and their friends.

The unveiling ceremonies proper were then begun. Hon. John H. Reagan pronounced the eulogy on Jefferson Davis. His address was liberally applauded, although his voice was weak and the wind was strong. At the conclusion of his speech Young Jefferson Hayes Davis pulled the cord, the veiling was torn away and the

face and form of the president of the confederacy were revealed. Judge Reagan delivered an address on the life and character of Jefferson Davis.

Hon. George N. Aldridge pronounced the eulogy on Gen. Robert E. Lee and Miss Lucy Hayes pulled the cord. Judge Aldridge was in perfect form, and his voice was clear-toned as a bell. His well-ordered sentences elicited warm applause from start to finish.

Hon. Henry W. Lightfoot of the court of civil appeals eulogized his old commander, Stonewall Jackson, and the oldest grandchild of the Christian soldier, unveiled the statue. His remarks were liberally applauded.

Hon. Norman G. Kittrell of Houston paid a masterly tribute to Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, "Texas' adopted son," and Jeff Hayes Davis unveiled the statue. "The Private Soldier" was the subject assigned to Hon. A. T. Watts on the programme. Capt. Flatow introduced the speaker and the privates must have been numerous in the huge audience, as the judge was given an ovation. At the close of his eloquent tribute to the private soldier of the armies of the confederacy, the main shaft and the central figure of the monument were unveiled and the ceremonies were over.

Then came the "battle of flowers." Miss Beauregard of San Antonio placed a magnificent floral piece on the Johnson statue, and A. P. Gray, who was an eye witness to the killing of the dashing soldier on Sumner's bloody battle-ground, also placed his tribute there. All the attitudes and the torso of the main shaft of the monument were strewn with flowers by the Daughters of the Confederacy, the ex-confederates and other admirers of the dead heroes of this departed confederacy. The representatives of the seceding states and territories were among those who placed garlands at the base of the monument. Mrs. K. L. Barlow chaperoned the party. The personnel was as follows:

- Virginia—Miss Bessie Goodie,
- North Carolina—Miss Mary Nuckols,
- South Carolina—Miss Alice Taylor,
- Tennessee—Miss Irene Graham,
- Alabama—Miss Raak Dyaterbach,
- Georgia—Miss Leslie Pearson,
- Florida—Miss Lola Steele,
- Mississippi—Miss Sallie Bryan,
- Arkansas—Miss Clara Hardy.



America's News - Historical and Current

MLA Citation:

Dallas Morning News, 30 Apr. 1897, Final Edition, p. 2. *NewsBank*,
infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/image/v2:0F99DDB671832188@EANX-10728979A3F51FB8@2414045-
10728979D0E2F7B0@1?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019.

Full Page

Dallas Morning News - Friday, April 30, 1897

Article Type: Full Page **Page:** 2 **Location:** Dallas, Texas

Copyright: © This entire product and/or portions thereof are copyrighted by NewsBank and/or the American Antiquarian Society. 2004.

America's News - Historical and Current

MLA Citation:

"Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park." *Dallas Morning News*, 12 Aug. 1961, Final Edition, 1, p. 11. *NewsBank*, infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/image/v2:0F99DDB671832188@EANX-100115EBA10A8E22@2437524-100115EBD4C0315D@10-100115EDABB39BC8?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019.

Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park

Dallas Morning News - August 12, 1961

Article Type: News Article **Page:** 11 **Location:** Dallas, Texas

Copyright: © This entire service and/or content portions thereof are copyrighted by NewsBank and/or its content providers.

OUSTED BY FREEWAY

Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park

A monumental exodus Friday brought the esteemed 85-year-old Confederate monument from City Park to a new home in Pioneer Park near Dallas Memorial Auditorium.

The long vigil of the four generals and the over-riding Confederate soldier was abruptly interrupted by new R. L. Thornton Freeway, cutting into City Park.

Already spotted at their new locations are Robert E. Lee, Jefferson Davis, Stonewall Jackson

and Albert Sidney Johnston, whose granite figures at lower level, surrounded the 60-foot shaft bearing the Confederate soldier. H. P. Carney Construction Co. still faces the problem of moving the tall shaft and its stone replica of yesterday's Johnny Reb.

The monument was erected on June 25, 1896, in what was then known as Sullivan Park, after one of Dallas' most elaborate parades up to that time.

Rebel yells interspersed the 2-hour dedication ceremony that day, and the oratory "could be heard 20 blocks away," a contemporary report stated.

The monument was achieved mostly by the Daughters of the Confederacy, headed by Mrs. Kate Cabell Currie. It stood for years as a reminder of valorous Southern men who fought for a lost cause.

Placed on the central shaft is a bust of Gen. W. L. Cabell (Mayor Earle Cabell's grandfather), known as Old Tige.

A copy of *The Dallas News* and Confederate money were placed within the cornerstone, and oil and wine were poured on the block of Texas stone as Masonic rites ended. But the crowds remained in the park all day to celebrate the festive occasion.

Joining in the dedication program that day in 1896 were 400 Confederates and 63 Federal veterans.

No plans to re-dedicate the famed old monument have been announced. But with the new Dallas Memorial Auditorium as a magnet, the reminder of gallant fighters in a lost cause will attract more and more viewers in the years ahead.



- Dallas News Staff Photo.

Four generations—including Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson—formed an advance party as they took up new stations at Pioneer Park

near Dallas Memorial Auditorium. The Confederate soldier on his 60-foot shaft will be moved from City Park next week.

America's News - Historical and Current

MLA Citation:

Thurman, Nita. "Monumental devotion 100-year-old Confederate memorial rededicated after statues mended." *The Dallas Morning News*, 13 Oct. 1997, HOME FINAL, NEWS, p. 25A. *NewsBank*, infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/news/0ED3D953AC32AAF3?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019.

Monumental devotion 100-year-old Confederate memorial rededicated after statues mended

Dallas Morning News, The (TX) (Published as The Dallas Morning News) - October 13, 1997

Author/Byline: Nita Thurman, Staff Writer of The Dallas Morning News **Edition:** HOME FINAL **Section:** NEWS **Page:** 25A

In 1897, more than 450 soldiers who knew firsthand the bloody battlefields of the Civil War gathered at Dallas' old Sullivan Park to dedicate a memorial to Confederate soldiers and their lost cause.

Sunday - 100 years and six months later - some of their descendants met in front of the Convention Center to rededicate Dallas' oldest monument, which recently was restored after a century of erosion and neglect.

Edward C. Smith, a black professor at American University in Washington and a nationally known Civil War historian, called Sunday's ceremony another step toward "closing a circle" that began with America's fight for freedom in 1776.

Blacks and whites fought for freedom in the American Revolution and the Civil War, Mr. Smith said in a speech to the gathering.

He did not judge either side in the Civil War.

"What I have been trying to say today is that this is about reconciliation of the races," he said.

The monument consists of a 60-foot column surrounded by statues of Confederate President Jefferson Davis and Gens. Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson and Albert Sidney Johnson. An unnamed Confederate private stands atop the column.

Dallas' Chapter 6 of the United Daughters of the Confederacy donated the monument to Dallas a century ago. Current members, in partnership with Dallas' Adopt-A-Monument and the city's Office of Cultural Affairs, took on the restoration in 1992. features in place, the statues stand squarely at one corner of Pioneer Park. The historic park and cemetery is tucked away between City Hall and the Convention Center and is just east of Pioneer Plaza's bronze cattle.

Women in hooped skirts and bonnets placed wreaths at the statues' feet Sunday as a bugler blew taps. Men in Confederate uniforms carried battle flags, the Stars and Bars and the Stars and Stripes. A band played "Dixie." When the Confederate monument was first dedicated in April 1897 at Sullivan Park, now Old City Park, there were elaborate parades and noisy, daylong festivities.

"Rebel yells interspersed the two-hour dedication ceremony that day, and the oratory could be heard 20 blocks away," according to an 1897 newspaper report.

In 1961, the monument was moved to Pioneer Park because it was in the way of construction of R.L. Thornton Freeway. That move placed the city's oldest monument in the city's oldest cemetery.

America's News - Historical and Current

MLA Citation:

"Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park." *Dallas Morning News*, 12 Aug. 1961, Final Edition, 1, p. 11. *NewsBank*, infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/image/v2:0F99DDB671832188@EANX-100115EBA10A8E22@2437524-100115EBD4C0315D@10-100115EDABB39BC8?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019.

Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park

Dallas Morning News - August 12, 1961

Article Type: News Article **Page:** 11 **Location:** Dallas, Texas

Copyright: © This entire service and/or content portions thereof are copyrighted by NewsBank and/or its content providers.

OUSTED BY FREEWAY

Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park

A monumental exodus Friday brought the esteemed 85-year-old Confederate monument from City Park to a new home in Pioneer Park near Dallas Memorial Auditorium.

The long vigil of the four generals and the over-riding Confederate soldier was abruptly interrupted by new R. L. Thornton Freeway, cutting into City Park.

Already spotted at their new locations are Robert E. Lee, Jefferson Davis, Stonewall Jackson

and Albert Sidney Johnston, whose granite figures at lower level, surrounded the 80-foot shaft bearing the Confederate soldier. H. P. Carrey Construction Co. still faces the problem of moving the tall shaft and its stone replica of yesterday's Johnny Reb.

The monument was erected on June 25, 1896, in what was then known as Sullivan Park, after one of Dallas' most elaborate parades up to that time.

Rebel yells interspersed the 2-hour dedication ceremony that day, and the oratory "could be heard 20 blocks away," a contemporary report stated.

The monument was achieved mostly by the Daughters of the Confederacy, headed by Mrs. Kate Cabell Currie. It stood for years as a reminder of valorous Southern men who fought for a lost cause.

Placed on the central shaft is a bust of Gen. W. L. Cabell (Mayor Earle Cabell's grandfather), known as Old Tige.

A copy of *The Dallas News* and Confederate money were placed within the cornerstone, and oil and wine were poured on the block of Texas stone as Masonic rites ended. But the crowds remained in the park all day to celebrate the festive occasion.

Joining in the dedication program that day in 1896 were 400 Confederates and 65 Federal veterans.

No plans to re-dedicate the famed old monument have been announced. But with the new Dallas Memorial Auditorium as a magnet, the reminder of gallant fighters in a lost cause will attract more and more viewers in the years ahead.



-Dallas News Staff Photo.

Four generations—including Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson—formed an advance party as they look up new stations at Pioneer Park

near Dallas Memorial Auditorium. The Confederate soldier on his 60-foot shaft will be moved from City Park next week.

America's News - Historical and Current

MLA Citation:

Thurman, Nita. "Monumental devotion 100-year-old Confederate memorial rededicated after statues mended." *The Dallas Morning News*, 13 Oct. 1997, HOME FINAL, NEWS, p. 25A. *NewsBank*, infoweb.newsbank.com/resources/doc/nb/news/0ED3D953AC32AAF3?p=AMNEWS. Accessed 27 Feb. 2019.

Monumental devotion 100-year-old Confederate memorial rededicated after statues mended

Dallas Morning News, The (TX) (Published as The Dallas Morning News) - October 13, 1997

Author/Byline: Nita Thurman, Staff Writer of The Dallas Morning News **Edition:** HOME FINAL **Section:** NEWS **Page:** 25A

In 1897, more than 450 soldiers who knew firsthand the bloody battlefields of the Civil War gathered at Dallas' old Sullivan Park to dedicate a memorial to Confederate soldiers and their lost cause.

Sunday - 100 years and six months later - some of their descendants met in front of the Convention Center to rededicate Dallas' oldest monument, which recently was restored after a century of erosion and neglect.

Edward C. Smith, a black professor at American University in Washington and a nationally known Civil War historian, called Sunday's ceremony another step toward "closing a circle" that began with America's fight for freedom in 1776.

Blacks and whites fought for freedom in the American Revolution and the Civil War, Mr. Smith said in a speech to the gathering.

He did not judge either side in the Civil War.

"What I have been trying to say today is that this is about reconciliation of the races," he said.

The monument consists of a 60-foot column surrounded by statues of Confederate President Jefferson Davis and Gens. Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson and Albert Sidney Johnson. An unnamed Confederate private stands atop the column.

Dallas' Chapter 6 of the United Daughters of the Confederacy donated the monument to Dallas a century ago. Current members, in partnership with Dallas' Adopt-A-Monument and the city's Office of Cultural Affairs, took on the restoration in 1992. features in place, the statues stand squarely at one corner of Pioneer Park. The historic park and cemetery is tucked away between City Hall and the Convention Center and is just east of Pioneer Plaza's bronze cattle.

Women in hooped skirts and bonnets placed wreaths at the statues' feet Sunday as a bugler blew taps. Men in Confederate uniforms carried battle flags, the Stars and Bars and the Stars and Stripes. A band played "Dixie." When the Confederate monument was first dedicated in April 1897 at Sullivan Park, now Old City Park, there were elaborate parades and noisy, daylong festivities.

"Rebel yells interspersed the two-hour dedication ceremony that day, and the oratory could be heard 20 blocks away," according to an 1897 newspaper report.

In 1961, the monument was moved to Pioneer Park because it was in the way of construction of R.L. Thornton Freeway. That move placed the city's oldest monument in the city's oldest cemetery.

TEICH, FRANK

Save this entry to MyTSHA » (<https://mytsha.com/handbook-article/save/FTE05>)

TEICH, FRANK (1856–1939). Frank Teich, sculptor and stonecutter, was born in Lobenstein, Germany, on September 22, 1856, the son of the poet Frederick and Catherine (Horn) Teich. At the age of eight he began painting, and after his graduation from the University of Nuremberg he was apprenticed to the German sculptor Johannes Schilling; he probably worked on the German national monument, *The Watch on the Rhine*. He then studied a year under the Franciscan Brothers at Deddelbach am Main. Teich immigrated to the United States in 1878, and traveled in Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin, Missouri, and California. In Chicago in 1879 he contributed to the stone carving on the Cook County courthouse. By 1883 he was in Texas, locating first in San Antonio but working on different projects across the state. Teich worked under **Gustav Wilke** (</handbook/online/articles/fwiam>), superintending the granite cutters and inspecting the granite used in the state **capitol** (</handbook/online/articles/ccc01>) building at Austin, and he also worked on the Tarrant County courthouse. In San Antonio in 1885 Teich opened a marble yard on the present site of the Medical Arts building, across from the Alamo, and worked on the construction of several buildings in the city including the city hall and the Kampman building. Shortly afterwards, for health reasons, Teich left San Antonio for the hills around Fredericksburg. In Llano County Teich discovered a granite deposit and opened a quarry, but he soon left to spend time in Europe gathering ideas. He returned around 1901 and opened Teich Monumental Works two miles from Llano. Teich was responsible for, or worked on, many monuments throughout Texas and other states, many of them Confederate monuments in the southern states. He

Frontier Texas Sculptor Remembered Through His Houston Monuments

By Susan Teich

Houston proudly showcases many works of art by Frank Teich (1856-1939), an early Texas sculptor originally from Germany. Teich began painting at age eight and upon graduation from the University of Nuremberg, he served as apprentice to the German sculptor Johannes Schilling; it is speculated that Teich worked on the German national monument, *The Watch on the Rhine*.¹ His artistic skill combined with business savvy enabled him to succeed in America, settling near Llano, Texas, where he bought a granite quarry that supplied rock for his statues and monuments now seen throughout Texas.

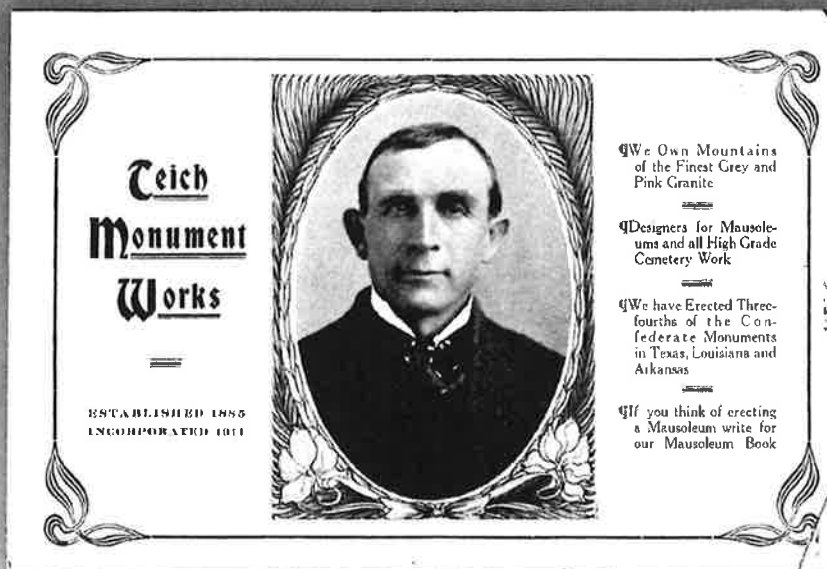


Image courtesy of Susan Teich.

In 1878, Teich emigrated from his hometown of Lobenstein (now Bad Lobenstein), Germany to the United States. He came with no knowledge of English, lived initially with grandparents in Wisconsin, and traveled broadly about the country. In Chicago, where the Cook County Courthouse was under construction, he showed the superintendent his drawings and was hired to supervise a crew of stonecutters. Upon the building's completion, Frank Teich moved to St. Louis, where he worked until he had saved \$600 to go to California. While working in a land office and traveling about the state, he heard about the discovery of gold in South Dakota. Putting together a crew of Chinese workers in San Francisco, Frank took them to the mining district of the Black Hills. From there, he returned to St. Louis, where he worked until 1883, accumulating enough money to travel to Texas, where he remained.²

The year he arrived in Texas, Frank was hired to supervise the building of the San Antonio National Bank and the San Antonio City Hall. When a frost caused cracks in the limestone gathered for construction of the bank, an affordable substitute was needed. Frank located granite at Bear Mountain, just north of Fredericksburg. The stone had to be cut and then carried over eighty miles of trail by ox-drawn sleds, resulting in the first use of Texas granite for building construction. Until that time, builders were unaware that Texas had granite of commercial quality in sufficient quantities to make its use practical. His efforts later earned him the title "Father of the Texas Granite Industry," an odd designation for an artist.³

That same year, the foundation of the new Capitol in Austin was completed, using imported granite. Gustav Wilke, contractor for construction of the Capitol, hired Teich as superintendent of the cutting and placement of stone for the remainder of the building. The Building Committee approved plans that called for the use of Texas limestone, asking Teich to look for a source. After inspecting every known quarry in the state, Teich reported that it

construct the arch, and ninety at the time of the interview. Conrad confirmed that Teich used steel pins to secure the stones, drilling into the granite to place them. Columns of stone holding up the statue weighed eight and a half tons each.¹¹

In 1936, the City of Houston threw itself a huge 100th birthday party. The four-day celebration began with a fireworks display for 45,000 people in Hermann Park. Describing the festivities, the *Houston Post* gushed, "Houston, getting along in years, forgot that she was very old Saturday night as she hoisted her skirts and kicked and frolicked on the eve of her one hundredth birthday."¹²

On Sunday, August 30th, a Founders' Day luncheon, sponsored by the Junior Chamber of Commerce and the San Jacinto Centennial Association at the Rice Hotel, included a 100-pound birthday cake with 100 candles for the 600 guests. The first slice was given to John T. Browne, Houston's oldest former mayor. Radio broadcasts and tributes all that day culminated in the dedication of Frank Teich's fifty foot memorial shaft in Hermann Park, seen today at one end of the reflection pool.¹³

Erected to the memory of the City Founders, the *Post* called it "the tallest monolith ever quarried in this state." The San Jacinto Memorial Association commissioned the Pioneer Memorial Shaft. Mary Austin Beard, ten-year-old daughter of Colonel and Mrs. Norman H. Beard, did the unveiling and Mayor Oscar F. Holcombe received the monument.¹⁴

Elsewhere in Hermann Park, drivers dart past Houston's first public work of art, a vigilant statue of Dick Dowling, "The Hero of Sabine Pass."¹⁵

Having emigrated from County Galway, Ireland, to New Orleans in 1837, and then to Houston in 1857, Dowling was already a successful businessman by the outbreak of the Civil War. He was a charter member of Houston's first fire department (Houston Hook and Ladder Company No. 1), on the board of Houston's first public utility company (the Houston Gas Company), and the first person in Houston to install gas lighting in his home and business (a saloon known as "The Bank"). As a first lieutenant in the Davis Guards, an Irish unit from the Houston area, he distinguished himself on September 8, 1863, by leading a force of only forty-seven men in blocking Sabine Pass to prevent an invasion of Texas by 5,000 Union troops on twenty-two ships. He died at age thirty from yellow fever contracted while tending the sick during the epidemic of 1867. Mayor Alexander McGowan and the entire Houston Fire Department served as pallbearers.¹⁶



Dick Dowling Statue (1905).



One of Teich's Glenwood commissions was the Henderson obelisk, the tallest monument in the cemetery. It was erected in 1931, two years after the death of Frank W. Henderson, whose will provided that the monument be built for the grave of his father, James Wilson Henderson, the fourth governor of Texas. At forty-four feet, it was said to be the largest one-piece stone monument erected in the United States at the time.¹⁷

His statue is located on a grassy median at the intersection of Cambridge Street and MacGregor Drive. Frank Teich was a fitting choice to make the statue. It is estimated that he made a third of all Confederate soldier statues in the state of Texas. The Daughters of the Confederacy recognized his service when, incongruously, a Dallas chapter made him an honorary "Daughter." Representatives of the Confederate Veterans (Dick Dowling Camp, No. 197, of Houston), The Ancient order of Hibernians, and the Emmet Council (a Catholic organization) commissioned the statue to honor Dowling. Joined by many prominent citizens, the groups raised Frank Teich's fee of \$1,900.¹⁸

The statue was dedicated on St. Patrick's Day in 1905 at its original location in front of City Hall on Market Square. The parade through downtown was illuminated with green lights, and the carriages of dignitaries included three of the five surviving soldiers of the Battle of Sabine Pass. At City Hall, John H. Kirby, who had contributed \$250 toward the cost of the statue, served as master of ceremonies. Annie Dowling Robertson, the daughter of Dick Dowling, unveiled the statue and presented it to Mayor Andrew Jackson, who accepted it for the citizens of Houston. Since then, the statue has been on the move. In 1939, it followed City Hall across town to stand in Sam Houston Park. The statue moved again, in 1958, to Hermann Park.¹⁹



World War I Memorial (1920).

SAM HOUSTON PARK

The Dowling statue was not the only one of Teich's works at Old Market Square. April 25, 1920, marked the dedication of a memorial erected by the Houston War Mothers to honor servicemen from Harris County who died in World War I. The ceremonies began with a shower of flowers from the sky, dropped by a formation of four airplanes

Angels watch over most cemeteries, and Frank Teich provided a flock of them. Examples known to be his work, or attributable to him, include the graves noted here.

Finding Glenwood monuments by Teich Monument Works is not easy, however. Only a few recent monuments in Glenwood bear the names of the artist stonecutters. However, there is help from newspaper descriptions of major works and from the illustrated sample books that Frank Teich carried on his many trips to Houston to secure orders.

The one word that summarizes Frank Teich is “granite.” Granite, his chosen medium, links his work on the Austin State Capitol with his works in Houston, where Teich granite stretches from Hermann Park to Sam Houston Park to Glenwood Cemetery and reminds us of our past.

Names fade into history. Stone endures. Frank Teich’s Houston monuments, whether or not they bear his name, remain lasting reminders in granite of his pioneer presence.

Susan Froehly Teich is a retired attorney from Conoco Inc. (now ConocoPhillips Company) and lives in Old Braeswood. She is compiling a history of her neighborhood and researching other aspects of Houston history. Her husband is a great grandnephew of Frank Teich.

An angel prostrate with grief drapes over the Hill family monument. ► The plot was opened in 1903 for the burial of Abbie Hill, eldest daughter of Judge E. P. Hill, a president of the Houston Daily Post and founder of the Houston Land and Trust Company.²⁶



Gustav Adolph Sternenberg’s angel holds a marble trumpet at her side. Sternenberg, who owned a lumber company and numerous downtown buildings in Houston and San Antonio, died in the 1908 typhoid epidemic.²⁷



◀ A pensive angel, finger pressed to cheek, watches over the 1903 grave of Gus Fredericks. Houston’s second oldest commercial building, the Sweeney, Coombs and Fredericks Building (301 Main Street), is named for the Houston jewelry firm of which Frederick was an owner.²⁸

► Among other Glenwood monuments carved by Teich, one adorns the particularly notable grave of Frederick A. Rice, younger brother of William Marsh Rice. Frederick Rice joined Captain James A. Baker in rescuing the Rice fortune following the murder of William Marsh Rice and the filing of a forged will. Their actions kept the fortune intact for the purpose stated in the actual will—to establish a university, which became Rice Institute, now Rice University. Frederick Rice was a founding director of Glenwood Cemetery and served as its treasurer for many years. He died in 1901.²⁹



February 28, 2019

TO: The Dallas Landmark Commission

FROM: Sam Ratcliffe, Ph.D.

Retired head of Jerry Bywaters Special Collections, Hamon Arts Library, SMU and author of *Painting Texas History to 1900* (University of Texas Press, 1992)

RE: Confederate Monument

This proposal is intended to consider the Confederate Monument in the context of its location in Pioneer Cemetery. This cemetery is a window on nineteenth-century Dallas, reflecting some of the prominent cultural forces of that time. The Confederate monument and the cattle drive sculpture "bookend"—both architecturally and thematically—the two geographical regions that meet in Dallas, the South and the West. I suggest that signage be installed that would place the monument in its historical context: erected in 1896, it was intended to commemorate Dallasites and Texans who were killed in the war and buried in unmarked graves as well as to honor the surviving veterans.

Fundraising for this, the oldest public sculpture in the city, was spearheaded by family members of those war dead. This text also should have a sentence noting the marked significance of the sculpture's creator, German immigrant Frank Teich, who executed the Sam Houston monument in Houston and worked on the state capitol building, among many other prominent Texas projects. Furthermore, it might be noted that the monument was repaired in the early 1960s by internationally recognized Mexican immigrant sculptor Octavio Medellin, whose work is now exhibited in the Dallas City Performance Hall Lobby and at Love Field.

While this monument commemorates the Confederate dead, the resting places of many (most?) of the slaves whose labor helped to build the beginnings of Dallas are also unknown. I suggest installing additional statuary and text commemorating their contributions, perhaps on the convention center side, near the Texas Sesquicentennial historical marker. This central location would enable the sculpture to function as a link between the two ends of the park. While African-Americans' links to the South are obvious, making the sculpture this sort of focal point also would point to their contributions in the West as U.S. cavalry troops ("Buffalo Soldiers") and cowboys. A start in this direction has already been made by the cattle drive sculpture, which includes an African-American cowboy. Unfortunately, the two plaques near the sculpture, incised on a steel plate and pink marble slab, respectively, are so weathered as to be illegible. However, the original text of both may have been very informative concerning Dallas and the American West; all that may be necessary for interpreting that sculpture would be to present the illegible text in a different medium.

Additional explanatory signage (perhaps along the lines of the Texas Sesquicentennial historical marker near the convention center) could welcome visitors to the park and explain its origins and significance, etc. My guess is that such signage would be especially helpful on the two sides of the park bordered by Young and Griffin streets.

The question before the commission presents Dallas with an opportunity to enhance the visitor experience at Pioneer Cemetery, tell a more complete story of the city's past, and retain a significant piece of public art by an important Texas sculptor. As a fourth-generation Dallasite, I have watched in sadness for a number of years as my city has either overlooked or downright destroyed valuable, tangible links to its history. Pioneer Cemetery has the potential to serve not only as a window on that history but also as a way for the city's citizens and visitors to gain a fuller understanding of it.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Cheryl Monteith [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 10:06 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Fwd: Veterans Memorial

Begin forwarded message:

From: Cheryl Monteith [REDACTED]
Subject: Veterans Memorial
Date: March 2, 2019 at 4:30:08 PM CST
To: elaine.hill@dallascityhall.com
Cc: Cheryl Monteith <cepmonte@aol.com>

Ms. Hill,

Please do not let City Council take this monument away! It is up to you to stop this. It is in a cemetery. Is there no respect?

This statue was originally erected in City Park in 1896 so it does fall between those dates. As you know, City Park fell out of fashion and when the freeway split it from downtown, it made sense to move it to a protected cemetery where there are many Confederate graves, many of the early founders of Dallas. Doesn't that mean anything?

Whether we were on the wrong or the right side of the war, it is our history and our state chose to go with the Confederacy. It honors the ones who did not return. The money was raised by women do saved their pennies, nickels and dimes for this! They did not even have the right to vote at that time! What they were able to accomplish at a time when they had no rights is amazing. But it is being discredited by individuals who do not know their history and many have no Texas roots. I am a 5th generation Texan and I am willing to fight for our heritage!

This is being done for political reasons and cooler heads need to prevail. It is amazing that the city is willing to spend an estimated half a million dollars to remove a historical statue when there are so many areas which need the city funding.

Please do your civic duty and preserve our Texas history and heritage.

Respectfully,

Cheryl Monteith

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Flatrock [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, March 01, 2019 10:13 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Dallas Confederate War Memorial
Attachments: Congressional Recognition of Confederate Veterans with same rights as any American Veteran-1.pdf

Importance: High

Ms. Hill and Mr. Doty,

I urge your Landmark Commission to block the senseless destruction of the Confederate War Memorial. Regardless of one's view of the complex causes of secession and the war, the common soldiers who suffered, fought, and died trying to protect their homes and families against Union invasion, deserve respect, just like any soldier who serves his country. Note the attached 1958 law, in which Congress recognized Confederate veterans as having the same rights as US veterans. Thus, destroying a Confederate soldiers' memorial is as disrespectful as destroying a memorial to any American veteran.

It is your commission's job to protect our historical landmarks, and enforce the applicable Antiquities laws, not rubber-stamp every demand from the vocal agitators who want to destroy anything they disagree with. Landmarks should reflect our history and should be preserved for future generations, not an endless cycle of build and destroy, depending on ever-changing political correctness. We can be quite sure that every "victory" they achieve just whets their appetite to demand destruction of other historical monuments, Confederate or non-Confederate. Please leave that "PC or destroy" mentality to the Taliban.

I would also point out the absurdity of Dallas politicians wanting to spend several hundred thousand dollars on this destruction, using tax money that could be far better spent improving education, infrastructure, or countless other things that would benefit ALL Dallas citizens and those of us who travel there.

Please protect our history. Thanks.

Best regards,
Don Taylor
Harper, TX

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: William Bozic [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 11:24 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Do NOT Demolish War Memorial in Cemetery

Dear Ms. Hill,

I encourage you NOT TO DEMOLISH the historic memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. This memorial was erected in 1896 so it is well over 100 years old and certainly a historic landmark.

Sincerely,
William Bozic

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Dana Hudson [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 11:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: PLEASE PAY HEED TO HISTORICAL PROTECTION

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sheila Randolph [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 12:00 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Dean, Neva; Holmes, Anna; Anderson, Jennifer; Prior, Marsha; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Parent, Melissa; Casso, Liz Ana
Subject: March 4th Agenda, Confederate Monument in Pioneer Cemetery

To the Landmark Commission:

I didn't see the emails of the Commission members listed on your website, so I am sending this email to your staff. I trust that they will forward it to the committee members before tomorrow's meeting.

My name is Sheila Randolph, and I am an attorney in Fort Worth, Texas. I am also a 60 year old black woman who grew up during the tail end of the Jim Crow era in Brenham, Texas, then went to college in Boston, Massachusetts in 1976 during Boston's desegregation crisis, so I have known in-your-face racism.

On the bottom of your page on the city website there is a link to take the reader to the Historic Preservation Home Page. This would lead the reader to think that "Historic Preservation" is the main aim of your committee. I hope that is the case.

The financial cost involved in moving the Confederate monument can't come close to the cost to future generations that will lose a valuable teaching tool. The Civil War was a terrible time in our nation's history that pitted brother against brother. Many soldiers, both in the North and in the South, died far from home, so their families and various lineage organizations erected monuments to remember the dead. I have even seen a monument to Union soldiers in Oakwood Cemetery in Fort Worth.

It has been said that "Those who do not learn from history are doomed forever to repeat it." Please leave the Confederate monument in Pioneer Cemetery. It has already been moved around enough.

Thank you for your time.

Sheila Randolph
Fort Worth, Texas

The information contained in this email is a legally privileged and confidential communication protected by law. If you are not the intended recipient, please notify the sender by telephone at [REDACTED] and then delete this email from your system. Thank you.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: marbil7164 [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 11:11 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Demolition of monument

please vote to keep this beautiful war memorial exactly where it is. please stand strong for the majority
thank you
Anna Shepeard

Sent from my Samsung Galaxy , an AT&T LTE smartphone

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Lana Henley [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 12:04 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Monument in Pioneer Cemetery

Please don't destroy the Confederate monument in Pioneer Cemetery. The men this monument honors did nothing wrong. It was a different time and place then, and many of my grandfathers and uncles chose the side of the South against what the North was trying to impose on them. Please don't. Thanking you in advance for your help.

--
Lana Henley

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Sherry Davis [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 12:25 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Historical Landmark in Pioneer Cemetery

Ms. Phyllis Hill,
Landmark Commission

RE: Pioneer Park Cemetery

As a 6th generation Texan, and I have descendants making our family have 9 generations, I encourage you NOT TO DEMOLISH the historic memorial in Pioneer Park Cemetery. This memorial was erected in 1896 so it is well over 100 years old and certainly a historic landmark. The memorial is also in a cemetery, so the destruction of memorials in a cemetery would reflect badly on Dallas, and Texas. Thank you for your consideration.

A 6th Generation Texan,

Sherry Davis

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 12:34 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial Monument, Dallas, TX.

Madam,

As a veteran I see the removal of the monument in pioneer cemetery as a poor choice for American patriots. Please reconsider, place your heart and vote with deceased and current American Veterans who have paid America's bills in the beginning, the past, and are paying currently, Do us this proper honor.

Respectfully
James K. Palmisano

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Melinda Houston [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 1:11 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Save the Dallas Confederate War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am writing to you to ask that you please leave the Dallas Confederate War Memorial right where it is. It is located in a cemetery where many Confederate graves are. It is not hurting anyone. If you cannot honor the dead where they lay, then where can you? The memorial helps us to remember where we all came from. It is about history and remembering the trials that we have overcome. These men were doing what they thought was right for their families and country. Now their memories are being tarnished by people that have no idea what it was like to live during that time period and honestly should have their attention on other more important matters than a memorial. A memorial that they probably have never seen in person. What will be next? Statues of Sam Houston? Vietnam Memorials? How would you feel if it was for one of your Great Great or Great Great Great Grandfathers being honored? Are we not allowed the freedom to show these memorials to our children? Instead of erasing them, we should be using them to educate people. Please leave this memorial where it belongs in the Pioneer Park Cemetery.

From a concerned citizen,

Melinda Houston
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Betsy Ruffin [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 3:50 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas Confederate War Memorial - please keep

I encourage you to keep the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park. Instead of removing, please consider adding historical context to it, so that folks can learn from this chapter in our history rather than hiding it.

Thank you

Betsy Ruffin
John 3:16

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Catherine Gibb [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 4:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Deny the Certificate of Demolition

Please deny the Certificate of Demolition of the Confederate War Memorial. The destruction of these monuments is absurd. History should be preserved, not "re-written" or erased. One should learn from history, not be offended by it. My ancestors fought in both the Revolution and on the side of the Confederacy. I am not in any way defending or condoning slavery, but this is just wrong on so many levels.

Catherine Gibb

"A government big enough to give you everything you want, is strong enough to take everything you have." ~Thomas Jefferson

'No arsenal, or no weapon in the arsenals of the world, is as formidable as the will and moral courage of free men and women.' Ronald Reagan

"Either you will control your government, or government will control you." Ronald Reagan, December 7, 1973

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Marita Richards [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 5:32 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Proposed Demolition of the Confederate Memorial in downtown Dallas

As a native Texan and as a long time resident of the Dallas area, I implore you to re-consider the demolition of the Confederate Memorial in downtown Dallas.

Our history is so important and should never be destroyed. We learn from history, not remove it from our visual sight. No matter what the United States history era, remembering our soldiers who fought for freedom is a remembrance to them and the sacrifice they made. Some soldiers came home, but not always in one piece, and some never returned to their family.

Let us not forget our history which did occur. Are future memorials across this country to other veterans such as World War II veterans to be destroyed as well? Destroying objects is not the answer.

Marita Richards

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Leigh Ann Brunson [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 8:39 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate memorial

I respectfully request the memorial remain as is

Under no circumstance should it be destroyed

Sent from my iPhone



March 3, 2019

City of Dallas Landmark Commission
Dallas City Hall
1500 Marilla Street
Dallas, Texas 75201

Re: Discussion Item #1 (CD189-007)

Dear Landmark Commission Members:

*Board of Trustees
2018 - 2019*

*Joanna Hampton, AIA
President*

*Leigh Richter
Vice President -
Preservation Issues*

*Will Stovall
Vice President-*

Membership

*Vanessa Baker
Vice President-*

Education

*Jamie Slagel
Secretary*

*Dave Millheiser
Treasurer*

*Alicia Quintans, AIA
Past President*

Norm Alston, AIA

Buddy Apple

Betty Artis

Chris Bell

Charles Brower

John Brown, AIA

Nicky DeFreece

Emery, AIA

Dustin Gadberry

Christopher T. Haley

Erika Huddleston

Grayson Hughes

George Keaton, Jr.

Fred Peña, RA

Alicia Schroeder

Diane Sherman

Katy Slade

Julie Travis

Joan Walne

*David Preziosi, FAICP
Executive Director*

The City of Dallas Landmark Commission will consider a request from the City to remove the Confederate Monument located in the Pioneer Cemetery, a City of Dallas Landmark. As an organization dedicated to the preservation of our city's history, Preservation Dallas is concerned that the proposed application for removal is not consistent with the established city process and the preservation ordinance adopted for the cemetery. This raises significant concerns for the city's long-term historic preservation efforts.

Preservation Dallas welcomes debate about whether the monument, which is a symbol of a painful period in our City's past, should be displayed on public property within the City of Dallas. However, the very civic interests served by this public conversation are undercut by official action that we believe violates legal safeguards meant to protect facets of our City's history, even those that have been born out of tragedy and injustice. One need only look to the Tenth Street Historic District to see both the importance of remembering painful and unjust aspects of the City's past and the threat posed when local government ignores its obligation to follow the law.

In the case of Pioneer Cemetery, designated a City of Dallas Landmark in 2002, the designation established protections for existing grave markers, monuments, and other defining elements in the cemetery. Key provisions relating directly to the proposed removal include:

- The period of significance for the cemetery is listed as 1849 to 1921. While the Confederate Monument, identified in the ordinance as the Civil War Memorial, was moved to the cemetery in 1961, it was erected in 1896. This is squarely within the period of significance and was placed in context with other markers and grave sites from that period.
- Section 4.1 of the ordinance unequivocally provides that, "[e]xisting grave markers, monuments, and tombs are protected." Because the monument was already in place when the ordinance was adopted, it is a protected feature of the cemetery and, therefore, a contributing feature to the Cemetery District.
- The District's boundary was purposefully drawn to include the monument at the District's lower corner. The monument could have easily been left out if it was not considered significant to the cemetery, or out of the period of significance. The monument's intentional inclusion in the District shows specific legislative intent to protect the monument as a Landmark.



Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Upgrade Outlook 2019 [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 9:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: City of Dallas Tax Payer

I am so against my tax dollars being spent in this manner.
Why would anyone want to spend this much money to remove anything that has been in our city
for so very long.

Mary Driver
12520 Montego Plaza
Dallas, Tx 76230

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Toxey Cathey [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 9:34 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Certificate of demolition/removal-Dallas Confederate War Memorial

Dear Ms. Hill:

Please vote AGAINST this certificate.

Remember the public's input should be carefully considered in this important matter!!

Thank you,

Toxey Cathey

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Virgil Davison, 817-980-5795 [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 10:22 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas Confederate War Memorial

My appeal to you is to please DENY the application for the certificate of demolition and or removal of the Dallas Confederate War Memorial in the Pioneer Park Cemetery.
PLEASE DO NOT DESTROY OUR HISTORY!

Thank you,
A interested supporter for the preservation of the Dallas Confederate War Memorial
and all other Confederate War Memorials.

C.Davison

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Weldon Nash, Jr. [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 10:23 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Dallas Confederate Monument

To the landmark Commission,

I request that the Dallas Landmark Commission NOT approve the Demolition Permit for the Confederate Monument at Pioneer Cemetery that has been requested by the City of Dallas. This historical monument, which was funded and erected by the Dallas Chapter of the UDC under the leadership of Katie Cabell Currie Muse in 1897, should be allowed to remain as part of our history. The Confederate soldier at the top of the monument's shaft was reportedly modeled after local business man, William H. Gaston, who was an early developer of east Dallas.

Would not such demolition violate existing Codes and City Ordinances against defacing, damaging or destroying historical monuments? Also, if this demolition is allowed, where will it stop? Would the City then attempt to remove other "Confederate" monuments in Pioneer Cemetery such as the small shaft at the grave of former Dallas mayor and Confederate officer, Col. John Jay Good?

Thank you for your thoughtful consideration in this matter.

Respectfully submitted,

Weldon Nash, Jr.
6307 Reiger Avenue
Dallas, Texas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Larry Johnson [REDACTED]
Sent: Sunday, March 03, 2019 11:57 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: The Confederate Monument alternative solution.

Dear Landmark Commission Chair Catherine Seale, and to the Landmark Commission,

As a city, we have become too comfortable with erasing history in our Dallas Landmark Districts. Most of the bleeding has been in our African American districts, Tenth Street and Wheatley Place. Today, Dallas at large is feeling what we have felt for decades. What Dallas must now learn, we know from experience. We are the residents of the Tenth Street Freedman's Town.

Today, you all have the luxury of arguing over old symbols of racism. We are fighting racism itself. Discussion Item No. 11 on today's agenda is yet another demolition in Tenth Street. Dallas City Code as currently amended allows the City of Dallas to "demolish a residential structure of 3,000 square feet or less pursuant to a court order" even if it is a protected landmark. All of the residences built by freedmen in our neighborhood are under 3000 square feet. That is what systemic racism looks like in 2019. We know how it feels when the city makes a new rule, or resolution, to take away your historic protection.

To those who want to take these monuments down, we understand that the monuments are a source of hurt and embarrassment to many.

To those who want to keep these monuments up in remembrance of ancestors, we also understand. That's why we fight for Tenth Street.

To both parties, we believe we have a solution. We in Tenth Street have the only landmarked cemetery in Dallas that is older than this one. In addition to the graves of freedmen, our burial ground holds the unmarked graves of slaves. Both cemeteries contain graves that are lost and unknown. We owe these souls a debt of reconciliation and remembrance. To that purpose, we propose a garden of remembrance and reconciliation. It is to be one garden in spirit, created in two kindred locations. Each of the two parts will respond to the unique character of its place.

Before we can create a symbol of reconciliation on the ground, we must undertake a genuine reconciliation of the heart. We can only accomplish this by getting to know one another. We can create a welcoming shared space. There, we can bring two parts of a historical conversation together to speak one truth.

Even a year ago, we did not know how to work with the Landmark Commission. We came to our first public meetings with a measure of apprehension, even distrust. We learned how to participate in a public dialog at these meetings. We built a bridge of trust and we made progress.

We believe there is a way to keep these statues in the Pioneer Cemetery Landmark District. If we do this in a true spirit of love and consideration for one another, these monuments can provide the evidence of Jim Crow era oppression needed to tell a universal story, a story that includes us.

We know from experience that when the city rushes to demolition, communities are damaged. Positive, lasting outcomes are lost. History is erased. It is not too late to slow down, and learn.

Today, we ask the Landmark Commission to leave a door open for the shared garden of remembrance and reconciliation that we hope for.

Respectfully,

Residents of Tenth Street.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: patricia phillips [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, March 04, 2019 12:43 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); MarkDoty@dallascityhall.com
Subject: HISTORIC MONUMENTS and MARKERS

Committee Members,

I am urging you to vote against the demolition of the Monuments. These are part of our history and the lives of our

ancestors. The conflict is settled, if these hate mongers would just let it be! There is no use for this dissension any

longer.

As Robert E. Lee said, "we form one country now". All people here benefit from the work these honored men did after

the

war and they are to be appreciated. These are beautiful monuments the people paid for. History is history, and

destroying these does not change history. It only brings resentment of the bullies. Will the Capitol be torn down next?

The granite it is made of was donated by a confederate. Those wanting to destroy these things have not minded

reaping

the benefits of all other things provided by these folks.

Please vote **NO!**

This is also a terrible WASTE of funds that could be used for things far more beneficial than destroying these historic,

beautiful works of art.

Patricia Phillips,

Citizen, taxpayer, voter, ancestor

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Deborah Stuart [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, March 04, 2019 1:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Monument

Ms. Hill,

I am writing you to respectfully ask that the Confederate war monument not be destroyed. Our nation is better than Fascist and Communist governments that destroyed historic, religious, and other images and art with which they disagreed. There are more constructive ways to teach tolerance than showing intolerance for the thoughts and feelings of a group of people, any people. There are also more pressing needs in the metropolitan DFW area that need the funds you would use to destroy a monument of historical relevance. For example, you might create or donate to scholarships for descendents of enslaved peoples, African American, Irish, Middle Eastern Christians. There are plenty to choose from. Again, reconsider leaving the monument as it stands, for future generations to visit, question, and reflect upon.

Thank you.

Most sincerely,
Deborah Stuart

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Bobby R. Smith [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, March 04, 2019 7:29 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Tear Downs

Will be no history left if everything is gone.!!!
Bobby

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Justina Walford [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, March 04, 2019 6:49 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: 10th street - Regarding today's meeting

#11 - demolish - protest
1121 E 9th

Preservation is a vital part of a community. Four years ago, I moved to Fruitdale, the same district as 10th Street. I listen to stories from neighbors who have lived in the same house for generations. Those stories lock me into my home and my street. But as time passes, the historians of my block are fewer and fewer. Every year, we lose a piece of the past.

We have one historic spot, the Honey Springs Cemetery. I walk through it most weekends to connect to the place I call home. If it were to go, as my neighbors age and pass, it would break my heart as it is my only connection to the soul of my neighborhood, my home. Touching the earth of that cemetery is sacred connection. Touching the houses that survive is sacred connection.

No matter who reads this, I know you have a place you are connected to, a historic place in your life or cultural legacy that would hurt your heart to see erased. We all know the power of preserving empowerment.

To quote from past meetings: "10th Street is what happens when man's faith and perseverance meets God's will and power. The history of 10th Street...gives hope for a better future. Because what helped them will help me and us as well."

10th street. This house. This is a sacred connection. it is empowerment that can still be touched and felt. Like all of our sacred connections, we must do everything in our power to keep it and love it and preserve it.

Preservation is empowerment. I beg you not to demolish this home or any part of 10th Street's community.

Justina Walford
Dallas resident
District 4 resident

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ken Bennett [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 8:42 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Landmark Commission; March 4 Disc. Item 1: CD 189-007(LC)
Attachments: Response to Applic for demo_Bennett.pdf; Ex. A_Pioneer Cem. Ord. 24938.pdf; Ex. B_Pioneer Cem. Landmark Nomination.pdf; Ex. C_DMN_june 30, 1897_p1.pdf; Ex. D_DMN_june 30, 1897_p2.pdf; Ex. E_DMN_art. Aug. 12 1961.pdf; Ex. F_DMN_article_Oct 13 1997.pdf; Ex. G_TEICH, FRANK The Handbook of Texas Online TSHA.pdf; Ex. H_Teich_Houst. Hist..pdf

Attached, please find a response to the application in the above referenced matter, along with exhibits A through H. All documents are in PDF format.

Please confirm your receipt of these materials, that they will be placed in the record of the proceedings, and that they will be made available to the commissioners.

If there is any problem with this, please notify me immediately.

Your kind assistance in this matter is appreciated.

Best Regards,

Ken Bennett

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Gladys Pully [mailto:gladyspully@gmail.com]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 5:00 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Confederate Veterans Memorial in Pioneer Park, Dallas, TX

Please do not demolish and remove the Confederate Veterans Memorial in Pioneer Park, Dallas, TX.

We need to keep this monument in honor of our deceased Confederate soldiers, and also to remember the history of the Civil War to pass on to future generations.

Thank you,

Gladys Nelson Pully
3910 Cedarbrush Dr.
Dallas, TX 75229

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Carolyn Orlebeke [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 3:55 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: ATTENTION KATHERINE SEALE

TO: Katherine Seale, Chairperson, Dallas Landmark Commission

Dear Chairperson Seale:

Please do not approve the Demolition Permit for the Confederate War Memorial. The City Council was presented with other and better options that will both preserve the beauty of the artistic structures and also be a more educational and unifying factor to our community.

Also, such demolition would violate both the Antiquities Code and also the City Ordinances designating this site as an official historical landmark.

I am familiar with your background and a lot of your excellent work in preserving historical buildings/sites for the City of Dallas. I admire you and what you've accomplished. Thank you for all you've done in this regard.

Respectfully,
Carolyn Orlebeke

I've added this "signature line" to verify that this is a legitimate email from me. If you don't see this in my emails, do not open any links and delete what you've received. Thank you, Carolyn Orlebeke

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 3:18 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Appeal to protect our heritage

I am asking you not to demolish the confederate statue located in the downtown area of Dallas. It is our history that you would be destroying.
Pat Marchman

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Anna Shepeard [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 6:56 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of War Memorial

Please protect all of our rights. Please vote against the removal of the War Memorial in Pioneer Cemetery . It is a Memorial and piece of art.

Thank you
Anna Shepeard

Sent from my iPad

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Ross Oates [REDACTED]
Sent: Monday, February 25, 2019 10:31 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Confederate Monuments

Hello. I am a Dallas citizen and urge you to not vote for the removal of any Confederate monuments in Dallas. Those monuments honor American Veterans who fought to defend their homes from aggressive invasion. I count my ancestors among those Veterans and consider the removal a personal insult.

If you vote to remove, ask yourself how is that different from the Taliban destroying Buddha statues in Afghanistan, or different from ISIS destroying Roman monuments in Syria? Removing statues or monuments is not addition by subtraction. It is simply divisive. If you want to honor something, add a statue or memorial. Please do not take away.

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 9:04 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: destrucktion of historic aftifacts

Please stop destroying these historic artifacts.

People fought and died for Texas. It is disgusting that they are being taken down.

Alamo Defender Descendant
Mary Jean Kelso,

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Saturday, February 23, 2019 9:10 PM

Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com" <Phyllis.Hill@dallascityhall.com>
From: Sue Stokesberry [REDACTED]
Subject: Veterans Memorial in Pioneer Cemetary
Date: Sat, 23 Feb 2019 21:09:47 -0600
Importance: normal
X-Priority: 3
Content-Type: multipart/alternative;
boundary="_5C4A2803-1F08-4018-8DA2-938BA5AF727B_"

--_5C4A2803-1F08-4018-8DA2-938BA5AF727B_
Content-Transfer-Encoding: quoted-printable
Content-Type: text/plain; charset="utf-8"

Dear Councilmembers,

I am a Dallas County resident who does not want this memorial removed =
or=20

Destroyed. This is everyones history. If we do not remember the problems of= the past We are doomed to repeat them.
This is a big part of OUR countries history, = from and=20 For many different people and reasons, but should not be
erased.

Thank you for your time and consideration,

Sue Ann Stokesberry.

Sent from Mail for Windows 10

--_5C4A2803-1F08-4018-8DA2-938BA5AF727B_
Content-Transfer-Encoding: quoted-printable
Content-Type: text/html; charset="utf-8"

<html xmlns:o=3D"urn:schemas-microsoft-com:office:office" xmlns:w=3D"urn:sc= hemas-microsoft-com:office:word"
xmlns:m=3D"http://schemas.microsoft.com/of=
fice/2004/12/omml" xmlns=3D"http://www.w3.org/TR/REC-html40"><head><meta ht= tp-equiv=3DContent-Type
content=3D"text/html; charset=3Dutf-8"><meta name= =3DGenerator content=3D"Microsoft Word 15 (filtered
medium)"><style><!--
/* Font Definitions */
@font-face
{font-family:"Cambria Math";
panose-1:2 4 5 3 5 4 6 3 2 4;}
@font-face
{font-family:Calibri;
panose-1:2 15 5 2 2 2 4 3 2 4;}
/* Style Definitions */
p.MsoNormal, li.MsoNormal, div.MsoNormal

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Maggie Wright [REDACTED]
Sent: Friday, March 01, 2019 8:55 AM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Doty, Mark
Subject: Removal of monument

Sent from my iPhone

Dallas City Manager T.C. Broadnax has pulled a fast one. He submitted the certificate of demolition or removal and is forcing the Landmark Commission to consider and vote on the monument on Monday, March 4th. There will be no delay until April 1st for the public hearing nor no 65 day for them to consider the certificate.

I ask for you to deny the application for the certificate of demolition/removal.

Thank you!
Maggie Clopton Wright
[REDACTED]

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: Priscilla haynes [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 6:41 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: Removal of Confederate Monuments

Please don't take any monuments down. This seems to be a trend in many large cities. I can remember going to Richmond from New York as a young girl and how I began to learn more about the people who fought and died in this American war from the many statues commemorating those who gave their lives in that conflict. Whether they were politically correct at the time of the war, does not matter now. Congress has declared that they are all US veterans and should be honored just like our Viet Nam or Korean, or WW I and II veterans.

Please do all that is within your power to do to keep these memorials in place.

Thank you,

Priscilla Haynes
Lover of all things Dallas

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: [REDACTED]
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 7:09 PM
To: Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)
Subject: War Memorial in Downtown Dallas Cemetery

2/28/19

Ms. Phyllis Hill

Dallas City Hall

Dear Ms. Hill,

I am voicing my support to deny the application for the certificate of demolition for removal of the War Memorial that sits in a downtown Dallas cemetery. It is a mystery to me how a few elected officials have the authority to try to rewrite history by removing statues and monuments. Let's learn from history and correct attitudes for the good, rather than pretend it didn't happen. You can't erase history by taking monuments down.

Respectfully,

Suzanne Hoppers

[REDACTED]

Dallas,

Texas 75238

Hill, Phyllis (Elaine)

From: yolanda garza ~~yolanda.garza@dallascityhall.com~~
Sent: Thursday, February 28, 2019 9:02 PM
To: Doty, Mark; Hill, Phyllis (Elaine); Kathreen.Seale@dallascityhall.com
Subject: Removal of monument at Pioneer Cemetery, Marilla St., Dallas, Texas Case No. CD189.007 (LC)

Honorable Dallas Officials:

I understand the Dallas City officials will vote this coming Monday, March 4, 2019 on the removal of an esteem Monument in the Pioneer Cemetery.

As a native American citizen, I believe in preserving history of this great nation, honoring of veterans of "ALL WARS". It's sad that there can not be PEACE among all nations and especially here among thousands of American citizens.

There will always be Conflict with people's opinions, but here in America these wars existed: The Revolutionary War (1775-1783); War of 1812 (1812-1815) US-Mexican War (1846-1848), US Civil War (1861-1865) Spanish American War (1898), Philippine American War (1899-1901), World War I & II and so forth.

Many believed in its causes and participated in these wars and some remained at home. **Millions of casualties were a result of these wars and families and city officials wanted to honor them by erecting monuments, statues or plaques for their service to our Nation-USA in cemeteries, public city properties, along highways and private land.**

I urged each one of you and your colleagues to keep our History alive and vote to keep this memorable monument located in your Pioneer Cemetery, on Marilla St. Please do not have it removed.....

It also sadden me to know that a lot of our Texas History is being removed from out Texas School System.

Respectfully,
Yolanda Garza
US Citizen

TABLE OF CONTENTS	PAGE
PREFACE	1
INTRODUCTION	1
WHITE TERROR	2
WHITE SUPREMACY UNDER SEIGE	2
MAKING HEROES OUT OF LOSERS, MARTYRS FOR STATES RIGHTS	9
MURDER AND MAYHEM IN THE CONFEDERATE MONUMENT –CABELL	28
DALLAS LOCAL HISTORICAL NARRATIVE OF SUPPORTING VIOLENCE	29
GLORIFYING AND EXCUSING WHITE VIOLENCE	33
AFRICAN AMERICAN MEN REPRESENTED AS BEASTS	49
HATTON SUMNERS STATES’ RIGHTS AND LYNCHING	56
JUNCTURES OF HISTORICAL NARRATIVES OF VIOLENCE	
WALTER WHITE VISITS DALLA	70
REDEDICATION OF THE CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL	75
JOHN B. HOOD CAMP SCV	76
UDC FOUR CHAPTERS	88
CONFEDERATE DAY AT THE STATE FAIR	103
MODERN NEO-CONFEDERATE IDEOLOGIES AND HISTORICAL	
NARRATIVES OF VIOLENCE	105
CONCLUSION	124
APPENDIX ONE – White Supremacist views of Confederate individuals	
Represented in Monument	125
APPENDIX TWO – The white supremacist views of the speakers	148
APPENDIX THREE – Biographical notes about the white supremacy of	
John Henninger Reagan	155

LYNCHING AND THE CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL – Ed Sebesta 2/24/2019

PREFACE

This is a manuscript that is prematurely released so that it can be distributed to the Landmark Commission and to Dallas city council members regarding the Confederate War Memorial in Pioneer Park in time. It is a very rough draft. However, it contains the essential information about the Confederate War Memorial and what its purpose has been and continues to be and how it is a part of a larger neo-Confederate and a general white supremacist agenda.

If for one reason or another, or one the basis of one pretext or another or rationalization the Confederate War Memorial is not removed for whatever the reason the members of the Dallas City Council and the members of the Landmark Commission will not have as an excuse that they were uninformed or didn't know.

The City of Dallas will have moral responsibility if this monument is kept in place even if it is because the State of Texas has passed into law some measure preventing the removal of monuments, since it is the delays of the City of Dallas and its ill-considered moves which will have made it possible for a Texas state law to obstruct the removal.

This manuscript will continue to be worked on for a later revision and is just a part of a larger examination of the racialized landscape of Dallas.

INTRODUCTION

Monuments are gears in larger machineries of historical memory and politics. They are blocks in an archway of historical memory and politics. Examining monuments in isolation fails in understanding them. It fails in understanding how they fit into the larger scheme of things. To understand the role of the block of masonry you need to locate it in the architects drawing of the arch. To understand the role of the gear, you need to place it in the blueprint of the machine it is part of and maybe understand what the machine is doing in a larger scheme.

This paper locates the Confederate War Memorial in the larger scheme to show how it works with other processes in society to maintain white supremacy. This paper doesn't examine them in isolation. This paper doesn't walk past the monument to enter a discussion of the Confederacy. This paper reveals how this monument helped build a superstructure of white supremacy in Dallas.

WHITE TERROR

White supremacy in the United States of America has depended on violence and the threat of violence.

Slaves were beaten, whipped, burned, cut, scalded and kicked. Abolitionists were assaulted and sometimes killed.

The Civil War itself was a violent insurrection resulting in the direct loss of 600,000 to 700,000 lives. In proportion to today's population it would be over 5,000,000 lives lost.

The defeat of Reconstruction in Texas, an attempt to form a multi-racial democracy in Texas, as well as Reconstruction across the former Confederate states, was defeated by white terroristic violence.

Afterwards there were lynchings, the burning and bombing of the Black Wall Street of Tulsa, the violence in Wilmington, North Carolina, and many other cases can be given up to the Mid-20th Century Civil Rights Era and beyond.

In 1860 Dallas erupted in raging paranoia after downtown buildings burned. A "Committee of Fifty-Two" was formed to make inquiries and they executed three slaves and whipped all the other slaves in Dallas County. As Donald E. Reynolds explains in his book, "Texas Terror: The Slave Insurrection Panic of 1860 and the Secession of the Lower South," about the wave of delusional fear sweeping Texas, these extra-legal bodies were composed of the leading citizens of the town. These Dallas vigilantes were chaired by John M. Crockett, mayor of Dallas and a prominent citizens who had served in the state legislature. ¹

The origin story of Dallas is raging violent white terror to maintain white supremacy.

Indeed it needs to be considered how the historical focus on representing Dallas founders as pioneers works to obscure that they were violent slave owners.

WHITE SUPREMACY UNDER SEIGE.

Yet there have always been those outside the slave states before and during the civil war, and later outside the former slave states (South) that thought action should be taken against white supremacy in the former slave states or particular elements supporting white supremacy. They might or might not believe in racial equality but they abhorred slavery and lynching. Others were advocates of racial equality.

¹ Reynolds, Donald E., "Texas Terror," Louisiana State Univ. Press, 2007, Baton Rouge, pp. 58-60.

These individuals have been willing to act against or speak against white supremacy or speak against elements that support white supremacy going back to the time of the American Revolution.

At the Philadelphia Convention where the American Constitution was written, Col. George Mason of Virginia warned fellow delegates about accepting slavery. Mason argued that it was an “infernal trade” and that it leads to the danger of insurrection and undermines society. In what is a phenomenally prescient Mason states:

Every master of slaves is born a petty tyrant. They bring the judgment of Heaven on a country. As nations cannot be rewarded or punished in the next world, they must be in this. By an inevitable chain of causes and effects, Providence punishes national sins by national calamities.²

And indeed the Civil War came. And James Baldwin wrote the essay “The Fire Next Time.”

Some Abolitionists broke the law in conducting an underground railroad, others engaged in violence to liberate slaves from jails to avoid being sent back to slave states and otherwise defeat the Fugitive Slave Acts and other abolitionists worked to limit the spread of slavery and to undermine it and abolish it.

The Civil War was fought by the American government to thwart an armed insurrection to preserve slavery.

There were federal troops, Reconstruction amendments, and laws such as the Ku Klux Klan Acts to try to support Reconstruction against white racist terror. Freedman agents of the federal government attempted to support the rights of newly freed slaves during Reconstruction.

In 1878 Blaine conducted an investigation of violence and fraud in the elections.

In response to violence against African Americans trying to vote in the 1878 election President Rutherford B. Hayes in his second annual address to Congress, Dec. 2 1878, asked that measures be taken to stop this violence and intimidation. Blaine introduced a resolution on Dec. 2, 1878 for a U.S. Senate committee to investigate violence during the 1878 elections which concluded that in several states African Americans had been beaten, frighten, and killed by armed men who went unpunished. Not surprisingly during the winter of 1878-1879 there had been the Great Exodus of African Americans

² Elliotts Debates, Vol. 5, pp. 457-61, for August 21-22, 1787. This section of the Philadelphia Debates is never taught in the American high schools for it would show that the American Founders were quite aware of the moral issues of slavery. This would show the usual chattering discussions of presentism given by teachers is a fraud. The entire section of interest is online at <http://confederateneoconfederatereader.com/the-gathering-storm/100-debate-over-slavery-at-the-constitutional-convention-august-21-22-1787>.

from former slave states.³ Rayford W. Logan in his landmark book, “The Betrayal of the Negro,” describes the ongoing violence against African Americans and the ineffectual efforts to stop it from 1877 to 1901.

In 1888 the Republican Party Platform called for the right for all citizens to vote whether they were African American or white and effective measures against violent efforts to disenfranchise those with a right to vote.⁴

President Benjamin Harrison in his annual message to Congress, Dec. 3, 1889, raised the issue of the denial of the vote to African Americans and called on congress to act to remedy the problem.⁵

In 1890 Henry Cabot Lodge introduced into the U.S. House a bill for federal supervision of elections to protect the right of African Americans to vote resulting in strenuous opposition.⁶

On January 20, 1890 George H. White introduced the first federal legislation to make lynching a person a crime.⁷

African American civil rights pioneer Ida B. Wells in 1892 began her famous anti-lynching campaign. The Dallas Morning News was aware of it and hostile to her efforts. The residents of Dallas would have been well informed about Wells’ efforts and the efforts of others for federal legislation against lynching and to guarantee African American civil rights.

The *Dallas Morning News (DMN)* kept the residents of Dallas informed about these efforts. In a section titled, “The State Press: What the Papers Throughout Texas Are Talking About,” in which items from other Texas newspapers were reprinted. This item was reprinted from the *Waco Evening News* in the *DMN*, Feb. 25, 1893, page 6.⁸

The negroes of the north are getting up anti-lynching societies with the view of enlisting public opinion against lynching negroes for raping white women and children under the most brutal circumstances, but they have begun their reform on the wrong end. The rape is the cause of the lynch law being resorted to as a

³ Logan, Rayford W., “The Betrayal of the Negro: From Rutherford B. Hayes to Woodrow Wilson,” DeCapo Edition, New York, NY, 1997. Unabridged republication of “The Negro in American Life and Thought: The Nadir, 1877-1901,” 1954, pp. 31-32. This is a landmark book in African American history and should be read by anyone who seeks to be informed on the topic. This book will be referred to as “Betrayal” in subsequent footnotes.

⁴ Logan, Rayford W. “Betrayal,” pp. 53.

⁵ Logan, Rayford W. “Betrayal,” pp. 54-55.

⁶ Logan, Rayford W., “Betrayal,” pp. 61 introduction of the bill, lengthy campaign to prevent passage, pp. 61-78.

⁷ Logan, Rayford W., “Betrayal,” pp. 91.

⁸ In doing quotations I keep the capitalization and punctuation as it is, and if there needs to be clarification I put it in brackets like this []. I want to make sure that the reader understands what is said and also part of historical knowledge is to realize that capitalization and punctuation as well as spelling has been changed over time. In short I prefer my quotes to show the unvarnished raw past.

remedy for a terrible and appalling evil and the negroes in the north would be more usefully employed and be rewarded with better success were they to devote their efforts to teaching southern negroes that rape is one of the most brutal and heinous crimes in the whole catalogue of crime and persuading them to desist from it in the future. The negroes themselves provoke lynching by their brutal crimes. The News does not approve of lynch law, but at the same time it makes allowances for the acts of men madden by passion and outraged feelings. ...⁹

The last sentence in this quote is a typical formula in which the writer who is making excuses for lynching will claim to be against lynching as a prelude to justifying lynching.

There is generally a fear of African Americans living in the “north” since for white supremacists in the south they are a class of African Americans that they would like to persecute but are beyond their reach.

In another “State Press” item from the *Brenham Herald* in the DMN, Aug. 29, 1893, page 4 makes the same argument. The *Brenham Herald* is quoted stating:

The negro ministers of Philadelphia who have formed an “anti-lynching league” to demand that the federal congress shall interfere to stop the lynching of “the negro men who are being daily murdered throughout the length and breadth of this land” mean well, but their efforts are being exerted in the wrong direction. Congress has no power whatever in the premise, but even if it had no amount of lawmaking will help the case. There is law enough now to stop lynching if law would do it. But it will not. Lawlessness will never be stopped except by the law abiding spirit, and that is not fostered when negroes attempt to make a race issue against lawlessness – as if it were to their disadvantage only and to the special advantage of white people. These Philadelphia preachers condemn lynching with great emphasis. That is perfectly proper. But when they attempt to make race martyrs of the negroes who are lynched it is another matter. In nearly every case the negroes are lynched on the charge of outraging white women. We have no doubt whatever that some of those so lynched are innocent but it happens more frequently that the person is guilty. The anti-lynching league refuses to consider that possibility... The best thing that intelligent negroes can do is to let such matters alone and go on attempting to educate and elevate their people. It is a law higher than any law of congress that where men will not restrain themselves from brutality, brute shall be exterminated by brute, the most brutal being exterminated first. That law takes no account of the color of the skin, and it is not subject to appeal.¹⁰

The DMN makes its views clear on anti-lynching legislation in a Nov. 30, 1893 front page news article, titled “Afro-American Council,” with a subtitle, “Radical Means Proposed to Put an End to Mob Law.” The article reports the meeting of the Afro-

⁹ No author, “The State Press,” *Dallas Morning News (DMN)*, 2/25/1893, page 6.

¹⁰ No author, “The State Press,” *DMN*, 8/29/1893, page 4.

American Council” in Cincinnati, Ohio and the council’s resolution to have a federal anti-lynching law. The article concludes with, “Another resolution was adopted to memorialize all legislatures and appeal to the pulpit and press of the country to promote this radical legislation.”¹¹

The *DMN* is also against Ida B. Wells’ campaign against lynching. Wells at the time is on a tour of England speaking out against lynching in the United States.

In a June 4, 1894 front page *DMN* article, “Langston on the Negro,” with the subtitle, “Satisfied with the Progress of His Race. Doesn’t Approve Ida Wells,” the *DMN* continues a long standing Dallas practice of finding an African American to endorse their agenda. In the article James M. Langston (Not to be confused with Langston Hughes.) Some quotations:

On the question of Ida Wells’ utterances he said, “It is not doubt true in times past wrongs have been perpetrated upon the negro, but they have almost become a thing of the past, and such as still appear occasionally, are being righted every day.

And,

Mr. Langston expressed himself freely as having no sympathy with Ida Wells’ English agitation, intimating that her efforts to arouse the sympathy of the English people for the colored population of the south had less of patriotism in it than a desire for notoriety and revenue.¹²

Mr. Langston represents a continuing tradition in Dallas of the type of African Americans preferred by the Dallas establishment which continues unto this day.

When as a result of Ida B. Well’s visit to England a delegation of English citizens visits the United States to investigate lynching there. The *DMN* doesn’t approve of this and sees this as a conspiracy to get immigrants to settle in other parts of the United States rather than the south for the benefit of land speculators, “... agitators who seem to speculate upon arousing at one the genuine sympathies of Europeans and what may pass for sympathy and be but facile malice disguising itself in pretenses of humanity. Is the aim to carry on a thrifty mission, to advertise sensational newspapers, to damage a section blessed by nature and keep the tide of humanity flowing to western rather than to southern farms ...” The *DMN* in this same editorial says it “sympathizes doubly with the anti-lynching committee” with the committee’s opposition to lynching because it “shares the sentiment of humanity which revolts against wrong,” but sees the committee being duped, stating, “it pities those who, having such right instincts and

¹¹ No author, “Afro-Ameircan Council,” *DMN*, 11/39/1893, page 1.

¹² No author, “Langston on the Negro,” *DMN*, 6/4/1894, page 1.

warm hearts, are at the same time so lacking in discernment as to permit their sympathies to be played upon ...”¹³

The *DMN* continues reporting about efforts to end lynching and shape public opinion to prevent anti-lynching federal legislation from becoming law in the years to come.

Residents of Dallas would be well informed of these efforts while they worked on campaigns to erect Confederate monuments and otherwise glorify the Confederacy.

Efforts were ongoing to protect African Americans in the former slave states and insure their civil rights by the Republican Party. There was the real possibility that federal power would be brought to bear to realize those goals.

Long prior to the Confederate War Memorial’s cornerstone laying in 1896 and unveiling in 1897 the residents of Dallas would be aware of ongoing efforts to get the federal government to enact legislation protecting African Americans.

Defeat in the Civil War and the period of Reconstruction demonstrated clearly that outside forces could and had in the past had for a period demolished or threaten the foundations of white supremacy.

Indeed, it is in the very origin story of Dallas. In the violent Dallas paranoia of 1860 it was thought that abolitionists from outside Texas were leading slaves to commit arson and plan for insurrection and the rape of white women. In the 1897, only 37 years after the insurrection panic, many would have been alive or had relatives who had been alive in Dallas in 1860. They would have believed abolitionists had incited slaves to burn down Dallas to overthrow slavery.

To block these efforts to end violence against African Americans, and to legitimize violence against African Americans, neo-Confederate groups acted to support the existing white supremacist governments of the former slave states by several strategies.

1. Construct historical narratives representing African American civil rights as a great danger to civilization and white supremacist violence used to prevent it as the great heroic accomplishment of the ex-Confederate soldier. These narratives would serve as a heroic example for those who might want to perpetrate white supremacist violence in the present. They would provide justification for why states’ rights was necessary to prevent misguided efforts to African Americans civil rights and unleash the horror of empowered African Americans on the former slave states.
2. Construct a historical narrative where Confederate leaders were war heroes despite having lost the civil war.

¹³¹³ Editorial, “Anti-Lynching Committee,” *DMN*, 8/16/1894, page 6.

3. Construct a historical narrative where the Confederate leaders were martyrs for the constitutional principles of states' rights which would be against federal anti-lynching legislation and civil rights legislation and all measures that would effectively prevent white supremacist violence.
4. Construct a southern identity and nationalism where southern and Confederate are interchangeable so that to be southern would mean that a person thought the Confederacy was heroic, that the white supremacist violence by the ex-Confederate soldier after the Civil War was heroic, and that states' rights was the sacred philosophy for which Confederate soldiers died.

The speeches given at the cornerstone laying for the Confederate War Memorial in 1896 and at the 1897 unveiling of the Confederate War Memorial and at ceremonies the day support these goals: glorify the overthrow of Reconstruction, making the Confederate soldiers and leaders martyrs for states' rights; making them military heroes; and construct southern identity as Confederate identity.

The historical narratives making African American civil rights a menace and white supremacist violence necessary was only mentioned by one speaker at the unveiling and somewhat indirectly. Being ugly narratives they would tarnish the lofty rhetoric of the speeches at ceremonies for the memorial.

In particular two of these narratives, justifying violence to support white supremacy and making the Confederate leader and soldiers martyrs for states' rights deserve particular attention and are the focus of this essay

These two narratives would work together to maintain white supremacy. In a contest between states' rights ideology versus efforts for federal legislation to prevent violence against African Americans and grant them civil rights, these historical narratives of the menace of African Americans and the glorification of violence against African Americans serves to tilt the debate towards states' rights ideology by delegitimizing the goal of giving African Americans civil rights and protecting them from violence.

In turn, advancing a states' rights ideology would prevent effective efforts to prevent violence against African Americans.

States' rights should be considered an ideology of internal secession and the whole idea of "reunion" needs critical examination, but won't be examined in this essay.

A monument on the property of the City of Dallas with the support of the Dallas establishment would define what the ideology of the people of Dallas should be

Further the monument would define Dallas and its white residents as having a southern identity which was a Confederate identity.

So to understand the role of the Confederate War Memorial it is necessary to understand the neo-Confederate narrative legitimizing violence against African

Americans which the memorial worked to support directly and indirectly in the support of the ideology of states' rights.

This essay is going to put information about the white supremacist and pro-slavery views of the individuals honored with statues in an appendix as well as the biographical information of the white supremacist views of the speakers at the cornerstone laying and unveiling of the statue in another appendix.

Though glorifying pro-slavery and white supremacist individuals certainly supports white supremacy it is only a part of the story of the Confederate War Memorial. It tends to distract from fully understanding the significant work the Confederate War Memorial was intended to do in maintaining white supremacy as revealed by the speakers at the cornerstone laying and unveiling. The role it had in supporting efforts to maintain white supremacy in the future is obscured by only looking at the Civil War in the past.

Similarly, though the white supremacist views of the speakers at the cornerstone dedication and the unveiling certainly give an idea of their intentions regarding the monument it again tends to distract from the significant work of the Confederate War Memorial.

MAKING HEROES OUT OF LOSERS MARTYRS FOR STATES RIGHTS

INTRODUCTION

The reader will note that I have extensive quotation of primary resources in this paper, much more than might be in a normal academic paper. This is for several purposes. First having an extensive primary source quote provides evidence that can't be reasonably be denied. There can't be the claim that the author is making assertions without historical evidence or a skewed assessment of what was actually said. Second, with the extensive extract the claim can't be made that there is a selective and misleading quote. Third, the tone or attitude or strategies of misrepresentation or propaganda is often revealed in an extensive quote which the quotation of a few words doesn't reveal. In some cases though I have put

Finally, it will be instructive to the reader that even with all this extensive and in-depth information from multiple approaches to the topic, there will be still excuses and rationalizations to retain the Confederate monument in Pioneer Park and so this paper will be an instrument to reveal the banal white nationalism of many in Dallas, Texas.

As for spellings, grammar, capitalization, and punctuation, I have kept in the quotes exactly what is the original sources. It not only precludes claims of tampering with original sources, but these practices are also revealing of the past.

THE GLORY OF ESTABLISHING WHITE SUPREMACY

Reagan in his City Hall speech asserts that the overthrow of Reconstruction and the establishment of white supremacy is the highest accomplishment.

“... The strife of the war is over, peace has been restored. It is true that in this restoration we had to pass through a **period of reconstruction worse and more humiliating than war** ---“

But we have the fruits of peace, and it is one of the grandest things connected with the memory of that struggle and of what followed. Our country's resources were exhausted, our property sacrificed, the bravest and best of our men slain upon the battle fields, denied the privileges of self-government, subjected to military power, **the attempt made to subject us to the control of a servile race.** With all of this, **the highest compliment that could be paid our people seems to me, better than all the victories of battle, was that under such circumstances we were able to preserve the organization of society,** to re-establish organized government, to restore the industries of the country and to establish constitutional laws which protect and vindicate the rights of a free people. [Bold face added.]

For Reagan, “the highest compliment that could be paid our people seems to me, better than all the victories of battle,” in the Civil War, was the defeat of Reconstruction which involved “the attempt made to subject us to the control of a servile race.” This victory to establish white supremacy is “better” than all the victories of Stonewall, Robert E. Lee, and others during the Civil War.

Reconstruction was a period “worse and more humiliating than war,” this would be the Civil War with its devastation, cities and valleys burned, with the hundreds of thousands of Confederate soldiers killed or wounded, with the defeat on the battlefield, with the defeat of the attempt to establish the Confederate nation, with the total destruction of the slave society, with financial instruments rendered worthless.

It being roughly only 30 years after the overthrow of Reconstruction Reagan's listeners would very well know that it was white terrorist violence that had overthrown Reconstruction and that this violence was the violence that Reagan thought was “better than all the victories of battle,” the violence of the Confederate army in the Civil War.

It would not have to be elaborated and in the 1890s it might be unwise to do so until white supremacy was consolidated.

HISTORICAL FABRICATIONS AND THE CREATING OF CONFEDERATE HEROES OUT OF FOOLS AND LOSERS

It is easy to just dismiss and not take seriously the speeches given at the cornerstone dedication and later at the unveiling of the Confederate monument then in City Park. (It

was later relocated in 1961 to Pioneer Park.)¹⁴ They are by our present day standards the over ventilated over heated florid patriotic rhetoric of the 19th Century. However, these speeches need to be taken seriously since they are fabricating, that is constructing a historical interpretation in which Confederate leaders and soldiers can be seen as heroes and in which their heroism can be employed to promote a political ideology to support the racist regime in Dallas, in Texas, and in the former slave states.

In short how did the speakers stretch the imagination so that Confederate leaders and soldiers could be seen as heroes by white supremacist Dallas of 1897 and later?

One of the problem of the makers of the Lost Cause mythology and those who would work to uphold Confederate leaders and soldiers as heroes is come up with a method by which they could be considered heroes and not persons who had made really disastrous decisions to secede and then went on and lost the Civil War.

Consider that secession and the resulting Civil War had proven to be a cataclysmic disaster to the antebellum slaveholding regimes of the seceding states. The effort to secede was to preserve slavery and in the end they lost all their slaves and slavery was made illegal.

There had been a tremendous loss of life with the deaths of Confederate soldiers. Armies had marched through the former slave states bringing destruction and devastation resulting in the loss of property. Atlanta was burned to the ground.

All financial instruments such as deposits, bonds, loans, mortgages, became denominated in Confederate currency with the launch of the Confederacy and then became worthless with the defeat of the Confederacy.

The effort to secede was to preserve white supremacy and but it instead resulted with the passage of the 14th and 15th Amendments to the American Constitution, 1868 and 1870 respectively, making African Americans citizens and voters.

The secessionist had been warned by prominent slave owners that it could be a disaster.

The opposition to secession, by many slave owners, was that war could bring disastrous consequences to the society of the slave owners. For a slave society war always brings special risks since the slaves will support the enemy if offered their freedom by the enemies of the slave owners. Dumond in 1931 history of the secession movement reports that one of the concerns of slave state opponents of secession was servile insurrections.¹⁵

¹⁴ "Confederate Monument Moved to Pioneer Park: Ousted by Freeway," *Dallas Morning News*, 8/12/1961, page 11. When moving the monument to the location there weren't in the articles any complaints about disturbing graves.

¹⁵ Dumond, Dwight L, "The Secession Movement: 1860-1861," MacMillian Co., New York, 1931, pp. 133. Dumond summarizes cooperationist concerns stating, "Civil war, if not immediate, would eventually

Further it was questioned whether with the election of Abraham Lincoln there was any real danger to slave society. Alexander H. Stephens, later Confederate Vice-President, at a Georgia Nov. 1860 debate over secession, speaking in opposition to secession, pointed out that Lincoln had been elected by a minority with the opposition of the rest of the nation, that as president Lincoln would not be able to do much to oppose slavery since Lincoln would face opposition in the U.S. Senate and other branches of government.

At the same debate Benjamin Hill, later the Georgia Confederate Senator warns that they aren't prepared and that "Secession is no holiday work."¹⁶ In a letter Stephens warned, "revolutions are much easier started than controlled, and the men who begin them are [often] ... themselves become the victims."¹⁷

However, the secessionists panicked with the election of Lincoln and eleven states seceded resulting in death and the destruction of their societies as previously described.¹⁸

After these slave states seceded the Civil War came and the supposedly glorious Confederate leaders and the Confederate army then lost the Civil War.

They were supposed to be really great soldiers and the generals really great and all of them were supposed to be heroic for the ages, but they lost.

So first let's review how the speakers at the cornerstone dedication and later at the unveiling made losing a war, a loss which destroyed their society, still heroic.

The Lost Cause mythologies for the Civil War have penetrated the public consciousness to such an extent may readers will start coming up with reasons why the Confederacy lost or thought it was inevitable. This will be discussed after the speeches are reviewed.

The speakers at the 1896 dedication of the cornerstone for the Confederate monument explained Confederate defeat. Confederate Col. W.L. Crawford, first speaker explained:

follow dissolution; and civil war would mean fraternal strife, servile insurrection, destruction of life and property, business depression, oppressive taxation, misrule, and military tyranny."

¹⁶ Freehling, William W. and Simpson, Craig M., editors, "Secession Debated: Georgia's Showdown in 1860," Ford Univ. Press, Oxford 1992. Paperback edition. Stephens, speech given Nov. 14, 1860, pp. 55-79. Hill, speech given Nov. 15, 1860, pp. 80-104, quote pp. 102.

¹⁷ "McPherson, James, "Battle Cry of Freedom: The Civil War Era," Oxford Univ. Press, 1988, pp. 238, from "Stephen to _____, Nov. 25, 1860, in Ulrich B. Phillips, ed., "The Correspondence of Robert Toombs, Alexander H. Stephens, and Howell Cobb," in "Annual Report of the American Historical Association," 1911, Vol. II (Washington, 1913), pp. 504-5. Shelby Foote's history of the Civil War is a racist travesty. Ken Burn's selection of it to accompany his Public Broadcasting Company series on the Civil War should ever be his shame.

¹⁸ For a good account of the mentality involved with secession see John M. McPherson's "Battle Cry of Freedom," pages 234-238.

No people have ever maintained a war of aggression, invasion and defense for so long against disparity in numbers and resources as was maintained by the people of the south in the war between the states. When you reflect that there were marshaled under the flag of the union more than 2,700,00 fighting men recruited from every state, and from all the nations of the earth, including the slaves of the south, and that when the south had exhausted her population and for the last time replenished her decimated regiments by placing the gray-haired grandsire side by side with the beardless boy who still had need of a mothers watchful care and tenderness, she could show upon her muster rolls at all times less than 650 000 men and that within her boarders at the close of the war were buried more than 360,000 of her enemies, you may say with honest pride that the soldiers of the south, living and dead, masters of the art of war, and that the memories of their achievements should not perish, but be perpetuated in monuments of bronze and marble.¹⁹

Crawford claims that the Confederates soldiers supposedly were the “masters of the art of war” even though they lost.²⁰

In another dedication speech, Judge H.W. Lightfoot twice refers to reasons why the Confederate armies lost. He states

When the gallant and immortal Lee, with his ragged and half-started veterans, overwhelmed by numbers, laid down their arms at Appomattox ...

Later in the same speech Lightfoot states:

Overwhelmed by numbers, our ranks depleted by death, threatened with starvation[,] ammunition exhausted, commissaries and the tendrons of war all gone, it was only left to this handful of brave men to accept the terms offered by Gen. Grant, or like Xenaphon, and his ten thousand Greeks, cut their way to the sea, but in this alternative what would become of home, of wife and children?²¹

The reference to Xenaphon fighting to the sea is an assertion of another Lost Cause myth that the Confederate soldiers weren't really defeated and could have kept fighting, but the reality is that at the end there was no alternative except surrender. The ranks had been disintegrating with desertions. Even had the Confederate army been able to make it to the shore what would they have done then?

These themes of overwhelming odds are repeated next year at the speeches at city hall the day before the unveiling and next day at the statue unveiling.

¹⁹ Crawford, Col. W.L., *Dallas Morning News*, speech quoted in article, “For the Heroic Dead,” page 4, 6/26/1896. Speech given 6/25/1896.

²⁰ I should admit that in Civil War Round Tables that pointing out that the Confederates lost the Civil War would be seen as quibbling over an obscure arcane point. 5.

²¹ Lightfoot, H.W., speech quoted in “For the Heroic Dead, *Dallas Morning News*, 6/26/1896, page 4.

Former Confederate Cabinet member and Texas congressional representative John Henninger Reagan on 4/28/1897 at Dallas City Hall remarks:

When we remember that during four years we had to meet three or four times as many white men as we had white men in the confederacy, when we remember that the mechanical appliances of the country were in the hands of our adversaries; when we remember that we had to begin without a government, without a navy, without an army and without a treasury and that that conflict was carried on four years in the face of a great government, with its army, its navy and its treasury, aided by 2,000,000 volunteers, before the brave confederates went down, there is nothing for us to be ashamed of. (Cheers.) When our people went down they did not go down in disgrace and death, for when we surrendered the most of our soldiers would gladly have fought on. (Applause.)²²

Reagan repeats the theme of overwhelming odds in his praise of Jefferson Davis in another speech the next day at the unveiling.²³

The last part about Confederate soldiers would be willing to fight on is truly delusional. Again, towards the end the Confederate army was disintegrating from desertion and the Confederate government crumbling. The remaining Confederate soldiers had little choice unless they just wanted to be slaughtered.

Judge A.T. Watts at the unveiling avoids the topic of defeat entirely in his "Tribute to the Fighting Confederate." He writes:

So in 1861 when the north and south collided, from that terrific shock, the confederate soldier sprang upon the earth the foremost warrior of any age or country. Like a great meteor, he burst upon an astonished world shot athwart the horizon of the times, illuminating all the pages of its history with heroic deeds.²⁴

So one of the assertions of the speeches is that a person is militarily great if they succumb to the odds rather than defy the odds.

However, soldiers are usually considered to have "illuminated the pages of history" if they defied the odds and won against superior numbers. The American Revolution triumphed against the British Empire, George Washington didn't lose and whine about Valley Forge being so cold and resources so scarce.

²² Reagan, John H., speech quoted in article, "Men Who Wore Gray," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/29/1897, page 1.

²³ Reagan, John H., "John Reagan's Speech on the Confederate President," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5. Title for page is "Feast of Oratory."

²⁴ Watts, Judge A.T., "The Private Soldier," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5. Title for page is "Feast of Oratory."

The Athenians in the Battle of Marathon defeated the vastly larger Persian army. Thus 25 centuries we still have Marathons as an athletic running event. Horatius Cocles prevented the army of Lars Porsena to cross the bridge even though he was greatly outnumbered and hence the famous poem *Horatio at the Bridge*. Alexander the Great was great because he defeated Persian armies many times the size of his army. Prince Eugene de Savoy defeated the greater armies of Louis XIV in Italy and defeated an Ottoman army many times larger at the battle of Peterwaradin.

The reader probably can name other examples.

However, only in reference to the Confederacy is greatness claimed because someone just met expectations and it be questioned whether they even did that.

The speeches also erase the historical record that the odds were considered somewhat favorable to the Confederacy at the time of secession.

At the beginning of the Civil War the odds favoring the Confederacy were fairly good as Civil War historian James McPherson explains:

The South could win the war by not losing; the North could win only by winning. The large territory of the Confederacy – 750,000 square miles, as large as Russia west of Moscow, twice the size of the original thirteen original United States – would make Lincoln’s task as difficult as Napoleon’s in 1812 or George III’s in 1776. The military analyst of the *Times* of London offered the following comments early in the war:

It is one thing to drive the rebels from the south bank of the Potomac, or even to occupy Richmond, but another to reduce and hold in permanent subjection a tract of country as nearly as large as Russia in Europe ... No war of independence ever terminated unsuccessfully except where the disparity of forces was far greater than it is in this case ... Just as England during the revolution had to give up conquering the colonies so the North will have to give up conquering the South.²⁵

The Confederacy would have all the advantages of waging a defensive war on their own territory. So really were the Confederate soldiers and generals great at all?

This leads to the next question and the ideological purpose of the monument.

Given according to Reagan, Crawford, and Lightfoot that it was obvious that the Confederacy would be defeated by superior resources and military forces then why did these slave states secede?

²⁵ McPherson, James M., “Battle Cry of Freedom,” page 336. Quote is from the London Times, July 18, 1861, Aug. 29, 1862.

The speakers at the dedication and unveiling managed to come up with a rationale for the Confederates to have been great despite losing the war with this overwhelming numbers argument, but that only brings up another problem.

If defeat was obvious and certain then wasn't secession a tremendously bad decision?

After all had these slave states not seceded slavery would have very likely persisted sometime into the 20th century and possibly even unto the present day. The Republican Party platform only wanted slavery kept out of the territories. Without the Civil War it is unclear when slavery might have ended. The slave holders might have negotiated compensation for their slaves at some later date. The world was shifting to a system of European imperialism based on white supremacy and subordinated labor. Africa would be cut up in 1875 by the European imperial powers. The slave owners would likely have been able to set up a system of subordinated labor when slavery came to an end like the Black Codes they attempted in 1866. Without the Civil War there would have been no Reconstruction, Reconstruction Amendments and the granting of citizenship to African Americans. Various agendas including the 13th Amendment abolishing slavery moved forward because eleven slave states left the Union.

It is in confronting this problem in historical memory that the speakers transform the Confederate leaders and soldiers into heroic martyrs for a sacred cause, and it is for this cause the monuments were erected.

In explaining their historical narrative why these states seceded despite knowing that certain defeat awaited them the answers given by the speakers also serves as explanations of the political agenda of this monument and the utilization the losses of the Civil War to serve this same agenda.

The story of the Confederacy is converted by the speakers into a story about martyrs who self-sacrifice to the true and sacred faith of states' rights. It is the creation of a Confederate civil religion of states' rights embedded in Christian terminology.

At the cornerstone dedication speeches in 1896 the reasons for secession were given. Col. W. L. Crawford states "memory to-day holds in sacred keeping only its glory and its grandeur," and opens his speech with the following:

The Daughters of the Confederacy ... are about to lay the cornerstone of a monument to be dedicated to the imperishable memory of the brave men who gave up their lives on a thousand battle fields for their conscience and their country's sake.

The term "conscience" here is a reference to fighting for a set of principles. In another section of his speech he is more specific.

These women know that in 1861 their countrymen conscientiously felt that their institutions were imperiled, their rights encroached upon and their liberties menaced. That then, they heroically dared to put the fortunes of war to the touch, to strike the first blow for the protection and vindication of their rights as they saw them; to fire on Fort Sumpter ...

However, Crawford can't resist getting in a little bit of Lost Cause argumentation by saying he wasn't going to talk about it.

These fair and noble women are to-day little concerned about the conflict of argument and the fierce political passions that culminated in the war of the rebellion. Little do they reckon and less care whether the institution of slavery was of divine origin, justified by the holy Scriptures, and hence entitled to the protection of government, or whether it was from the beginning an accursed institution foisted upon our country by the cupidity of our New England kinsmen and predestined to extinctions because an impediment to the upward and onward march of our grand civilization and national peace. Neither do they to-day vex their brains to inquire whether the constitution of the United States was a federal compact entered into by sovereign states and dissolvable at the pleasure of each so far as it was concerned, or whether it was a patriotic wise agreement entered into between the people of all the states by and through a more perfect union.²⁶

Hon. H.W. Lightfoot at the same event also references the sacred and states' rights and the Confederate soldiers suffer and die for these causes.

To say that I feel unworthy of the sacred trust does not half express the sentiment. We are proud of this splendid monument and the occasion which calls so many of our gallant veterans together. We are not here to discuss the constitution or the guarantee to the states in that sacred instrument. We are not here to discuss the war or the causes which led up to it. It is enough to know that we fought and bled, and many of our noblest heroes died in a cause which we know to be just. Should their memory perish from the earth forever?

Lightfoot then gives an account of a young soldier found dead on the battlefield and how he doesn't want the memory of this soldier forgotten. He again refers to "sacred memory" of the soldiers. He tells the audience, "Every stone of this splendid monument is consecrated by a woman's tears and hallowed by her prayers."

Lightfoot makes the Confederate dead martyrs stating.

The South provided true to her traditions, true to her honor, and true to herself. Her noble daughters "hung their harps upon the willows," and, like ministering angels hovered around those dark fields of carnage, inspiring courage, while her

²⁶ Crawford, W.L., speech quoted in "For the Heroic Dead," *Dallas Morning News*, 6/26/1896, page 4.

gallant sons offered up their lives upon the sacred alter of liberty. The whole world wondered at their bravery, and sacrifice, for —

He then quotes a poem.

“Oh, if there be on this earthly sphere
A boon, an offering Heaven holds dear,
‘Tis the last libation liberty draws
From the heart that bleeds and breaks in her cause²⁷

A libation is the offer of a liquid to a god.

The other speaker, Hon. W.C. Kimbrough, representing a fraternal order, the Masons, states, after doing a rather lengthy section on the Masons states.

But we are here to honor the memory of our confederate dead. More than thirty years have passed since those eventful days when life and liberty were so freely sacrificed upon the altar of honor and country.²⁸

“Alters,” “sacrifice,” “sacred,” “heaven,” “consecration,” “libation,” these aren’t soldiers fighting to win a war but martyrs losing their lives in testament to the true faith.

In 1897 in the speeches at City Hall the day before the unveiling and the next day at the unveiling the theme of martyrdom for states’ rights is made explicitly clear.

John H. Regan in his speech at City Hall states why secession was necessary.

Some people have chosen to say that it was a causeless war. Our revolutionary fathers fixed a form of government for the United States, gave us a government organized on the basis of written constitution, guaranteeing alike the sacred rights of the state and the rights of the people. Our people demanded the protection of that constitution, our security under it and the rights of our people under it. We protested against the usurpation of our rights and were told that these laws had been denied by our legislators and that we must submit to the arbitrary power of the majority. Brave men never submit to arbitrary powers. (Cheers.) Looking back at the terrible events of those four and more years of war and remembering the calamities which followed it, if the same issues and conditions were presented to-day, I would rather again meet them than to submit to arbitrary dictation. (Applause.)²⁹

²⁷ Lightfoot, H.W. speech quoted in “For the Heroic Dead,” *Dallas Morning News*, 6/26/1896, page 4.

²⁸ Kimbrough, W.C. speech quoted in “For the Heroic Dead,” *Dallas Morning News*, 6/26/1896, page 4.

²⁹ Reagan, John H., speech quoted in “Men Who Wore Gray,” *Dallas Morning News*, 4/29/1987, page 1.

After this Reagan gives the explanation previously quoted explaining why the Confederacy lost making it clear that he would support secession even knowing that it was hopeless.

At the unveiling Judge A.T. Watts in his "Tribute to the Fighting Confederate," the private soldier uses the term martyr saying:

... rode in majestic splendor upon the lurid crest of battle, undaunted by carnage and death. His motto was, "If it is this day my doom to be slain by shot or shell, then let me die."

He then quotes a poem:

"A glorious death is his
Who for his country falls;
And dying leaves
Preserved from danger, children, wife and home.

Watts continuing states:

It will proclaim that the confederate soldier, actuated by sentiments of purest patriotism, unhesitatingly threw himself upon the sacrificial altar of his country, and died in the sublime faith that her cause was right.

A hero, he calmly stood amid the turmoil of battle, a martyr to the cause of liberty and freedom of man, as he understood it. He died upon his country's ensanguined field. As truly great as were our leaders, as truly heroic as was the confederate soldier, yet this monument, from base to crown, pulsates with a more sublime constancy and a more exalted glory.

This martyrdom is for "purest patriotism," and "the cause of liberty."

The *Dallas Morning News* reprints in the same section an oratory about Confederate president Jefferson Davis given in 1889 stating that visiting Margaret Howell Davis Hayes,³⁰ daughter of Davis, who was there to view the unveiling, felt it was "probably the best delineation of her father." It was a memorial address given by R.M. Swearingen given in 1889 given before the Texas House of Representatives. In it Davis is held to be a martyr.

Death never gathered to her cold embrace a purer Christian; the cradle of childhood never rocked to sleep a gentler heart; the fires of martyrdom never

³⁰ "Programme and the Time of March," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/28/1897, page 8. States that, "Mrs. Margaret Hayes, Miss Lucy Hayes and little Jefferson Hayes Davis arrived in Dallas at 8:40 o'clock last night."

blazed around a more heroic soul; the Roman eagles, the lilies of France nor the lion of St. George never waved above a braver, truer soldier.

On the field of Monterey, wounded and almost dying, he bore through fire and smoke the victor's wreath. In the councils of state he wore the insignia of a leader, and when his official light went out forever he won the glory of a martyr. Crushed by defeat, cast into the dungeons of Fortress Monroe, unawed by manacles, unterrified by a felon's death that seemed inevitable, this ideal southerner, this leader of lost causes, was still true to his people and rose above the gloom of his surroundings ...³¹

Judge Kittrell unveiling speech on Albert Sydney Johnston portrays him as a martyr for the constitution, indirectly states' rights, stating:

He was by education trained and experienced, able to properly estimate the odds of the impending struggle. He knew the constitution of his country and was thoroughly familiar with the fundamental principles of republican government, and knew full well that by these his course was justified in the form of conscience and of law.

And on Shiloh's fateful field he sealed with his blood his devotion to the land with the glorious history of which his great name is immortally entwined.

Knightly and chivalric soldier! Heroic leader! Unselfish patriot! On freedom's alter ne'er was poured a higher offering than his precious blood. He died in the battle's front, and when on the wings of the shouting of his victorious legions his soul was borne home to God.³²

W.L. Cabell couldn't make the unveiling even though there was a Cabell medallion on the monument honoring him. He did send a statement. Unfortunately, the statement is at the corner of the page and parts have been lost. It isn't known whether it was just printed in the *Dallas Morning News* or was read at the unveiling.

[missing] have erected a monument to commemorate for all times the valor, heroism, [d]evotion and patriotism of the confederate [s]oldiers and their great leaders, in their noble struggle for constitutional liberty. This beautiful monument is the work of [t]hese noble women; yes, their own work [a]nd with

³¹ "Tribute to Jefferson Davis," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory," section. The article is attributed to being "a memorial address by R.M. Searing, M.D., delivered in the house of representatives at Austin, Dec. 11, 1889."

³² Kittrell, Norman G, "Albert Sydney Johnson," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory," section.

but little outside aid, urged on by [t]he love and admiration for the noble men [w]ho fought for what they believed to be [rig]ht.³³

Texas governor Charles Allen Culberson in his speech makes it clear that the monument is more than just for the dead, but is for states' rights.

Not alone to the dead heroes do we raise this shaft, for their fame is secure and will abide as long as the Virginia mountains shall tower toward the clouds and the Virginia rivers flow on to the sea, but rather also to the organic principle of American freedom, state sovereignty, the antithesis of imperialism and the palladium of our liberties for which they fought and perished.³⁴

He concludes with a poem that asserts the monument is holy ground.

Stoop, angels, hither from the skies:
There is no holier spot of ground
Than where defeated valor lies.
By mourning beauty crowned.

At the unveiling Reagan in his speech about Jefferson Davis repeats the theme that it was about states' rights first somewhat indirectly stating.

We have met to witness the unveiling of a grand monument, erected to perpetuate the memory of the heroic devotion of brave men who gave their services and lives for a cause which they believed involved their rights and liberties, and which to them and us was sacred.

Later in the speech Reagan is more direct about the purpose of the monument.

This beautiful monument is most appropriately crowned by the statue of the private soldier, whose services were given for the love of country and for the protection of the homes of the mothers, wives and daughters, and in the defense of the constitutional rights and liberties of the people.³⁵

After arguing Davis was great by first stating the usual reasons for the Confederacy's defeat, that is overwhelming odds, he then states that Davis was great because it took four years for the Confederacy to be defeated. Not being defeated too rapidly is the bar for greatness in the Lost Cause mythology.

³³ Cabell, W.L., *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory," section. The letters within brackets are those I have supplied in place of the missing letters.

³⁴ Culberson, Charles Allen, "Texas' Claim to Recognition from the Confederacy," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory" section.

³⁵ Reagan, John H., "Judge Reagan's Speech on the Confederate President," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory" section.

Judge George N. Aldrege's unveiling speech on Robert E. Lee compared him to Christ stating:

He was without ambition. Glory came to him unsought and crowned him unawares. He was as gentle and modest as a woman, and his great, warm heart was the very citadel of love. He was as pure as a vestal virgin, and on the escutcheon of his honor there never was a fleck or flaw. Take him, all in all, no fairer form has floated on the tide of time save him of Galilee, set by God as pattern for the world.

Aldrege in the same speech has Lee up against great odds and having Lee knowingly walking into defeat.

He knew that the federal forces would outnumber the confederates 4 to 1. That with the machinery of government, the treasury, the navy and all the factories against us, the contest would be vastly unequal.

And later in the speech Aldrege states:

As some granite cliff hurls back in derision all the storms of the sea, so stood Lee for three years, in front of Richmond, defying all the powers of a government which was spending \$2,000,000 a day to crush him, and which had 1,000,000 men under arms to execute its orders.

Taking three years to lose and not say, two years and six months, according to Aldrege makes Lee as great as, "Hannibal, Caesar, or Bonaparte."

The *Dallas Morning News* also reprints a poem praising Lee by Prof. Philip Stanhope Worsley of Oxford university which is a "hymn" to "the great Confederate South, Virginia first, and Lee."³⁶

Having established that the monuments are to the martyrs of a sacred cause of states' rights, the speakers also explain that purpose of these monuments is to shape the future, specifically the thinking of people in the future.

A letter by Texas ex-governor Lawrence Sullivan Ross for the occasion was read at city hall incorporating all three themes, "unequal conflict," "martyrdom," and constitutional government. Additionally his letter explains that the monument is to shape the thinking of subsequent generations.

It will inspire the youth of the land with a passionate attachment for their country and all its traditions. Above all else, it will keep alive in their bosoms the memory,

³⁶ No author, "Worsley's Lines to Lee," *Dallas Morning News*, 4/30/1897, page 5, in "Feast of Oratory" section.

the maxims, and the deathless example of that gallant host, who, believing that there was to be a speedy departure from the great principles upon which our republican institutions were founded, and upon which the young and vigorous lives of the American states were nourished up to greatness – went forth to battle for civil liberty and constitutional government. These men of the south read the constitution of their country in a very different light from that in which it was viewed by the northern citizen.

The last sentence establishes that Southern thinking is Confederate thinking and this identity is distinctly different from the thinking of non-Southerners, “northerners.” It is an assertion of a separatist nationalism.

Ross then gets on to the topic of “martyrdom:”

There is a moral heroism of men in adhering to duty and the right as God gives him power to see it, as grand and glorious as martyrdom itself. Principles born of honest convictions can never die. They may be denied expression by tongue or pen; nevertheless they will still live in the heart like a smouldering fire upon a deserted altar.

This section also explains that this set of neo-Confederate ideas about the constitution will continue to the present.

Then Ross continues the theme of heroic self-sacrifice and also explains why the Confederate armies lost.

The confederate soldier could not yield his principles for expediency nor abandon the right for success or safety, when his convictions were of the conscience acting through the judgment. No mercenary motive could suffice to move or sway him. His devotion to his section was absolute and unquestioning, and his abnegation of self so utter and complete, that he shrank not from the unequal conflict, but with trenchant blade followed where duty and honor blazed the way.

In his hands the sword of patriotism was jeweled in the hilt with civil virtues. When the confederacy had fallen prostrate and exhausted before the overwhelming numbers of the victorious legions of the north, he submitted to the logic of events with a resignation as loyal and sublime as his courage had been grand and heroic.

In short the Confederate soldier had to be a martyr for the constitution even though it was known that they certainly would lose. With this rhetoric losing literally sparkles with jewels.³⁷

³⁷ Ross, Lawrence Sullivan, letter read by Mrs. Kate Cabell Currie, president of the Daughters of the Confederacy, (United Daughters of the Confederacy), in article, “Men Who Wore Gray,” *Dallas Morning News*, 4/29/1897, pages 1-2. Ross letter on pages 1 to 2.

DEFINING THE SOUTH AND SOUTHERNERS AS CONFEDERATE

One aspect of Lost Cause rhetoric that is overlooked is that it defines the identity of the South and Southerners as being Confederate. The historical record is that half as many people from the former Confederate states fought for the American government as fought for the Confederacy. In many areas without slavery people resisted the Confederacy government and defied it. The state of West Virginia broke away from Virginia. Recently there has been a movie about Newt Knight and resistance in Jones County, Mississippi.³⁸ Further, excepting for Dallas County, the counties surrounding Dallas in Northern Texas voted against secession by large margins.

Support for secession in Dallas was due to inflammatory editorials in the *Dallas Herald*. Randolph B. Campbell in "Grass-Roots Reconstruction in Texas," notes:

Eight north-central Texas counties that, like Dallas, grew relatively little cotton and had small numbers of slaveholders and slaves opposed secession in 1860 and 1862. For example, voters in Collin County, located immediately north of Dallas, cast 70 percent of their ballots in favor of the Union. Dallas County residents, however, being influenced by the pro-secession stance of local leaders such as John J. Good, the ultrasouthern editorials of Charles R. Pryor's *Dallas Herald*, and a supposedly abolitionist-inspired plot that resulted in the burning of the town square of Dallas in July, 1860, supported disunion by a vote of 741 to 237.³⁹

Even before the Civil War Dallas was a reactionary outlier.

Repeatedly in the speeches and letters the terms "south" and "Confederate" are used interchangeably as if the two things are identical despite the fact that there was a considerable opposition to the Confederacy. By the use of these two words the opposition to the Confederacy and secession in the former Confederate states is erased from historical memory.

Also, the interchangeable use gives the former slave states of 1860 a Confederate identity even though the Confederacy was only four years of their history.

Further the use of terms of the south in this rhetoric defines southern as being white.

³⁸ Richard Nelson Current's book, "Lincoln's Loyalists: Union Soldiers from the Confederacy," is a great study of those who fought for the American government from the former Confederate states. As for resistance against the Confederate government in the former Confederate states Victoria Bynum gives an insightful understanding in her book, "The Free State of Jones: Mississippi's Longest Civil War," of the class and racial issues involved. She has quite rightly pointed out that other media have been based more on myth. The classic work from a pro-Confederate viewpoint is "Disloyalty in the Confederacy" by Georgia Lee Tatum, 1934, which is valuable as she provides information about multiple groups opposing the Confederacy.

³⁹ Campbell, Randolph B., "Grass-Roots Reconstruction in Texas, 1865-1880," Louisiana State Univ. Press, Baton Rouge, 1997, pp. 62, 65.

As an example, Hon. H.W. Lightfoot at the cornerstone dedication called to speak by the Daughters of the Confederacy states:

They want me to tell you that our noble southern women cherish in sacred memory the gallant deeds of all of our brave boys in gray.

In his speech he refers to the “southern soldier” in reference to Confederate soldiers. Confederate soldiers were white.

In another section “southern hearts leaped” in response to invasion. In this section “south” and an ideology are linked.

The south proved true to her traditions, true to her honor, and true to herself. Her noble daughters “hung their harps upon the willows,” and like ministering angles, hovered around those dark fields of carnage, inspiring courage, while her gallant sons freely offered up their lives upon the sacred altar of liberty.

We have the Confederates as southerners and southern traditions identified as Confederate and again the war effort a martyrdom, a “sacrifice” on an “altar.”

Not being supportive of the Confederacy is to be understood as un-southern, impious and descendants of white residents in the Confederate states who were opposed to the Confederacy as not southern or “noble.” The rhetoric of the speeches for the monument are rhetorics of exclusion.

Also, African American women in the former Confederate states would not have had any sons in the Confederacy army as soldiers. The people hearing these speeches or reading them in the *Dallas Morning News* would have not believed that there were Confederate soldiers of African ancestry. This was a delusional fantasy invented by neo-Confederates in the last two-decades of the 20th century.⁴⁰

Numerous examples could be drawn from the speeches and letters for the cornerstone dedication and the speeches before and during the unveiling how where being southern is defined as being Confederate.

These speeches construct a white Confederate nationalism for white residents of the former Confederate states, a white nationalism that has as a core belief the concept of states’ rights which can be used in opposition to any effort by the national government to grant African Americans civil rights.

⁴⁰ The assertion that there were Confederate soldiers of African ancestry is in defiance of the historical record. Kevin M. Levin, has submitted a book to his publishers which will show how this bogus mythology is made up. I am a very severe critic of Levin, but I expect his book will be invaluable in demolishing this neo-Confederate fraud and will be purchasing it. I have written on it, but just haven’t had the time to produce a book on it. The book, “Confederate and Neo-Confederate Reader,” edited by James Loewen and Ed Sebesta has some materials which show the idea of Black Confederates is not historical.

ENGAGEMENT

The cornerstone dedications and the unveiling involved a large portion of the general public and they were afforded opportunities to be part events. The dedication and the unveiling weren't merely the activities of private groups, but involved the city government of Dallas.

The *Dallas Morning News* published the parade order on 6/23/1896. The parade was to start at 9:30 am.

The parade included: Mounted police, city officials, United Confederate Veterans, Grand Army of the Republic (Union veterans), a drum corps, two militia units, Sanger Zouaves, Metropolitan guards, Dallas artillery, Knights of Pythias, Rathbone Sisters, Independent Order of Odd Fellows (a lodge), Knights of Honor, Knights of Dixie, Knights of Labor, Ancient Order of United Workmen, Turnverien, Guetleverien, Froshinn, German Ladies Aid society, Good Templars, Drivers and Butchers union, Freethinkers, Band, Shriners, Knights Templar, Blue lodge, Eastern Star, Daughter of the Confederacy with decorated floats, and citizens with decorated carriages. There were marshals to keep the parade orderly and a Grand Marshal to lead it.

Also published in the article was the proclamation of Mayor F.P. Holland that all businesses close for the latter half of the day of the parade on 6/25/1896 so that they could, "take part in the ceremony."⁴¹

The *Dallas Morning News* reported that several thousand people were present at the ceremony at City Park. The article stated, "The parade was one of the largest, as well as most imposing, ever witnessed in this city, and the soldiers in their brilliant uniforms, prettily decorated carriages and handsomely robed matrons and maids combined to make a street parade not often witnessed in the south or west." Also, that "Thousands of men, women, and children thronged the sidewalks along the line of march cheered their relatives, friends, and acquaintances in the process." Groups had floats. The final general section for citizen participation had "citizens in carriages and on horseback; cyclists on decorated wheels."⁴² Opportunities for participation in the parade were given to individuals not part of organized groups.

Four years later the population of the city of Dallas in the 1900 census would be 42,638 up from 38,067 in 1890.⁴³ So having thousands of people along the parade route observing and cheering the parade represents a fairly high level of public engagement.

⁴¹ "The Grand Parade," *Dallas Morning News*, June 23, 1896, page 8.

⁴² "For the Heroic Dead," *Dallas Morning News*, June 26, 1896, pages 4-5, quotes from page 4.

⁴³ From the Texas Almanac, <https://texasalmanac.com/sites/default/files/images/CityPopHist%20web.pdf>, 8/10/2018.

The Masons, of the Tannehill Lodge, had a major role, and it is reported they took charge of the “work incidental to the corner stone laying.” Their “Worshipful Master,” A.W. Kimbrough gave one of the longer speeches though most of it was about the Masons and their history and a minor part about some about how Masons had been a part of the Confederate army.⁴⁴

The groups participating in the parade show engagement from any different sectors of Dallas life in the celebration of the Confederacy.

On the day of the unveiling of the monument on 4/29/1897, the *Dallas Morning News* published a proclamation by Dallas Mayor Byran T. Barry.

To the people of Dallas: The city council having declared to-day, the 29th instant, a holiday, and directed the different departments of the city to take part in the parade incident to the unveiling of the Confederate monument, and requested the people of this city to observe the day and take part in said ceremonies...⁴⁵

On the previous day it was reported that two thousand people attended speeches at the Dallas city hall auditorium.⁴⁶

The *Dallas Morning News* published the parade order so people would know where to assemble.

The First Division was mounted police, Jeff Davis Jr. (Jefferson Davis’ grandson) and W.L. Cabell on horseback, Gov. Culberson and staff, UDC leaders, Mrs. Stonewall Jackson and family, and the speakers. Then followed by the United Daughters of the Confederacy, a float carrying containing representatives of the former Confederate states, and state senators and representatives, city officials, and members of the Commercial Club.

The Second Division had the Grand Army of the Republic, militia groups, and the fire department. Dallas had several volunteer militia groups which were to be called up in emergencies, much like the National Guard is today.

The Third Division included “uniformed and secret societies,” which is lodges, Turn-Vereins, which would be the German ethnic societies, the Dallas Typographical Union No. 172.

The Fourth Division included “Trades Council,” Dallas Manufacturers’ Association,” Red Men, Mounted Sons of Confederate Veterans, and “other mounted organizations.”⁴⁷

⁴⁴ “For the Heroic Dead, *Dallas Morning News*, June 26, 1896, pages 4-5, quotes form page 4.

⁴⁵ Dallas city mayor, Bryan T. Barry, and city secretary, T.L. Lawhon, “Proclamation,” *Dallas Morning News*, 4/29/1897, page 5.

⁴⁶ “Men Who Wore Gray,” *Dallas Morning News*, April 29, 1897, page 1-2.

⁴⁷ “Notes of the Day,” *Dallas Morning News*, April 29, 1897, page 2.

The instructions for the parade are abbreviated, but in the *Dallas Morning News* reporting on the parade you can see that there was a lot of participation. The headlines proclaim, “Thousands and thousands of people participated and delight in the exercises.” In the first division after the two floats there were thirty decorated carriages. Numerous societies participated from the Ancient Order of the Hibernians to the Ladies of the Maccabees. There was participation of The Carpenters and Joiner’s Union who had 100 participants. The manufacturers had 600 participants reported. There was the Improved Order of Red Men who wore “war paint,” feathers, and “Apache costumes” whose number was reported to be fifty. The article said “seven or eight hundred ex-confederate veterans” participated.⁴⁸

Again a broad range of Dallas society was brought into the parade and engaged in celebrating the Confederacy.

With this engagement at both the cornerstone dedication and the unveiling ceremonies, in the monument ceremonies themselves, or participating in the parades, or observing the parades, participants acquire a Southern identity incorporating the Confederacy and an ideology defined as being the true beliefs of Southerners. Dallas defines itself as being a Confederate city.

MURDER AND MAYHEM IN THE CONFEDERATE MONUMENT -- CABELL

The Confederate War Memorial has as part of it the Cabell Medallion. This embeds in it an endorsement of racial violence which would have been known to many in Dallas who were familiar with Civil War history.



W.L. Cabell’s later sympathies in 1909 with a sheriff who abets a lynching should not be too surprising since he was a war criminal involved with the massacre of the First Kansas Colored Infantry at battle of Poison Springs, Arkansas on April 18, 1864. It is a massacre so infamous that a battle cry of African Americans soldiers afterwards was “Remember Poison Springs.”⁴⁹

This is a summary account of what happened from the book, “Ruled by Race,” by Grif Stockley:

⁴⁸ “Veil Has Been Drawn,” *Dallas Morning News*, April 30, 1897, page 1.

⁴⁹ An account of this atrocity can be read in, “Soldiers in the Army of Freedom: The 1st Kansas Colored, the Civil War’s First African American Combat Unit,” by Ian Michael Spurgeon, Univ. of Oklahoma Press. For a history of

A massacre of hideous proportions was soon under way as Confederate “execution squads from the Twenty-ninth Texas Cavalry roamed the battlefield to finish off the First Kansas Colored’s wounded. The Texans were said to chant as they murdered their victims, “Where is the First Kansas Nigger now?” The answer would come back: “All cut to pieces and gone to hell by bad management.” Fighting for the Southern Command, Choctaw stripped and scalped their victims, and according to the Washington Telegraph, added the following twist under the heading Choctaw Humor: after the battle “the Choctaws buried a Yankee in an ordinary grave. For a headstone they put up a stiff Negro buried to the waist. For a footstone another negro reversed out from the waist to the heels.” Arkansas troops under General Cabell were assigned to drive off the captured wagons. “Each Arkansan vied to see if he could crush the most ‘nigger heads’ under his wagon wheels.” In all the Confederates killed 117 men of the 1st Kansas Colored. They took no black prisoners. In all, 125 white federal prisoners were taken. A few days later Confederates attacked another wagon train three miles out of Camden at Marks’ Mills. Once more, William Cabell led Arkansas troops, and “again reports surfaced of the murder of blacks.”⁵⁰

Confederate veterans and many others attending the monument dedication would have known about these war crimes. The placement of the medallion would work as an endorsement of Cabell’s actions during the Civil War.

Cabell’s murderous sentiments towards African Americans would be later revealed in 1909.

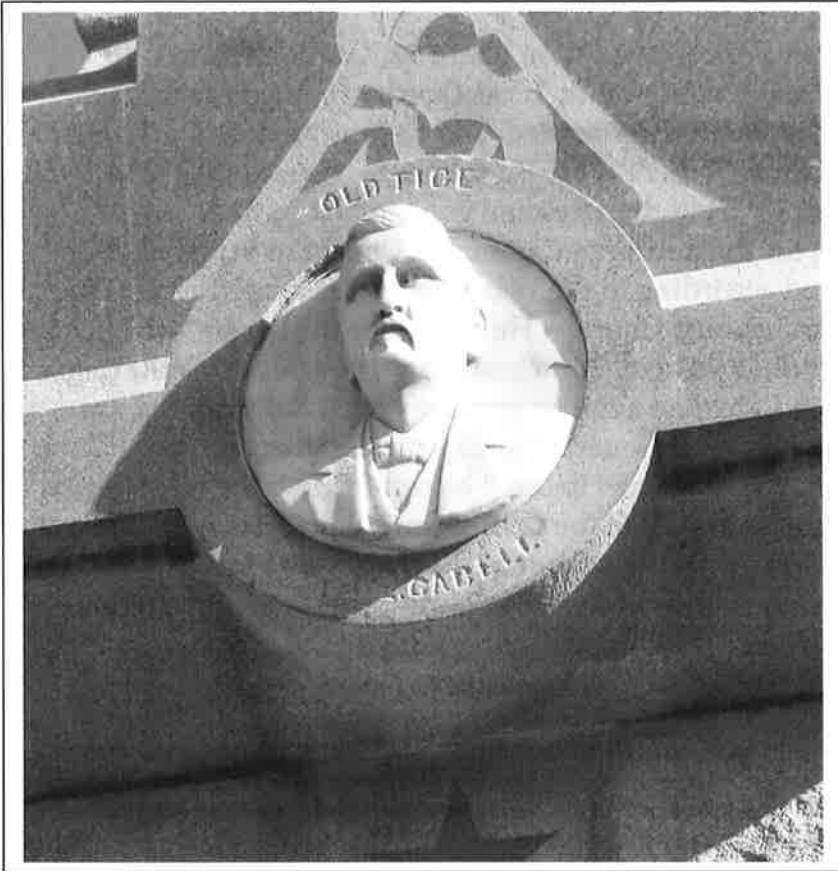
DALLAS LOCAL HISTORICAL NARRATIVE OF SUPPORTING VIOLENCE

The Confederate War Memorial acquired an additional meaning in the support of white terrorist violence after its erection.

The open support of murderous violence against African Americans in Dallas involved more than the promotion of the KKK as Confederate heroes. The Dallas UCV Sterling Price Camp gave open support to a sheriff who abetted a lynching led by former Dallas mayor William Lewis Cabell. Dallas would have its own tradition of sympathy for murderous violence besides the KKK historical narrative.

African American troops during the Civil War Dudley Cornish’s, “The Sable Arm,” Univ. Press of Kansas is the classic text and has an extensive and very detailed treatment of the issue of atrocities committed against African Americans.

⁵⁰ Stockley, Grif, “Ruled by Race: Black/White Relations in Arkansas from Slavery to the Present,” Univ. of Arkansas Press, 2009, page 53.



Confederate Gen. William Lewis Cabell is represented by a medallion on the Confederate monument.

The United States Supreme Court had found Hamilton County Sheriff Joseph F. Shipp in contempt of court for abetting the lynching of Ed Johnson, a prisoner in his jail in 1906. Supreme Court Justice Harlan had granted Johnson an appeal. It was reported in the papers and subsequently a mob broke into the jail and lynched Johnson.⁵¹

Sheriff Shipp was prosecuted and tried by the Supreme Court of the United States.

Supreme Court Justice Holmes reported the events as follows.

The sheriff of Hamilton county was notified by telegraph of the order, receiving the news before 6 o'clock on the same day. The evening papers of Chattanooga published a full account of what this court had done. And it is alleged that the sheriff and his deputies were informed, and had reason to believe, that an attempt would be made that night by a mob to murder the prisoner. Nevertheless, if the allegations be true, the sheriff, early in the evening, withdrew the customary guard from the jail, and left only the night jailer in charge. Subsequently, it is alleged, the sheriff and the other defendants, with many others unknown, conspired to break into the jail for the purpose of lynching and murdering Johnson, with intent to show contempt for the order of this court, and for the purpose of preventing it from hearing the appeal and Johnson from exercising his rights. In furtherance of this conspiracy a mob, including the defendants, except the sheriff, Shipp, and the night jailer, Gibson, broke into the jail, took Johnson out and hanged him, the sheriff and Gibson pretending to do their duty, but really sympathizing with and abetting the mob. The final acts as well as the conspiracy are alleged as a contempt.

⁵¹ A book to read on the court case is, "Contempt of Court: The Turn-of-the-Century Lynching," by Mark Curriden and Leroy Phillips, Jr., Anchor Books, 1991.

Later Shipp was sentenced to 90 days in federal prison.⁵² The American Bar Association has online a full story of what happened online at http://www.abajournal.com/magazine/article/a_supreme_case_of_contempt. In reading it you will understand fully the atrocious nature of W.L. Cabell's actions. The local sheriff needed to make an arrest in a case of public panic over a rape, and Ed Johnson was selected, the local judiciary tried to convict Johnson without a fair trial, and then when Johnson got a capable lawyer and a ruling from the Supreme Court the sheriff allowed a lynching. It is considered a very important case in the development of law in the United States.

As an example of how banal white nationalism works, look at this online history of Sheriff Joseph F. Shipp by the Hamilton County Sheriff's Office in Tennessee. There is no mention of the case.

http://www.hcsheriff.gov/gen_info/past_sheriffs/joseph_shipp.asp.

W.L. Cabell launched a campaign to defend Shipp and to ask that the president of the United States pardon Shipp. Cabell issued a letter as commander of the Trans-Mississippi Department of the United Confederate Veterans asking President Taft to pardon Shipp. The text of the letter published in the *Dallas Morning News* is as follows:

Dallas, Tex., Nov. 18, 1909 — Comrades of the Trans-Mississippi Department: The right of appeal and the right of petition are guaranteed by our Constitution to the humblest citizen of the land. No matter what his political faith may be, or whether he wore the blue of the gray. The Confederates at the close of the war laid down their arms and surrendered in good faith, and as brave soldiers were paroled and allowed to return to their desolate homes, where in many instances they found nothing but charred and crumbling remains to mark where once had stood happy homes, the abode of American chivalry and true Southern hospitality. Under that parole it was guaranteed that they could live at home in peace and not be molested, so long as they obeyed the laws of the United States and of the States they lived in.

The Confederate soldier surrendered as a brave man and accepted the terms of his parole in good faith, and in every Southern State and wherever he has lived he has shown himself to be an honest, true and loyal citizen, and in every instance when the bugle has blown at the President's command, whether to fight Indians or to resist the encroachments or insults of foreign countries, the old Confederate soldier and his son, like the men of the Revolution and the Green Mountain Boys of Vermont, have waived their hats and cheered as they went to the front, marching by the side of the men who wore the blue.

⁵² "United States of America v. John F. Shipp et al." provided online by Cornell Law School Legal Information Institute. <https://www.law.cornell.edu/supremecourt/text/203/563>. A more detailed account is provided by the American Bar Association online at this address.

http://www.abajournal.com/magazine/article/a_supreme_case_of_contempt.

When Custer and his men were massacred by the Indians, the Confederates got together at once and by their authority I telegraphed Gen. Sherman, the commander of the United States Army, that I would report in St. Louis in three days with a regiment of 12,000 men. He replied that if volunteers were called out this regiment would be accepted. When President Cleveland expected trouble with Great Britain over the Venezuelan matter, the day that his message was received, by authority by telegraphic message from nearly every State in the Trans-Mississippi Department, I offered President Cleveland the services of 40,000 Confederate soldiers and sons of Confederates. When President McKinley became satisfied that it was necessary to teach the Spaniards a lesson and to drive them out of Cuba, his bugle call was heard in every valley and on every mountain top in the South: and, in a very short time, men who wore the blue and men who wore the gray could be seen and heard with their noble sons marching to the mingled strains of "Dixie" and "Yankee Doodle." Every Southern State acted promptly. The Trans-Mississippi Department could have furnished trained soldiers enough to have driven the Spaniards into the sea. Arkansas, Virginia and Texas alone tendered to their Governor a hundred organized companies more than were allowed as their quotas. I mention these things to let the doubting Thomases and the whole world know that the Confederate soldier is as patriotic in peace as he was brave in battle, and, although not so wealthy as his Northern fellow countrymen, he is as ready to carry the Stars and Stripes into victory, or, like his sires at the Alamo, will leave no messenger to tell of his defeat.

I, therefore, respectfully request and desire that every division, brigade and camp in the Trans-Mississippi Department assemble at their places of meeting and respectfully petition President Taft, the President of the whole country, to pardon our comrade who is now confined in jail in the District of Columbia. Your friend and comrade.

W.L. Cabell, Lieut. Gen., U.C.V., Trans-Mississippi Department.⁵³

It was distributed as a circular to the Trans-Mississippi UCV organization.

The Dallas U.C.V camp Sterling Price, met on Nov. 21, 1909, presided over by R.M. Gano, for whom Gano Street in Dallas is named. Cabell's circular was read. The camp adopted unanimously a resolution asking that Taft, "grant to our Comrade J.E. Shipp and others now confined at the city of Washington for contempt of court by order of the Supreme Court of the United States, a full and unconditional pardon."⁵⁴

Note that the resolution was adopted "unanimously." The letter shows how the whole idea of Civil War reconciliation is a strategy to support white supremacy.

⁵³ Cabell, William Lewis, letter quoted in "Wants Petitions to President," *Dallas Morning News*, 11/21/1909, page 29.

⁵⁴ No author, "Camp Sterling Price Asks Pardon for Shipp," *Dallas Morning News*, 11/22/1909, page 12.

J.F. Shipp, a Confederate veteran is credited with being the founder of the United Confederate Veterans (UCV) and was at time had been the Quartermaster General of the organization since the beginning and another example of what Confederate “heritage” means.⁵⁵

W.L. Cabell’s sympathies with a sheriff who abets a lynching should not be too surprising since he was a war criminal involved with the massacre of the First Kansas Colored Infantry at battle of Poison Springs, Arkansas on April 18, 1864. It is a massacre so infamous that a battle cry of African Americans soldiers afterwards was “Remember Poison Springs.”⁵⁶

GLORIFYING AND EXCUSING WHITE VIOLENCE

The glorification of white supremacist violence by the neo-Confederate movement is largely after the Confederate War Memorial was unveiled. It is beyond the scope of this essay to explain the reasons for the timeline delay. It could be that glorifying the Ku Klux Klan would be inadvisable during campaigns to disenfranchise African Americans and consolidate white supremacy during the 1890s. It could be that Ku Klux Klan violence couldn’t be considered the glorious accomplishment of Confederates until Confederates were established in the public’s mind as heroes and not military losers. Or it could be that the ideology of states’ rights needed to be established before historical narratives of violence could be praised.

⁵⁵ No author, “Gen. J.F. Shipp’s Imprisonment,” *Confederate Veteran*, (the old series), Vol. 18 No. 1, January 1910, page 5. Reading the *Confederate Veteran* is wandering through a wilderness of hyperventilated gushing about the Confederacy and Confederates and racist lunacy.

⁵⁶ An account of this atrocity can be read in, “Soldiers in the Army of Freedom: The 1st Kanas Colored, the Civil War’s First African American Combat Unit,” by Ian Michael Spurgeon, Univ. of Oklahoma Press. For a history of African American troops during the Civil War Dudley Cornish’s, “The Sable Arm,” Univ. Press of Kansas is the classic text and has an extensive and very detailed treatment of the issue of atrocities committed against African Americans.

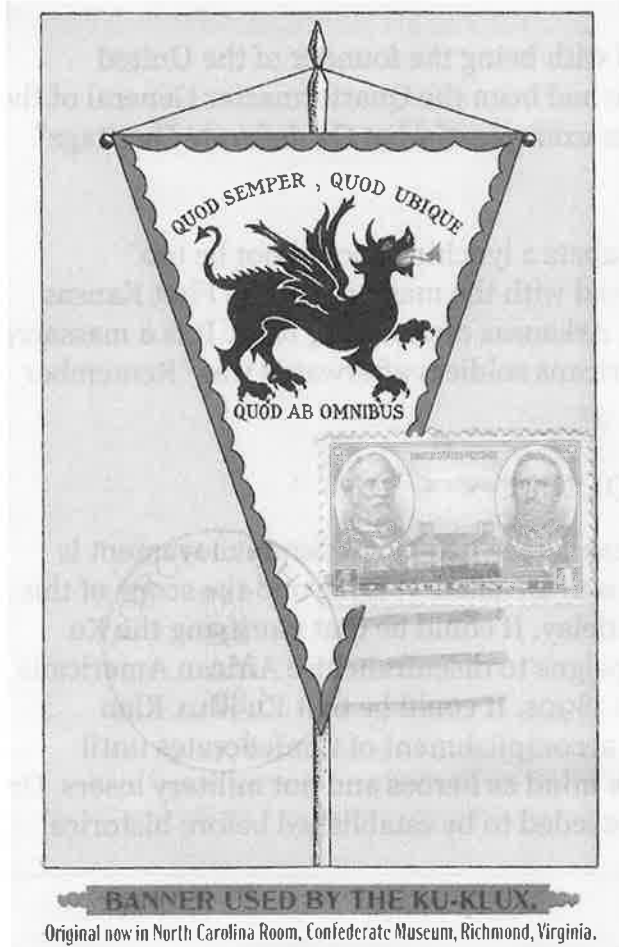


Figure 1 The North Carolina Division of the United Daughters of the Confederacy was so proud of their donation of a Ku Klux Klan flag to the Museum of the Confederacy in Richmond they issued a postcard.

the events of the wreck of war, the reign of terror induced by the carpetbag rule, with its radical cure, the Ku-Klux-Klan, the subsequent revival of many of the evils of reconstruction under scalawagism and the desperate revolution which restored the whites to power, the reader is convinced that he is dealing with history, and history presented in a guise which out to be effective for a better understanding by men and women of other sections of the great fight which the Southern whites, crippled and hampered as they have been, have made for civilization.”⁵⁷

The chairman of the committee is Stephen D. Lee who is also known for his statement called “The Charge,” which is his statement as to the purpose of the Sons of Confederate Veterans which they have adopted as their official purpose.

Likely discussing white terror makes being martyrs for states’ rights seem less self-sacrificing and less noble.

In a 1902 article, “Vindicate the Past,” the *DMN* reported that the United Confederate Veterans (UCV) Historical Committee had issued a report adopted by the whole organization as to how young people are to be educated about the Civil War and Reconstruction. The report states that the Civil War was about “State sovereignty and a nicely balanced system of Federal government.”

The report also states:

In conclusion we would call favorable attention to a book recently published entitled, “The Leopard Spots,” by Thomas Dixie Jr., of Virginia. Many favorable and extended notices of this wonderful book have appeared in the press, both North and South. Of it the *Manufacturer’s Record*, of Baltimore, says:

“In following the many lines laid thorough the romance, and tracing

⁵⁷ Lee, Stephen D. et al, “Vindicate the Past,” *DMN*, 4/26/1902, pp. 4,5.

Fort Worth Judge C.C. Cummings, who at some point became the Historian General of the Texas Division of the United Confederate Veterans is an advocate that the Confederate soldier fought for states' rights and part of activities advocating that the Ku Klux Klan of Reconstruction was a positive benefit for the South.

In a 1906 *DMN* article, "Meetings of Veterans," it is reported that at a meeting of the Robert E. Lee chapter of the UCV in Fort Worth that Historian C.C. Cummings read a short article on the 'Ku Klux Klan' in Texas," and that "Comrades J.I. Wright and Dr. A.P. Brown spoke on the benefits accrued to the South by the Ku Klux Klan."⁵⁸

In a 1908 *DMN* article C.C. Cummings is announced as the speaker for the Confederate Day on Oct. 20, 1908, at the State Fair in Dallas and identified as the Historian for the Texas Division of the UCV. Cummings' letter of acceptance explains that he is going to speak on behalf of states' rights which he asserts was the cause of the Confederacy. Cumming states:

However much I may as an individual feel my deficiency in the effort to sustain the great burden imposed on me as the exponent of autonomy of the States as opposed to the absorbing processes now going on looking to their final obliteration by the maelstrom of executive, judicial and legislative power now in process of culmination, yet I feel that the children of this generation will be the wiser, if not the better, by a review of the form and structure of the Government of the States, for the States and by the States, and that such a summary from time to time is as essential to the memory of our Confederate dead, who died that the States might live, as it was to the few survivors who yet live that these eternal principles of verity may never die.

After asserting that the first American flag with its circle of stars were symbolic of the "perfect equality of the States," Cumming warns:

How we have departed from the faith of the fathers and have gone out after strange gods will be the burden of my story on that day at the Dallas Fair – our Confederate Day.⁵⁹

Dallas residents would understand that some of these "strange gods" would be federal anti-lynching legislation and civil rights legislation.

Confederate Veteran magazine, the official magazine of the UCV, Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV), United Daughters of the Confederacy (UDC), and the Confederated Southern Memorial Association (CSMA) published the annual address by C.C. Cummings as Historian of the Texas Division, UCV in 1916. In the address C.C. Cummings advocates that all the African Americans should be sent back to Africa. He

⁵⁸ No author, "Meeting of Veterans," *DMN*, 6/25/1906, page 7.

⁵⁹ No author, "Judge Cummings Orator of Day," *DMN*, 9/27/1908, page 16.

asserts that Africans are the sons of Ham of the Bible. He also states that the residents of the Indian subcontinent are “stagnated into castes” and “nonprogressive,” since they are the sons of the Biblical Japheth who “amalgamated with lower forms of life.” That is he claims they interbred with apes or simians.⁶⁰ The Dallas Southern Memorial Association is the last existing chapter of the CSMA.

The Fort Worth, Texas R.E. Lee Camp in 1908 is again reported in the Dallas Morning News discussing the Klan, in an article titled, “R.E. Lee Camp Meeting: Two Veterans Enliven Occasion with Their Ku Klux Klan Experiences.” From the article:

Two statements by aged Confederate soldiers, that they were members of the famous Ku-Klux Klan of reconstruction days, praise for this band of “home-protectors” was the principle feature of the regular meeting Sunday afternoon of R.E. Lee Camp United Confederate Veterans.

The speaker Bud Daggett was there to discuss his experience in the “beef department of the Southern army,” but members wanted to ask him about his Klan experiences. As the article reports:

“Well, yes, I was a member of the Ku Klux, and I am proud of it. The Ku Klux accomplished a great work and was the salvation of the Southland It used to be none would admit being members of the clan, but others older than I have since admitted it, and I might as well, also. Today they would be considered outlaws, but not so in the reconstruction days.”

A little later that venerable veteran, Comrade Brooks, arose and spoke of reconstruction days. He recalled the terrors of that period in Tennessee, saying he preferred four years of war to one of reconstruction.

“We were having a terrible, unbearable time in Tennessee,” said he. “Negroes and carpetbaggers were in control, and our families were not safe. The Ku Klux were born. I now acknowledge that I affiliated with them, and their operations, rigid but just, were all that saved us.”

Applause followed these remarks, and those Confederate present, including those who were not members of the clan, if such they were, evinced their positive approval of the career of this band. ⁶¹

⁶⁰ Cummings, C.C., “Annual Address by the Historian of Texas Division, U.C.V.,” *Confederate Veteran*, Dec. 1916, Vol. 24 No. 12, page 569. You can read it online at this web page.

<http://confederateneoconfederatereader.com/the-nadir-of-race-relations/181-texas-division-sons-of-confederate-veterans-historian-wants-to-ship-all-african-americans-back-to-africa>.

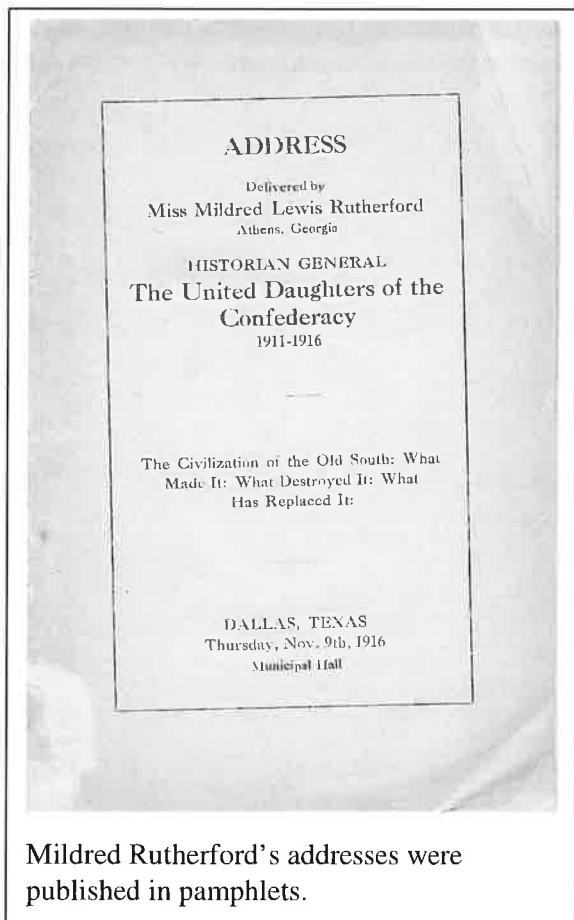
⁶¹ No author, “R.E. Lee Camp Meeting,” *DMN*, 6/8/1908, pp. 7.

Notice that reporter's comment about members who claimed they hadn't been members, "if such they were," showing the reporter's doubt that these veterans weren't members of the Klan.

The neo-Confederate promotion of the idea that the KKK was the heroic effort of the ex-Confederate soldier by themselves and in the promotion of the novels of Thomas Dixon likely created the pre-condition that would be favorable to the making of a movie like "Birth of a Nation."

However, the UCV was far out done by the UDC in promoting the KKK as heroes, an activity which continues in a less direct form into the 21st century.

Mildred Lewis Rutherford, a resident of Athens, Georgia, probably has done more than any individual, living or dead, to promote the Lost Cause: that is slavery was beneficial, slaves were happy, the Confederacy was a glorious cause, and that Reconstruction was a terrible time of African American domination. She was the Historian General of the UDC from 1911 to 1916.



Mildred Rutherford's addresses were published in pamphlets.

In 1916 the national⁶² organization of the UDC held their 23rd annual convention in Dallas, Texas. Mildred Rutherford delivered her lengthy speech, "The Civilization of the Old South: What Made It: What Destroyed It: What Has Replaced I," Nov. 9th at the Dallas Municipal Hall.

The UDC liked it so much that they allocated \$612 to publish it.

⁶² The UDC doesn't use the term "national," but instead uses the term "general," but to make this section easier to understand I am using the term "national" since the general reader will not understand what the term "general" means.

Rutherford was so esteemed by the UDC membership that during the convention they had a large portrait of her on stage. ⁶³

The pamphlet argues at length that emancipation was a disaster for African Americans and slavery had been beneficial and slaves had been happy and signing. However without reading it you can't appreciate how crazed it is. For example she states, "Negroes were immune from yellow fever before the war, and now this is no longer true."⁶⁴

The pamphlet is largely focused on how horrible emancipation was and giving African Americans the vote, but does make some references to the Ku Klux Klan.

Rutherford refers to the movie "Birth of a Nation," in the discussion of other matters. In one part complaining about emancipation and reconstruction she states "The negroes under false advisers resented any interference from Southern whites, and the situation became terrible – far worse than is pictured in "The Birth of a Nation," as horrible as that is. The South lost \$2,000,000,000 by loss of slaves together with confiscated and destroyed property."⁶⁵

⁶³ No author, "U.D.C. Convention in Dallas," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 24 No. 12, Dec. 1916, pp. 532-534, item on Rutherford's address and its publication on page 534, 1st column.

⁶⁴ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Nov. 9, 1916, Dallas Municipal Auditorium, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information. The reference to yellow fever is on page 7 in this pamphlet.

⁶⁵ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Nov. 9, 1916, Dallas Municipal Auditorium, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information. Pp. 31-32.



Painting of Mildred Rutherford exhibited at the Dallas 1916 UDC national convention.

She thinks that the movie “Birth of a Nation” will be beneficial to contemporary African Americans and also how horrible it was that white women in the South after losing their slaves had to do their own house chores.

“THE BIRTH OF A NATION” will do much to enable the white people of the South to right a wrong to the negroes, for the negroes represented there, with the exception of old Mammy, were not our faithful negroes that guarded our homes, but they were the bad runaway negroes that had fallen under the influence of the carpetbagger and the scalawag, and to whom had been given guns to kill and destroy, and I do not wonder that the negroes resent the Play for these young negroes of today know nothing of the history of those times—I would like to tell them about it, for I lived then and know the truth.

The adjustment period was fearful in the South, and was another great factor in destroying the old civilization. The women of the Old South were forced then to learn, not only to cook, to wash and iron, but to do the most menial forms of household drudgery. The kitchen in the Old South was never attached to the house. Water had to be drawn from a well or brought from a spring, often entailing labor and great inconvenience, for waterworks were unknown, and wood stoves were just introduced, very few were able to possess one before the war. The cooking was largely done in open fireplaces, with pot hooks and ovens, so wood had to be cut and ashes cleared away...⁶⁶

Rutherford sees the Ku Klux Klan as the liberators of the South from Reconstruction stating:

This unwise policy was the real blow aimed at the overthrow of the civilization of the Old South. The men of the South were then put under military discipline which actually tied their hands and only the Ku Klux, the “Chivalry of the Old South,” could break these bonds that fettered them.⁶⁷

⁶⁶ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, “Address,” Nov. 9, 1916, Dallas Municipal Auditorium, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn’t list publishing information. Pp. 37-38.

⁶⁷ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, “Address,” Nov. 9, 1916, Dallas Municipal Auditorium, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn’t list publishing information. Pp. 30.

States' rights does come up in another part of her address along with the Ku Klux Klan .

Pres. Wilson sees a great danger to the South coming from this tendency to a centralized government and stands squarely for State Rights. The South, under present conditions, cannot afford to surrender her state rights. If she should, a worse than Reconstruction Period would follow, and no Ku Klux can protect her.

The North disfranchised the illiterate Indians, the illiterate yellow man, the illiterate negroes in her midst before the war, yet, after the war, the North enfranchised 6,000,000 illiterate negroes in the South. This was not just.⁶⁸

It is very clear that states' rights is about the maintenance of white supremacy. You can read Mildred Rutherford's 1916 Dallas address online at <https://archive.org/details/addressdelivered02ruth/page/n2> or download it as a pdf.

Though this 1916 address in Dallas focused on the idea that the abolition of slavery was detrimental to African Americans, Rutherford's other addresses at UDC national conventions directly endorsed the KKK.

In her 1912 address in New Orleans on American history in discussing Reconstruction she states:

The Ku Klux Klan was an absolute necessity in the South at this time. This Order was an absolute necessity in the South at this Time. This Order was not composed of the "riff raff" as has been represented in history, but of the very flower of Southern manhood. The chivalry of the South demanded protection or the women and children of the South.⁶⁹

In another 1912 address in Washington, DC in discussing the return of the Confederate soldier after the end of the Civil War she states:

It is true, he had to fight his way with shackled hands during that awful reconstruction period; but wise men of the North understand why it was a necessity then. He was compelled to establish the political supremacy of the white man in the South. (Applause). So, too, the Ku Klux Klan was a necessity at that time, and their can come no reproach to the men of the South for resorting to that expedient.⁷⁰

⁶⁸ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Nov. 9, 1916, Dallas Municipal Auditorium, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information. Pp. 35.

⁶⁹ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Nov. 21, 1912, pp. 23 New Orleans, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information, <https://archive.org/details/addressdelivered00ruth/page/n1>.

⁷⁰ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Nov. 19, 1912, New Willard Hotel, Washington, D.C., published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information. Pp. 16.
<https://archive.org/details/addressdelivered01ruth/page/n1>.

At Rutherford's speech she was applauded for her statement and it is noted in the text of the speech.

In a 1915 address in the Civic Auditorium Hall in San Francisco, Oct. 22, 1915 this is what Rutherford states about the Klan:

The North said the Freedman's Bureau was necessary to protect the negro. The South said the Ku Klux Klan was necessary to protect the white woman.

The trouble arose from interference on the part of the scalawags and carpetbaggers in our midst, and they were the ones to be dealt with first to keep the negroes in their rightful place.

Mrs. Rose's "Ku Klux Klan" is authority on this subject. Put that book into your schools.⁷¹

S.E.F. Rose (Laura Martin)⁷² specialized in writing books and pamphlets praising the Ku Klux Klan and on the strength of her pro-KKK writing was unanimously elected

Historian General of the UDC in 1916 at their 23rd national convention in Dallas.⁷³

KU KLUX KLAN

This booklet published by order of Mississippi Division U. D. C., to be sold and proceeds to go to the erection of a monument at Beauvoir, Miss. (home of Jefferson Davis), to the memory of Confederate Veterans, contains absolutely correct history of the origin of this famous Klan. Price, 25cts. each; postage, 1c. for single copies, 5c. for six, 5c. for twelve. Address MRS. S. E. F. ROSE, Historian, Mississippi Division U. D. C., West Point, Miss.

Advertisement *Confederate Veteran*, April 1910, Vol 18 No. 4 page 189.

From 1910 to 1917 her booklet and later her book praising the Ku Klux Klan as the great heroic effort of the ex-Confederate soldiers were offered for sale in the *Confederate Veteran* magazine.

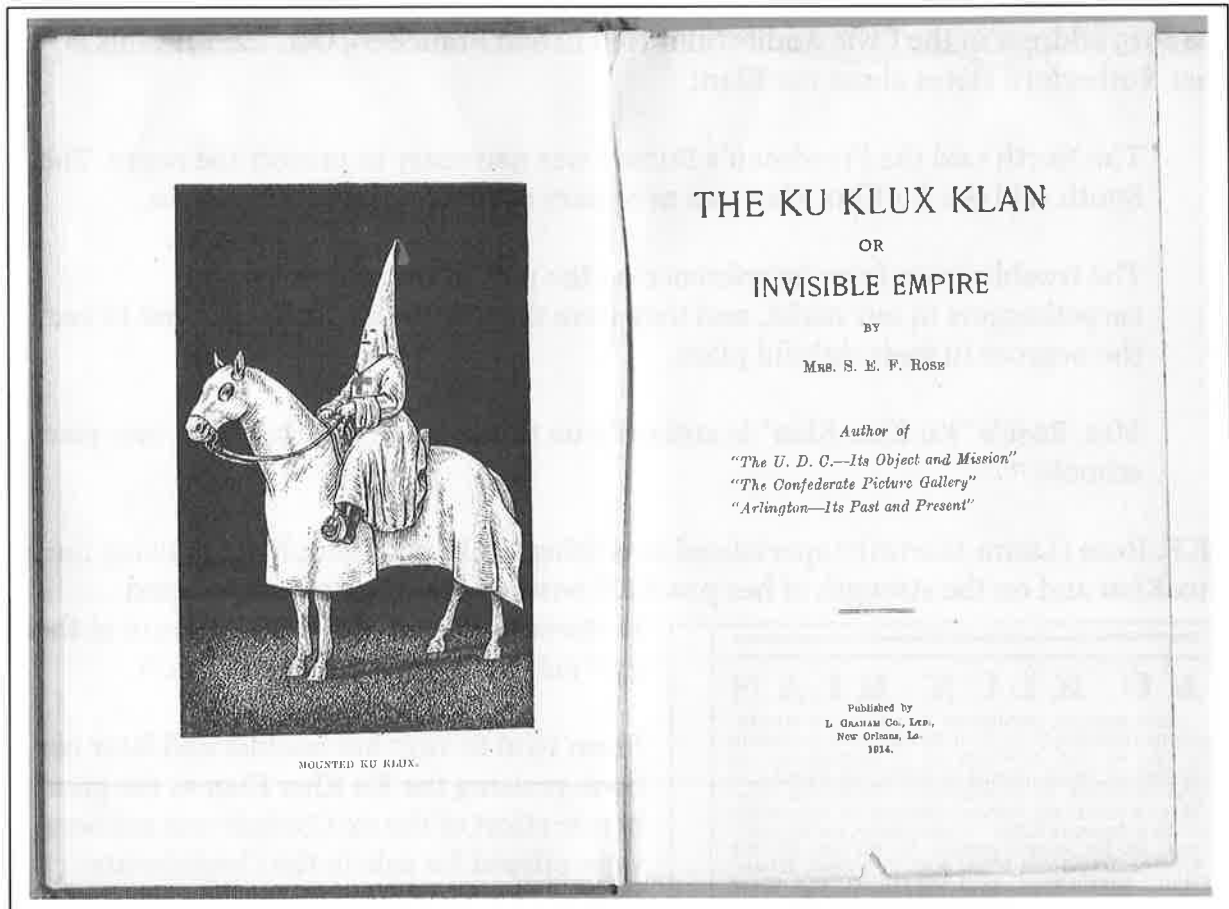
The first booklet was published by the Mississippi Division of the UDC.

⁷¹ Rutherford, Mildred Lewis, "Address," Oct. 22, 1915, Civic Auditorium Hall, published afterwards, pamphlet doesn't list publishing information Pp. 28. <https://archive.org/details/addressdelivered04ruth/page/n1>

⁷² Members of the UDC exclusively used their married names until sometime in the latter part of the 20th century.

⁷³ No author, "Mrs. S.E.F. Rose," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 25 No.7, July 1917, pp. 331.

When the book was first published it received the endorsement of the Sons of Confederate Veterans and the United Daughters of the Confederacy.



In the front piece of the book is stated:

This book was unanimously endorsed by the United Daughters of the Confederacy in Convention assembled at New Orleans, La., November 12-15, 1913, and co-operation pledged to secure its adoption as a Supplementary Reader in the schools and to place it in the Libraries of our Land.

And:

A Resolution to endorse this Book was adopted, without dissenting voice, by the Sons of Confederate Veterans at Reunion May 6-8, 1914 at Jacksonville, Florida, and their efforts pledged to have it placed in schools throughout the South.⁷⁴

Note that at both conventions the book was endorsed “unanimously” at the UDC convention and “without dissenting voice,” by the SCV convention. Laura Martin Rose’s

⁷⁴ Rose, S.E.F. (Laura Martin), “The Ku Klux Klan or Invisible Empire,” L. Graham Co., New Orleans, 1914. Unnumbered pages in the beginning of the book.

view was not the just the mainstream view of neo-Confederates, but nearly if not entirely the unanimous view of neo-Confederates.

DEDICATION.

THIS book is dedicated by the author to the Youth of the Southland, hoping that a perusal of its pages will inspire them with respect and admiration for the Confederate soldiers, who were the real Ku Klux, and whose deeds of courage and valor, have never been surpassed, and rarely equalled, in the annals of history.

Dedication, unpaginated in S.E.F. Rose's book, "Ku Klux Klan."

The book is dedicated to the young people of the South hoping that they understand that the Ku Klux Klan was the great heroic effort of the Confederate soldier after the Civil War. Rose repeats the purpose that the book is written for young people in the South. In the Introduction she states:


For the purpose of giving the youth of our land true history about this remarkable organization, whose services were of untold value to the South, during a dark period of her history, this book is written.

Again in the acknowledgements, she states:

This book goes out to the world with a mission to perform: "To bring these truths of history directly to the youth of our land."

THE KU KLUX KLAN
Or Invisible Empire
"K. K. K. Banner"

Just Out
— **Most Fascinating Book of the Day.**
Profusely illustrated. Letters from charter members of the Klan, biographical sketch of its great leader, Gen. Nathan Bedford Forrest. Indorsed by



leading educators, historians, the U.D.C. and S.C.V., who will cooperate in placing the book in schools and libraries. Interesting from start to finish. Price, 75 cents; postage, 10 cents. Order from author,

Mrs. S. E. F. Rose, West Point, Mississippi

Advertisement in the January 1915 Vol. 23 No. 1, page 46, *Confederate Veteran*.

The book was advertised in the *Confederate Veteran* until 1917.

Rose did not live out the term of her office as UDC Historian General and an obituary was published in the *Confederate Veteran* in July 1917.⁷⁵

Grace Meredith Newbill, another pro-KKK was appointed to replace her. In the same issue of the *Confederate Veteran* is an article about her having a bronze table unveiled in Pulaski, Tennessee to honor the KKK. In the ceremony dedicating the tablet the citizens of Pulaski renamed one street "Ku-Klux Avenue," and a hill was renamed "Cyclops hill. Newbill in

the article gleefully points out, "... when you come to see us we will take you from 'Ku-Klux Place' down 'Ku-Klux Avenue' to 'Cyclops Hill.'"⁷⁶ This is an activity in the CSMA section of the *Confederate Veteran* magazine, the parent organization of the Dallas Southern Memorial Association which erected the Robert E. Lee statue in Oak Lawn.

Newbill dies shortly thereafter also in 1918. The obituary is in the CSMA section of the *Confederate Veteran*.⁷⁷

There were in the *Confederate Veteran* magazine numerous articles praising the KKK by S.E.F. Rose and others over the years.

Not surprising when the movie "Birth of a Nation," directed by D.W. Griffith, where the Ku Klux Klan saves the day, was released in 1915 it was received with enthusiasm by neo-Confederate groups.

⁷⁵ No author, "Mrs. S.E.F. Rose," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 25 No.7, July 1917, pp. 331.

⁷⁶ Newbill, Grace Meredith, "Birthplace of the Ku-Klux Klan," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 25 No. 7, July 1917, pp. 335-36.

⁷⁷ No author, "Into the Silent Land," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 26, pp. 181.

The May 1916 issue of the *Confederate Veteran* had a full page inside front cover ad for the movie "Birth of a Nation" showings at the May 1916 Birmingham, Alabama UCV 26th

Confederate Veteran.

JEFFERSON THEATER **Birmingham** **STARTING SUNDAY May 14**
ONE WEEK MATINEES

TWICE DAILY . . MATINEES at 2:15, NIGHTS at 8:15
 A SPECIAL ENGAGEMENT FOR THE VETERANS' REUNION

OF
D. W. GRIFFITH'S
Epoch-Creating Spectacle

18,000 PEOPLE **3,000 HORSES**

THE
 BIRTH
 OF A
 NATION

COST \$500,000 **TOOK EIGHT MONTHS TO PRODUCE**

FOUNDED IN PART ON THOMAS DIXON'S "THE CLANSMAN"
 A NEW FORM OF ART THAT HAS MADE THE MOST PROFOUND IMPRESSION EVER KNOWN TO THE AMERICAN STAGE
 WILL THRILL THE SURVIVORS OF THOSE STIRRING YEARS OF OUR NATIONAL DEVELOPMENT LIKE A MESSAGE FROM THE OLD CAMP FIRES WHEN HISTORY WAS BEING MADE

Full page ad in *Confederate Veteran*, inside front cover, May 1916, Vol. 24 No. 5,

Annual Reunion. It was a twice daily showing which billed itself as "A Special Engagement for the Veterans' Reunion."

A nearly full page article in the same issue urged readers to see the movie stating, "Every visitor to Birmingham during the Reunion will have an opportunity to see the wonderful picture drama, 'The Birth of a Nation,' which will be shown there all during Reunion week."

The article discusses the movie, gives biographical information about the producer and leading actor. Emphasis is placed on the fact that David Wark Griffith the director and Henry B. Walthall, who plays the Klan leader are both sons of a Confederate soldier.⁷⁸

In the June 1917 issue has a review of the reunion and of the Confederate parade for the

reunion. Reported is that a contingent of a reviewed Ku Klux Klan appeared in the parade. The report is as follows:

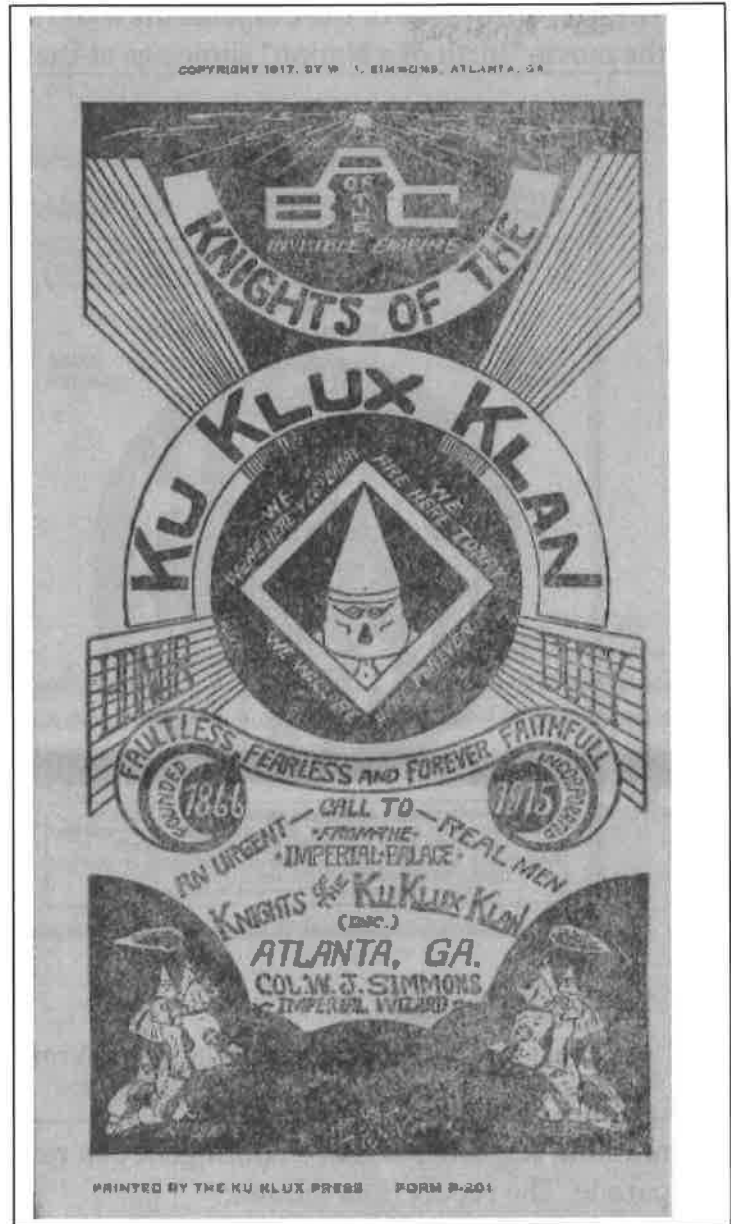
It was a wonderful moving scene, this line of some twenty-five thousand people, whose passage of any point was said to require two hours and thirty-three minutes. A unique feature was a group of Ku-Klux in costume. The report is that this mysterious organization is to be revived and that there will be a large representation of the Klan in Washington next year. As one of the staff of Chief Marshal McCrossin, in command of the Alabama National Guard, was Henry B. Walthall, so highly appreciated as the "Little Colonel" in "The Birth of a Nation." He was kept busy responding to greetings from all sides.

⁷⁸ No author, "The Birth of a Nation," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 24 No. 5, May 1916, page 237.

With all the pro-Klan neo-Confederate propaganda it is not surprising that the neo-Confederate groups would not welcome a revived Ku Klux Klan that conceptualized itself as a continuation of the Reconstruction Klan.

In this 1917 KKK recruitment pamphlet it can be seen that it saw itself as a continuation of the Reconstruction Klan. The cover gives its founding as 1866 and the date 1915 is given as a year of incorporation.

The pamphlet has three pages devoted to its historical narrative of the KKK during Reconstruction with some variations. In the pamphlet not just the former slave states, but the entire nation was saved by the KKK, "... for the Great Threat to the white race that loomed on the horizon of the South would have spread throughout the entire nation, had not the white robe of the Ku Klux Klan kept unrevealed those courageous and devoted hearts that were consecrated to saving the Anglo-Saxon civilization of our country, protecting the homes well-being of our people and shielding the virtue of womanhood."⁷⁹



It was the United Confederate Veteran reunion grand parade at their convention in Houston in 1920 which introduced the KKK to Texas with its pernicious and nearly disastrous results.

It was the efforts of neo-Confederate groups and newspapers like the *Dallas Morning News* with their promotion of the idea of the Ku Klux Klan of Reconstruction as great Confederate heroes that had plowed the ground to make way for the seeds of hate of the Ku Klux Klan in the 1920s.

⁷⁹ "Knights of the Ku Klux Klan," 1917 issued by Col. W.J. Simmons. Image is purchased from the Wisconsin Historical Society. It is also available at the DeGoyler library at SMU, "Earle Cabell: Family History," 16-1-41. Ben E. Cabell."

The Confederate Reunion was held in Houston from October 6 to 9, 1920 and there are descriptions of the Klan participation the reunion parade. In the parade train of dignitaries in automobiles there were some automobiles with “plastered banners” saying “Knights of the Ku Klux Klan, Atlanta, Ga.,” with one of them carrying “Imperial Grand Wizard” William Joseph Simmons. Later in the parade was a Ku Klux Klan contingent with marchers and horsemen and a float.

The appearance of the Klan in the Confederate Veterans parade generated interest and that night, Oct. 9, 1920, the first chapter, “Sam Houston Klan No. 1” was formed. From Houston the Klan grew rapidly in Texas.⁸⁰

Locally UDC chapters were involved in showings of D.W. Griffiths movie, “Birth of a Nation.”

In the Minutes for the 26th Annual Convention of the Texas Division of the UDC held in 1923, Dallas Chapter No. 6 had in their annual report the following as one of their accomplishments.

The Dallas Chapter sponsored the “Birth of a Nation,” which was largely attended by Children of the Confederacy as well as many other children. The Times-Herald offered a prize to children under 13 for the best essay written on the subject. Hundreds of essays were turned in – some splendid – the three best were published.⁸¹

In 1951 Dallas resident Wallace Walthall, brother of Henry B. Walthall, start of the movie “Birth of a Nation,” had a contest about the movie and a showing at the Lone Star Drive-In movie theater in Dallas. The showing was endorsed by all three local chapters of the UDC: Bonnie Blue Flag Chapter No. 1852, Mrs. Jack Orr president; Dallas Chapter No. 6, Mrs. Albert A. Hudspeth, president; Mary Custis Lee Chapter No. 2156, Mrs. V.T. Sellers, president; and J.H. Dunavant, recording secretary, Dallas Chapter No. 6.⁸²

At the 82nd National Convention of the SCV held in Dallas, Texas August 18-20, 1977, one of the entertainments was the showing of “Birth of a Nation,” with the program for the convention stating, “Birth of a Nation,’ a classic D.W. Griffith silent film about the Reconstruction era, will be shown following the choral presentation.”⁸³

⁸⁰ Alexander, Charles C., “Crusade for Conformity: The Ku Klux Klan in Texas, 1920-1930,” Texas Gulf Coast Historical Association, Publication Series, Vol. 6 No. 1, August, 1962. The participation in the parade are pages 1-2, organizing of first Klan chapter pages 4-5, and rapid expansion in Texas, 5-10.

⁸¹ “Dallas Chapter Nov. 6 Dallas Report for 1922,” in “Proceedings of the Twenty-Sixth Annual Convention of the Texas Division of the United Daughters of the Confederacy Held in Fort Worth, Texas October 17-19, 1922,” pp. 17-19, Klan on page 18.

⁸² No author, “Film Contest Rules Outlined,” *DMN*, 8/23/1951, page 16.

⁸³ “Official Program,” for the 82nd General Convention of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, page 3, Thursday Aug. 18, 1977 item under “Entertainment.”

It is not accidental that Klan revivals involve waving Confederate flags. The United Daughters of the Confederacy, the Confederate Veterans and other neo-Confederate groups had promoted the idea for decades that the Ku Klux Klan was Confederate heritage. The Ku Klux Klan wasn't misusing the Confederate flags, they were using them consistent with what they had been taught about the Ku Klux Klan in books such as S.E.F Rose's.

Soon with the Klan expanding and gaining influence in the state of Texas in the early 1920s the historical narrative of glorifying white violence would intersect with the historical narrative of the Confederate War Memorial that the Confederates were martyrs for states' rights. It would be Dallas' congressional representative Hatton W. Sumners' use of the argument of states' rights in his leading role in blocking federal anti-lynching legislation such as the Dyer Act in 1922 and later legislation in 1937.

Though a Klan revival had been launched and was underway, Sumner's states' rights arguments would prevent relief in the form of federal anti-lynching legislation. Similarly states' rights would be a theme used by many other representatives across the former slave states to opposed federal anti-lynching legislation.

The neo-Confederate praise of white violence isn't confined to the early 20th century.

In a May 1960 issue of *UDC Magazine* is a prize-winning article by a member of the Children of the Confederacy gleefully telling of the massacre of African American troops in Florida during Reconstruction. Titled, "Hog and Hominy Lick Carpetbaggers," it is written by "Randy Baird, 8th grade student, Maitland Junior High, and member of Elizabeth Abernethy C. of C. Orlando, Fla."

Baird explains that, "The Democrats and their families had suffered under the rule of the negroes who had been placed in public office in Columbia County." It was found out that the government was sending "negro soldiers" for the election. Baird writes, "As soon as the Democrats found this out they had a secret meeting and made plans. They sent word to all the Democrat families to say at home and stay off the streets."

The troops were seeking to be fed but "two little southern ladies, Mattie and Mary Hancock" refused. However, "Very shortly the leaders of the Democrats paid Mattie and Mary a visit." The two ladies did then agree to feed the troops, but said that the troops would have to "store your guns in the little shed room at the end of the porch."

When the supper was over, Baird finishes the story as follows:

When the soldiers went out to get their guns, they found about three hundred armed Democrats waiting for them. Confusion reigned! All of the negro soldiers were grabbed up and taken to the woods.

The old man never would tell the children what happened in the woods. He would always end his story by saying, "On election day, there were very few negro soldiers to be seen in town. And that my children was how 'Hog and Hominy' helped with the election in Columbia County."⁸⁴

It should not be surprising that there was murderous violence during the mid-20th century civil rights era when children are writing articles like this and adults are considering them worthy of publication.

AFRICAN AMERICAN MEN REPRESENTED AS BEASTS

The campaigns against federal anti-lynching legislation the ideology of states' rights worked in conjunction with neo-Confederate racist fear mongering that African American men were brutes driven by lust to rape white women and arguments that only the threat of lynching could deter them.

It is the neo-Confederate ideology of states' rights combined with this neo-Confederate ideology of African American men being lust driven brutes and a menace to white women that will combine to form the arguments of Dallas U.S. House Representative Hatton W. Sumner speeches in the U.S. House against federal anti-lynching legislation in 1922 and 1937. Sumners' effort to block these efforts proves successful and federal anti-lynching legislation isn't passed until 2018.

Stephen Dill Lee wrote a lengthy article "The South Since the War," of 300 pages, incorporated in Vol. 12 of the serial set of books, *Confederate Military History*, published in 1899. which is a declaration of the purpose of the SCV. It is full of white supremacist statements about the inferiority of African Americans and defense of segregation. However, what is of interest here is his section, "Lynchings." (Spelled that way.)

Stephen D. Lee isn't just another Confederate general. This is the same Lee for whom the SCV Stephen Dill Lee Institute is named after and wrote "The Charge" which is the official purpose for the existence of the SCV. Stephen D. Lee is a foundational figure in the neo-Confederate movement and is revered by the SCV.

Lee starts out by saying that lynching, "to the extent it has existed in the South is indefensible." However, after making that statement, he turns around and defends Southern lynching. The cause of lynching according to Lee is the propensity for African American men to be rapists and a dangerous situation has developed regarding this menace of rape because of civil rights for African Americans and the end of slavery. This quote is rather long, but I think that they make it very clear what neo-Confederate ideology was on this topic.

⁸⁴ Baird, Randy, "Hog and Hominy Lick Carpetbaggers," *UDC Magazine*, Vol. 23 No. 3, March 1960,

The crime invoking it began and has been continued solely by the irrepressible and worst element of the negro race, inaugurating a new crime, which was unknown and impossible in the days of slavery, and which, from that fact and the existence of slavery, invested it with peculiar horror and atrocity. That the race instinct is strongly implanted in human society is undeniable; and when this crime is committed under the peculiarly harrowing surroundings of isolation in sparsely-settled communities, upon helpless and unprotected white women, combined with the murder in many cases of the outraged female, it arouses a fierceness and revengeful spirit uncontrollable at times. It should be borne in mind, too, that a most abnormal state of society had pre-ceded the advent of this crime of rape, for which the Southern people were not alone responsible and which they tried to prevent. What is now regarded as a great political mistake was committed in the sudden enfranchisement and investment of the negro race with all the privileges of citizenship, including suffrage, lawmaking, and governing at the point of the bayonet a superior race, who had always been aggressive in the assertion of every political right. This race was under a ban as a punishment for so-called rebellion and insurrection. Their hands were tied when this great political and social reversion of the races was put in operation and upheld by the military government of the United States from 1867 to 1880 (almost). When the military power of the government in this period stood aside, apparently to see what the new State governments would do alone, those governments inaugurated a similar system only worse, in that negro militia, armed to the teeth, took the place of the white United States troops, and most offensively flaunted their newly-invested rights in the faces of the white people of the South, a proud, sensitive race.

And:

Instead of realizing the dangerous situation, the new lawmakers began discussing, with most inflammatory language and bearing, the matter of intermarriage of the races, the further disfranchisement of classes of whites who might throw obstacles to their proposed plans, and mixed schools in common for all children, white and black. When it is recalled now that in some of the States the negroes were largely in the majority, and in others nearly equally divided, this complete social upheaval was enough to turn the heads of the worst element of a more fortunate race than that of the negro.

And:

This new and hideous crime remained to be inaugurated by a younger generation of negroes, raised amidst the upheaval of those troublous times, while their fathers were mainly engaged in listening to inflammatory appeals, many of a social coloring, by designing and robbing strangers who held political power; and while their fathers themselves had laid aside their industrious habits of life and were leading a careless, wandering existence in their new-born freedom, not one-third of their time being given to productive labor.

Amid such surroundings the new generation of negro boys and men was raised. Parents, in a measure, gradually lost control of their boys in that loose period, and they grew up in idleness and with distorted and ugly ideas of their rights. They felt that they had to assert those rights personally by insolence and bravado toward the white males and females, among whom they had lived. The young negroes remembered that their fathers were held in place by the white troops of the government which had given them freedom. They saw soldiers of their own race parading almost every plantation and town to keep down the whites and hold the negroes in power. Even an ignorant negro boy could see that the "black man's party" was in power, and the "bottom rail on top."

And:

Under these conditions, when the brains of the carpet-baggers were lost to the negroes by a change of government into the hands of the Southern property-holders and educated class, the young negroes could scarcely appreciate the import of the change, and they found that dreams of social equality had vanished forever. This dream had never taken strong hold on the older blacks, but it had seized the younger ones. They recalled all the discussions and talks of the dark days as to the inter-marrying of the races, and the crime of raping a white woman came into existence as a sequence.

After condemning lynching Lee then justifies it:

The crime was indefensible; but those who condemn it must not forget the abnormal conditions. Those who engaged in lynching put them-selves outside of the law, but at the same time those who committed rape put themselves also outside of the law. It would always be better to abide by the law, for human society and civilization are based on the principle that the individual gives up his right of protection of life and property to the State which must perform this duty. But in the isolated spots where the crime was generally committed, it was almost impossible in many cases to get this legal protection promptly, and when it was needed, the community was swayed by a terrible cyclone of excitement and horror.

And Lee gives the standard neo-Confederate defense of anything bad in the South, that whatever is criticized exists somewhere in the "North":

It should not be forgotten, too, that lynchings occur sometimes at the North under similar atrocious surroundings. Outraged communities in all parts of the world take the law in their own hands and lynch those who endanger the sanctity of home and society.

Finally Lee states, "It is possible that some few lynchings may have been meted out to innocent parties, but barely possible."⁸⁵

⁸⁵ Lee, Stephen Dill, "The South Since the War," Vol. 9, of the serial set, Confederate Military History, Confederate Publishing Company, 1899, Atlanta, Georgia. Article is pp. 267-568. The section, "The Negro Problem," starts on

Stephen D. Lee wasn't an anomaly in neo-Confederate opinion on this.

The idea of African Americans being dangerous animals goes way back in the neo-Confederate movement. This is an extract from an article in the *Confederate Veteran* in 1906 defending the notorious Atlanta Race Riots in which white people attacked the African American community. The author refers to "brutal degenerate negroes" whose "... mind is too feeble and shallow ..." to be deterred by fear of punishment in the commission of rape. The author writes about African Americans that they are, "returning to a state of brutal savagery, every day degenerating, as a whole, morally and becoming an increasing menace to civilization." The author explains the greatest menace is that African American men are likely to rape white women. (I know it is a long quote, but please read it so you appreciate the extent of the appalling nature of Confederate heritage.) The *Confederate Veteran* was the official publication of the UCV, SCV, UDC, and the CSMA. It was published for 40 years from 1893 to 1932. From the editorial.

The Southern white man's exact knowledge of conditions was discredited, his advice scorned, his warnings unheeded. Although he had demonstrated repeatedly his fidelity to the restored Union and had shown his willingness to serve his country in the field when the emergency arose, he was deemed unworthy of confidence in questions affecting the negro. He was told to observe the law, when the law was unable to save him or, what was a thousand times more important, to save the dearest thing on earth to him—his women. He was told to contain himself, to be patient and wait the results of long distance Northern theorizing.

Meantime he was surrounded by a dense mass of ignorant negroes fast forgetting what little of self--control had been inherited from a former generation which had been trained to respect the white man and honor the white woman and rapidly returning to a state of brutal savagery, every day degenerating, as a whole, morally and becoming an increasing menace to civilization. Upon this vicious, ignorant, debased horde the puny schemes of race elevation were as snowflakes falling into the seething ocean. Still the Southern whites protested, warned, and implored; but Northern sentimentality was proof against the natural appeals of race, the ties of kinship, and the dictates of nature.

Now it has at length come to pass that the deluge has broken, and this problem, long in the brewing of its malign factors, must be effectually settled not alone by the South, but by the North as well. We have had enough of theorizing, temporizing, philosophizing; it is time to act. Northern people are not generally aware of the fact, but it is nevertheless true that the state of the mass of negroes in the South is so debased, so utterly, hopelessly, fearfully lacking in moral

page 346. The section, "Lynchings," pp. 352-360. NOTE: This serial set has been reprinted several times since the original serial set was published and it has been expanded with additional volumes.

conceptions, that there exists in many Southern States a condition which this or any other respectable journal would not dare describe except in the most general terms, so loathsome and shocking would the details be if truly and plainly stated.

White women and children are not safe; they cannot walk unguarded in the streets of the cities even in daytime. At night doors must be locked and windows barred, the revolver must be ready at hand if the black assailant is to be kept out. In many portions of the Black Belt the family of the white man lives in a constant state of siege; a fate worse than death awaits its members if they dare relax their vigilance for an hour. Northern people do not know the truth, and their journals are not enlightening them. The South, for very shame, is loath to let the facts be known; but a residence of even a few weeks in any portion of the country where the ignorant negro population is congested will convince the most skeptical that this hideous danger is always imminent and very real.

The crime of stealing is the very least of the negro's offenses against Southern society. The whites of the South have long since ceased to expect that he will respect the rights of property. Larceny is looked upon as a joke. As well might one expect the leopard to change his spots as the Southern negro to refrain from stealing. It is possible to protect against this comparatively minor offense; it is the hideous crimes, the unspeakable horrors, that are the real menace. Against these the law is powerless, because it recognizes no punishment adequate to the offense; it can devise nothing that will prevent its recurrence, and the harm done is irreparable.

Ordinary punishment, adequate in the North to check crime, fails entirely in the South to restrain the negro even from the commission of minor misdemeanors. The disgrace of imprisonment does not touch him, as a rule. In many Southern towns, when cold weather approaches and the shiftless and improvident blacks feel its chill, numbers of them deliberately and openly commit theft in order to be arrested, convicted, and sentenced to the penitentiary during the winter months, there to be maintained in comparative comfort at the State's expense until spring returns. When, once again at liberty, they come back, they are met at the train by their neighbors, relatives, and friends and escorted in triumph to their lurking places, as if they were heroes returning from an honorable undertaking instead of idle, vicious, debased criminals let loose from jail.

The fear of immediate and dreadful death is powerless to control the brutal, degenerated negro when his passions are aroused. His mind is too feeble and shallow to consider the consequences of his crime; and the brute in him, once awakened, reckons nothing whatever of future punishment. The force of example, even in its most terrifying form, when frenzied mobs wreak vengeance in burnings and sickening torture, does not impress itself upon this class for more

than a very brief time. Its intellect is so inferior and its imagination so utterly diseased that the effect of such horrid spectacles soon wears off.⁸⁶

In the 21st century The Sons of Confederate Veterans have offered the book, *The Negro: The Southerners Problem*, by Thomas Nelson Page, originally published in 1904 in at least six of their merchandise catalogs including the 2015-2016 catalog. They currently they offer it online, but NOT in the *Confederate Veteran* magazine.⁸⁷ It was also offered in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without a caption.⁸⁸

Page had collected together his earlier published essays and articles for the book. Its dedication reads, "To all those who truly wish to help solve the race problem, these studies are respectfully dedicated."

The 2004 SCV Merchandise catalog states, "Despite its politically incorrect title, this reprint of the 1904 original by Thomas Nelson Page is a thoughtful examination of the history of the Negro in the South and his place in American (and Southern) society. States that the chief cause of post-war racial tension in the South grew out of the ignorance of the North of actual Southern social conditions, and ignorance in the South of the power and temper of the North."

There is disclaimer, "Presented here for research purposes." This was included probably to provide for plausible deniability for the SCV given this book's notoriously racist content.

The book argues that African Americans (Page uses "Negroes") are racially inferior, portrays African American slavery as pleasant, and supports disfranchisement of African Americans. However, this book will focus on the books discussion of lynching.

In the chapter, "Lynching of Negroes – Its Cause and Its Prevention," Page opens up the discussion wanting to assure the reader, "To say that Negroes furnish most of the ravishers is not to say that all Negroes are rapists." (Ravishing is an archaic term for rape.)

Page sees the cause of lynching being the end of slavery and the period of Reconstruction during which he believes African Americans acquired a belief in racial equality.

⁸⁶ Editorial reprinted from the Bellman of Minneapolis, Minnesota, "Northern View of Race Troubles," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 14 No. 12, Dec. 1906, pp. 546-47. This article in its entirety is available online at www.confederatepastpresent.org.

⁸⁷ Online store, <https://scv.secure-sites.biz>, printed out 8/7/2016. *Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005*, page 30; *Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006*, page 30; *Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009*, page 29; *Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010*, page 29; *Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012*, pp.29 *Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016* page 29. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have this book listed.

⁸⁸ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 13, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 Nol. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

Page writes, "... yet during the later period of slavery, the crime of rape did not exist, nor did it exist to any considerable extent for some years after emancipation." During the Civil War he asserts, "... the Negroes were the loyal guardians of the women and children" and were very secure.

Problems soon arose, according to Page:

Then came the period and process of Reconstruction, with its teachings. Among these was the teaching that the Negro was the equal of the white, that the white was his enemy, and that he must assert his equality. The growth of the idea was a gradual one in the Negro's mind. This was followed by a number of cases where members of the Negro militia ravished white women; in some instances in the presence of their families.

Page sees a new generation of African Americans prone to violence and rape because they don't have the habits of the loyal slaves and do have ideas of racial equality. African Americans in general are held to condone the rape of white women.

As the old relation, which had survived even the strain of Reconstruction, dwindled with the passing of the old generation from the stage, and the "New Issue" with the new teaching took its place, the crime broke out again with renewed violence. The idea of equality began to percolate more extensively among the Negroes. In evidence of it is the fact that since the assaults began again they have been chiefly directed against the plainer order of people, instances of attacks on women of the upper class, though not unknown, being of rare occurrence.

Conditions in the South render the commission of this crime peculiarly easy. The white population is sparse, the forests are extensive, the officers of the law distant and difficult to reach; but, above all, the Negro population have appeared inclined to condone the fact of mere assault.

And:

The Negro had the same animal instincts in slavery that he exhibits now; the punishment that follows the crime now is quite as certain, as terrible, and as swift as it could have been then. So, to what is due the alarming increase of this terrible brutality? To the writer it appears plain that it is due to two things: first, to racial antagonism and to the talk of social equality that inflames the ignorant Negro, who has grown up unregulated and undisciplined; and, secondly, to the absence of a strong restraining public opinion among the Negroes of any class, which alone can extirpate the crime. In the first place, the Negro does not generally believe in the virtue of women. It is beyond his experience. He does not generally believe in the existence of actual assault. It is beyond his comprehension. In the next place, his passion, always his controlling force, is now, since the new teaching, for the white women.

Page argues that the South lives in terror of white women being raped. Page then gives justification for lynching, such as delays in the law, that fact that rape by an African American man is especially horrifically awful because of his race, describing it as “unspeakable.”

They simply could not be put in print. It is these unnamable horrors which have outraged the minds of those who live in regions where they have occurred, and where they may at any time occur again, and, upsetting reason, have swept from their bearings cool men and changed them into madmen, drunk with fury and the lust of revenge.

Page points out that burning African Americans shocks the public, but advises:

Only, a deeper shock than even this is at the bottom of their ferocious rage—the shock which comes from the ravishing and butchery of their women and children.

It is not necessary to be an apologist for barbarity because one states with bluntness the cause. The stern underlying principle of the people who commit these barbarities is one that has its root deep in the basic passions of humanity; the determination to put an end to the ravishing of their women by an Inferior race, or by any race, no matter what the consequence.

Page then recounts some more horrific rape cases to inflame the reader to accept his argument. Page then points out that there is lynching of African Americans in the “North” which he asserts is worse. Page then sees the problem worsening.

For a time, the assaults by Negroes were confined to young women who were caught alone in solitary and secluded places. The company of a child was sufficient to protect them. Then the ravishers grew bolder, and attacks followed on women when they were in company. And then, not content with this, the ravishers began to attack women in their own homes.

Page also argues, “The charge that is often made, that the innocent are sometimes lynched, has little foundation.”

The chapter is a horror itself and goes on and on and can be considered an incitement to lynch in itself.⁸⁹ The book itself is the product of a smug racist and is truly idiotic. Yet, this is the book that the SCV merchandise catalog recommends to SCV membership as “a thoughtful examination” on race relations.

In this promotion of Nelson Page’s 1904 book by the SCV, an organization whose credibility and ideology is promoted by Confederate the monuments, you can see that not only does the monument provide a states’ rights ideology to work with this racist fear mongering, but actually promoted these racist raging.

⁸⁹ Page, Thomas Nelson, “The Negro: The Southerner’s Problem,” Charles Scribner’s Sons, New York, New York, 1904, Chapter, “The Lynching of Negroes – Its Cause and Its Prevention,” pp. 86-118.

If the monument is brought down, there will be one less item supporting states' rights ideology, but also one less item giving the SCV credibility and thus they will be less able to enable the racist fear mongering of Thomas Nelson Page and Stephen D. Lee.

HATTON SUMNERS STATES RIGHTS AND LYNCHING

Hatton Sumners was a leading opponent of federal anti-lynching laws. As reported in the *DMN* in 1937 during his fight in the U.S. House of Representatives against the Costigan-Wagner anti-lynching bill:

The bill was assailed by Representative Hatton W. Sumners of Dallas, Chairman of the Judiciary Committee ... Sumners led his fight against the bill as he did fifteen years ago when he fought the Dyer bill on the same subject.⁹⁰

The fight and defeat of the Dyer bill in 1922 and the Costigan-Wagner bill in 1937 were the two most significant legislative struggles to pass federal anti-lynching legislation in the 20th century and to a great extent the reason anti-lynching legislation wasn't passed until 2018. Sumners campaigned against federal anti-lynching legislation with the argument that he was defending states' rights.

If you want to learn more about Hatton Sumner's opposition to federal anti-lynching legislation there are two possible sources of information which will fail you utterly. One is the website of the Hatton W. Sumners Foundation, in checking the biographical material while visiting the web page on 1/28/2019 the topic of lynching was entirely omitted. Though for a person who is familiar with how Dallas institutions process Dallas history this is no surprise at all.

The other is the entry in the Texas State Historical Association (TSHA) online handbook. The entry, though somewhat long, has absolutely nothing on lynching when checked 2/4/2019. Though for the TSHA handbook, for a historically informed individual, and one who has used the TSHA handbook before, this is hardly surprising at all. What is also astounding is that the TSHA uploaded this entry July 15, 2010.

Sumners was born in 1875 in Tennessee. His father was a captain in the Confederate Army. His father moved to the Dallas area in 1894 and settled in Garland. Sumners would have been 19 years old and over 20 years old when the Confederate War Memorial had its cornerstone laid and was unveiled. In 1912 he was elected to an at-large U.S. Congressional district for Texas, and then in 1914 elected to congress from the Fifth District which included Dallas. He served as chairman of the House Committee on the Judiciary from 1932 to 1946 when he retired.⁹¹

⁹⁰ No author, "Maverick Votes for Bill," *DMN*, 4/16/1937, page 9. It seems to be an add on to the front page article, No Author, "House Passes Antilynch Bill Despite Sumners' Hot Fight," *DMN*, 4/16/1937, pp. 1,9.

⁹¹ Monroe, Mary Catherine, "Sumners, Hatton William," Texas State Historical Association, online, <https://tshaonline.org/handbook/online/articles/fsu04>, saved 11/15/2018.

Whether Sumners was a Ku Klux Klan member or a Klay sympathizer isn't definitively established despite claims in some historical writing. In a 1922 article in the *DMN*, "Cyclops Denounces News; Says Dallas Will Have a New Morning Newspaper." In the *DMN* reporting on a Klan rally one of the speakers John Pope is angry with the anti-KKK statements of a General Crane that a Klan oath "was contrary to the oath taken by peace officers and those in Government employ."

Pope rebuts Crane by stating:

"General Crane in his remarks indicts Senator Morris Sheppard and our Congressman, Hatton W. Sumners, in his charges that the klan oath is contrary to the Constitution," he continued.⁹²

However, raging Klan members aren't really reliable sources. Independent confirmation of this assertion hasn't been found. Intensive research hasn't uncovered any statements made by Sumners about the Ku Klux Klan either favorable or in opposition or stating or denying whether he was a member. However, there are over 200 boxes of Sumner papers at one archive alone and an answer perhaps it out there remaining to be discovered.

From newspaper articles Sumners does appear to have the same or similar ideas about the Civil War and secession as expressed at the original cornerstone dedication and monument unveiling of the Confederate War Memorial. Sumners spoke to the Sterling Price Camp of the UCV on Sunday July 1, 1923 praising Confederates. The *DMN* article about the event shows that Sumners mentioned all the key points made by the speakers at the cornerstone laying and the unveiling of the Confederate War Memorial. Sumners mentions, "their deeds of valor on battlefields, even in the face of overwhelming odds," reiterating that Confederates were military heroes even though they lost, because of "overwhelming odds." The Confederates in Sumners' speech had "the spirit of self-sacrifice," repeating another theme from the original speeches for the Confederate War Memorial of self-sacrifice. What the Confederate soldier fought for Sumners explains is:

"The Confederate soldier, even when he went to war and fought against his brothers in the Union Armies, did not fight against the Constitution of the United States. He fought for what he believed to be his right under the Constitution of the United States."

Sumners is stating the idea that the Confederate soldier fought for states' rights. The article also included grievance over Reconstruction, stating "And then, even with carpetbaggers from the North roaming their land and plundering on every side, they set to work and builded this civilization of ours."⁹³ The public reading this report would

⁹² No author, "Cyclops Denounces News; Says Dallas Will Have a New Morning Newspaper," *DMN*, 8/26/1922, page 1, 8.

⁹³ No author, "Confederates Lauded by Speaker," *DMN*, 7/2/1923, page 18.

know the narratives of Reconstruction and understand exactly how ex-Confederates “built this civilization of ours.”

Sumners on numerous occasions spoke at neo-Confederate events. The earliest record is at an ex-Confederate and old settler’s reunion in McKinney in 1912 and continuing to 1943.⁹⁴ However, what he said at these speeches, excepting the one *DMN* article quoted previously in this essay before hasn’t been discovered.⁹⁵ Notably Sumners spoke at the dedication of the Robert E. Lee statue in Oak Lawn Park in 1936. Sumners also worked to get building materials from historic buildings in DC and Virginia to be incorporated physically in the construction of the replica Arlington Hall in Oak Lawn Park.⁹⁶

Sumners clearly saw that the anti-lynching bill would threaten white supremacy in the South.

In a February 6, 1922 letter Sumner warns Hon. Wiley A. Bell of danger.

... but the unfortunate fact and the dangerous fact is that the negroes have organized in the North now for the first time and are demanding the right to control the legislative policy of the Republican Party with regards to matters of this sort, especially with regard to the race question in the South.⁹⁷

Again in a March 22, 1922 letter to S.L. Staples, Texas Secretary of State he writes:

We have entered upon a very dangerous condition in the evolution of the race question. For the first time the negroes of the North are organized along racial lines. They are threatening present Members of Congress with defeat in the primaries and, in effect, are demanding of the Republicans the right to determine the national policy with regard to the race problem of the South.

⁹⁴ A complete listing of *DMN* articles about Sumner speaking at Confederate events will be in a forthcoming history of Sumners and his opposition to lynching, and in a later version of this paper.

⁹⁵ At one historical society there are over 200 boxes of his papers, and there are collections elsewhere.

⁹⁶ Correspondence with and by Hatton W. Sumners details the search and finding of materials from Stratford Hall, Lee’s “ancestral home,” Monticello, and from some residual material from a building in the capitol was sent to be used in the construction of the replica Arlington Hall. This is a modern day continuation of an older Medieval practice of getting sacred relics, like a slice of the “True Cross” or the bones or finger of a saint to be held in a newer Cathedral. It shows that the persons constructing the replica Arlington Hall wanted it to be part of a metaphysical Confederacy, a sacred Confederate space, and not simply a reduced size model of a plantation home. This is in Box 34 of the Hatton W. Sutton Papers, from folder 33 folder 4.3, Dallas Historical Society folder A46213.33.4.3.

⁹⁷ Feb. 6, 1922, letter from Hatton W. Sumners to Hon. Wiley A. Bell, North Texas Building, Dallas, Texas. Dallas Historical Society folder A46213.70.3.4 (1922). This would be Box 70, folder 3.4. There is a guide to the Sumners papers by box and folder groups.

Sumners further explains that members of the U.S. House don't privately support the bill, but are doing it only under political pressure.⁹⁸ This idea of the danger of organized "negroes" in the "North" is repeated in other letters.

Sumners in a Jan. 2, 1922 letter to Tom C. Gooch, was publisher, editor, and president of the *Dallas Time Herald*, in reply to Gooch's supportive letter, goes further and connects it to a neo-Confederate narrative of Reconstruction as well as states' rights. Gooch thought that a cartoon the DMN had on the lynching issue was unfair to Sumner: In reply Sumner writes:

I have also noticed the cartoon to which you refer. The position taken with regards to this matter is one of the most remarkable things which has ever come under my observation. I am glad to know that the TIMES-HERALD still believes that the people of the States ought to be required to deal with matters concerning their own police regulations. There isn't one Member of Congress from the South who does not recognize this proposed bill as a revival of a spirit and policy akin to that of the "carpetbag regime" and I know of nobody here, who has given the matter serious consideration, who does not recognize that this proposed legislation, if enacted and if held constitutional, would not reduce mob violence, but on the contrary would aggravate the situation.⁹⁹

In an Oct. 26, 1921 letter to Hon. George B. Terrell, Texas Commissioner of Agriculture, Sumners states:

In my judgment, if this Bill is enacted into law and sustained by the Supreme Court, it will go further towards the destruction of the State governments than all other things which have occurred since the Civil War.¹⁰⁰

The time period, "since the Civil War," would include Reconstruction and the 13th, 14th and 15th Amendments. The letter is also utilizing the ideology of states' rights to block federal anti-lynching legislation, the ideology for which the Confederate soldier was a martyr in the speeches at the cornerstone dedication and the unveiling of the Confederate War Memorial.

In Sumners two speeches against federal anti-lynching legislation, in 1922 and 1937, the idea of states' rights is the central focus of the speeches. The speeches include standard items in neo-Confederate historical narratives of the Civil War and Reconstruction.

⁹⁸ March 22, 1922, letter from Hatton W. Sumners to Hon. S.L. Staples, Secretary of State, Austin, Texas. Dallas Historical Society folder A46213.70.3.4 (1922). This would be Box 70, folder 3.4.

⁹⁹ Jan. 3, 1922, letter from Hatton W. Sumners to Mr. Tom Gooch, c/o Dallas Time Herald, Dallas, Texas. Dallas Historical Society folder A46213.70.3.2 (1922). This would be Box 70, folder 3.2

¹⁰⁰ Oct. 26, 1921

The speeches incorporate neo-Confederate historical narratives and ideas concerning Reconstruction, abolitionism, race, slavery and the Civil War showing that Sumners was well informed about the ideas of the neo-Confederate movement of his time and had a neo-Confederate view of American history. The speeches include a lurid racism in regard to rape that will leave the modern reader gasping.

The Jan. 4, 1922 speech of Sumners as reported in the Congressional Record seems to have been censored to change some of the language that Sumners used. The *DMN* reports that Sumner said, “Nigger agitators, white and black, have been going over the country lying about my people, and I have grown tired of it.” Also, in that article it is reported that Sumner, in challenging some lynching statistics, refers to a newspaper report that in Duluth they “had lynched three niggers at one time.”¹⁰¹ The Congressional Record instead says “these hired Negro agitators and white negroettes that have been going over the country lying about my people...” and “had lynched three Negroes.”¹⁰²

STATES RIGHTS

In both the 1922 speech Sumners repeatedly refers to states’ rights in various ways. Sumners uses the terms “dictatorship” and “vassalage.”

This bill, challenging as it does the relative governmental efficiency of the States and the integrity of purpose of their governmental agencies, placing the Federal Government, as it does, in the attitude of an arbitrary dictator assuming coercive powers over the State, their officers, and their citizens in matter of local police control, would do incomparable injury to the spirit of mutual respect and trustful cooperation between the Federal Government and the States essential to the efficiency of government. As a precedent, this bill, establishing the principles which it embodies and the congressional power which it assumes to obtain, would strip the States of every element of sovereign power, control, and final responsibility for the personal and property protection of its citizens; and would all but complete the reduction of the States to a condition of governmental vassalage awaiting only the full exercise of the congressional power.

In another section of the speech:

This bill proposes a direct and humiliating governmental vassalage of the States, and you can not make anything else out of it.

¹⁰¹ No author, “Sumners Answers Critics of South,” *DMN*, 1/5/1922, page 5.

¹⁰² Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, speech is pages 797-807, comment on page 797.

The terms “Sovereign” or “sovereignty” is referenced six times in his speech.¹⁰³

Sumner refers to federal “overlordship” in his 1937 speech:

Do not believe for 1 minute you can establish this sort of power in the Federal Government as Against the States of the South — and that is what you are seeking to do under this bill today — and that the day will not come in our Government's life when the Federal power will be sent against your States with the same sort of overlordship. The question before statesmen today is whether or not you want to establish this power proposed in this bill as a part of the governmental policy of this Nation.

In another section the federal government “overlord” is used.

You cannot establish a great governmental overlord here in Washington, place the hand of superior authority above the voice of the elected representatives of the people, and perpetuate this system of government.

Sovereign is used twice in the 1937 speech such as this example:

You are giving power to the Federal Government to lay its hands in coercion upon the Governor of your State and upon the officers of your State, upon the sovereign States themselves, to hale them before a Federal court and put them in stripes if perchance they fail to obey the mandate of the Federal Government with regard to procedure in the discharge of their State governmental duties.

However, states’ rights is referred to in different ways without using those specific terms. In one section he states:

PAGE 3531 2nd Column

By its nature our Government is pyramidal in its shape. It starts with the individual and builds up through the community, up through the States, to the capstone, which is the Federal Government.

In another section he states:

May I say that we have some editors down in my country advocating this bill. What I am afraid of is that in this whole country we have a chronic acute attack of

¹⁰³ Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, speech is pages 797-807. Use of the term “dictatorship” on page 798 1st column. “Vassalage” is used on page 798 2nd column and page 800 2nd column. “Sovereignty” or “Sovereign” is used on page 798 1st column and 2nd column, three times on page 800 1st column, and page 803 2nd column.

"federalitis." [Applause.] You cannot find better evidence of it" than that in this year 1937 the American Congress actually has in contemplation the passage of this bill.¹⁰⁴

NEO-CONFEDERATE HISTORICAL NARRATIVES

In the 1922 speech there is this:

Away back yonder our ancestors, the men from New England, many of them, brought their shiploads of slaves from the jungles of Africa and sold them to my people. It was a tragedy, in so far as the white people were concerned. I do not know how you think about it, but it was not a tragedy in so far as the black man was concerned. Sometimes I think God Almighty had a hand in that, because slavery was the only door that swung open to give the black man a chance to get away from savagery of the jungle. There is not a black man in the gallery up there who does not owe to the institution of slavery his contact with civilization. It was a curse to the white man, but it so happened that under that institution of slavery these poor black people had a chance to come to America, and through the institution of slavery they got a species of coercion that enabled them in a few generations to break away from the habits of indolence that had grown upon them by reason of their centuries and centuries of tropical residence, and eventually it enabled their children to be sent to school under conditions of civilization. But during its continuance the institution of slavery was sapping the vitality of southern civilization.¹⁰⁵

One theme which goes back to antebellum times and continued into 20th century neo-Confederate narratives is that Africans benefited from slavery in terms of being civilized and taught to work.

The other is a neo-Confederate assertion that slavery in the former slave states is a consequence of New England slave traders selling slaves to them, that slave traders pushed slaves on the former slave states. This is like reasoning that people are induced to purchase groceries because there are grocery stores rather than groceries are built to meet the demand for groceries. It is also something that would be known by someone who is very much informed about neo-Confederate historical narratives.

There is this section in reference to Reconstruction:

¹⁰⁴ Sumners, Hatton W., "Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568," Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35. "Overlordship" both uses on page 3531 2nd column, "sovereign" page 3532 1st column and page 3533 1st column, "pyramid" page 3531 2nd column, "federalitis," page 3535 2nd column.

¹⁰⁵ Sumners, Hatton W., "Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086," Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, speech is pages 797-807, slavery mentioned on page 798 2nd Column.

They were brought there. They did not come of their own accord and when they were freed the people of the North, not understanding the situation, just as they do not understand this situation now, under the passions engendered by the war. did that thing which had never been done before since the men of our blood first left northern Europe and started out to build up the civilization of the world. It was the first time in all the centuries when one branch of the white family tried to put the heel of another race upon the neck of men of their own blood. I do not hold any prejudice against you. I realize this was the aftermath of a great war, and what happens in such times must be judged in the light of the passions which war always engenders. And these million of black people were turned loose as they were — with a responsibility they were not fitted to meet.¹⁰⁶

The assertion is that Reconstruction, though not mentioned by name, was a vindictive oppression of the former Confederate states, was race treason, where Africans were put over white people because “people of the North” didn’t know any better about Africans, were “not understanding the situation.” Also, that African Americans weren’t ready for freedom.

This is a repeat of John H. Reagan’s speech at the Confederate War Memorial in which he complained about attempts to put the white South under “an inferior race.”

Sumners would not have to say the entire white supremacist Reconstruction mythology that newly freed African Americans unfitted for freedom would results in “negro misrule.” Sumners is arguing that federal anti-lynching legislation would be a repeat of a mistake that resulted in Reconstruction. Specifically Sumners argues that the bill would encourage African Americans to rape.

What will the criminal read in this bill? Take the hearings on this bill and from one end to the other there is not one word of condemnation. What will they read in this bill as they gather in their dives? Do not misunderstand me. I say that there are relatively only a few such among the great body of black people of my country. Where you are making the mistake and where you continue to make the mistake is in creating the impression that you propose to defend them.¹⁰⁷

In the 1937 speech he states:

You sold them to us, you brought them in your boats from New England and sold them. You stole them out of Africa and sold them to us. [Applause.]

¹⁰⁶ Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), page 798 2nd Column.

¹⁰⁷ Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, speech is pages 797-807. Assertion that slavery was foisted on the South and was beneficial to enslaved Africans, and assertions about Reconstruction and Freedmen, page 798 2nd column, assertion that the anti-lynching legislation will encourage rape, page 799 2nd column.

As soon as you got your money you got all hot and bothered about their being in the condition into which you sold them. I am glad they were freed. Slavery was not only wrong to the black man, but it was fast destroying the civilization of the South. And there is an interesting thing about that, too. It seems that a divine providence has guided and guarded these colored people since they came here, the most interesting chapter I know of in the history of the races of men. There was no door that was open to them that could liberate them from the jungles of Africa except the door of slavery. They had lived through ages and ages in Africa, in the tropics. Living was easy; they did not have to struggle, their minds were not developed. Nobody would have hired them and brought them out. Only slavery opened this door. Horrible as it was, it was the only possible escape. If they had got out and had not had the protection of ownership of their bodies they probably would have been destroyed by the white man's vices.

Because of the fact that they were brought into close contact with white men and were compelled to work, they improved. Ages and ages of inaction made them indisposed to work. They were compelled to work, and through the use of their hands they developed their brains. Even the War between the States seemed to have been necessary for them, because if they had been freed — and they would have been freed long before they were if you people from New England had left us alone; but if they had been freed without your interference they would have settled down on their masters' plantations. War seemed to have been necessary to break even in a measure the old attachment. I am not sure that the carpetbagger was not necessary to drive this line of cleavage a little deeper. It was a pretty hard one to drive through. I am not sure but that the carpetbagger was necessary and, to be truthful with you, I am not sure that the pestiferous interference of you people from the rest of the country, such as is manifested by this bill, may not have been necessary — I am not certain about it. If our situation had been reversed, I suppose we would have misbehaved as badly as you have, so I am not angry with you.¹⁰⁸

This section has several neo-Confederate ideas. One is, as in the 1922 speech, was that slavery was foisted on the South. However, new in the 1937 speech, that reveals Sumners to be a close student of neo-Confederate historical narratives, is the assertion that the slave states would have freed the slaves on their own, but the abolitionists were so rude and antagonizing that the slave states refused to do so. Repeated, is the assertion that Africans were civilized and improved by slavery.

¹⁰⁸ Sumners, Hatton W., "Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568," Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35, page 3534 2nd column and 3535 1st Column.

In the 1922 speech Sumner used the term “Civil War,” in 1937 the name, “War between the States,” is used instead reveal a close adherence to neo-Confederate historical narratives.¹⁰⁹

In the 19th and early 20th century some white people were basically whiter than others. The 1937 speech incorporates a new racial element that the form of American government is Anglo-Saxon in two sections of the speech. In one section he states:

I do not at this moment distinguish between the written and the basic Constitution. Back in the Germanic forests in the first century, Tacitus looked in upon the people who afterward were known as the Angles and the Saxons. He saw the people gathered together to attend to the business of government. A leader submitted a proposition to them. If those people, the Anglo-Saxons, people like you and I ...

In another sense in discussing the New Deal economic reforms he states:

When we began this administration, due to economic conditions, that fascinatingly interesting thing which has often happened in Anglo-Saxon governmental history occurred.

And also stated

When this administration came into power all over the country we recognized instinctively the existence of this crisis which I spoke of; that it required a quicker pick-up and a stronger power than Anglo-Saxon institutions ordinarily afford.¹¹⁰

The British government is even to this day a monarchy with titles of nobility. The American government was from the beginning a republic with prohibitions of titles of nobility. The upper house of the federal legislators is called the Senate and those holding seats in that house Senators clearly demonstrating that the ancient Roman republic was a source for the construction of the American republic. Further writers of the French Enlightenment were sources for ideas in conceiving the American republic. The separation of powers in the American government draws from the writings of Baron de Montesquieu, Charles-Louis de Secondat, a Frenchman.¹¹¹ There definitely are elements

¹⁰⁹ For use of “Civil War” in 1922, Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, speech is pages 797-807, use on page 798 2nd column. For use of “War between the States,” in 1937, Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35, page 3535 1st column.

¹¹⁰ Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35, “Saxon” references page 3531 2nd column, 3532 1st column.

¹¹¹ Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy entry for Baron de Montesquieu, <https://plato.stanford.edu/entries/montesquieu/>. I give this source for easy access.

in the American method of governing and law which derives from the British historical experience also. The American Constitution draws on multiple sources in European history and perhaps more of which the author of this essay is not informed.

The idea that the Constitution and American governance derives from a single ethnic group and is inherent to that ethnic group over two millennia is a racist ideology.

Another historical idea advanced by Sumners is that lynching is “home-made law” of pioneer folk. This speech is in 1937 right after the centennial. Though not the topic of this paper, the reader might look at some of the murals again.¹¹²

Besides the racism present in the sections of the speeches already discussed, the speeches contain repeatedly an incendiary appeal to alarm over the rape of white women by African American men.

Race riots in the early 20th century were white people going on a rampage attacking African Americans and burning down buildings. In this extract Sumners argues that a federal anti-lynching law will cause race riots. From the 1922 speech:

Let me tell you something. Suppose this other thing happens-and you can do it under this bill-suppose that a black man takes a little white child and drags her off into seclusion where no voice can hear and no hand can help, and rapes that child, and the father of that child and the brothers of the child come up on him and kill him, and the Federal Government takes them away in the face of public sentiment and places them in the Federal penitentiary, and then has a tax of \$10,000 levied against the county for the benefit of the rapist's family, a part of which sum might go to buy that family an automobile to ride by the home of the innocent victim, do you think, as a matter of common sense, with such a policy you could long prevent a condition in that country like those which developed in East St. Louis, Omaha, and Chicago?¹¹³

There is this section in the speech:

I do not know why, and you do not, either, but there is nobody up there in Yankeedom or down in my country that can obliterate those lines of racial distinction. God Almighty drew them in the councils of his infinite wisdom, and put the instinct of racial preservation there to protect them. You ask me what we will do to protect it. We will do whatever is necessary, that is all. Men who do not

¹¹² Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35, “home-made” on page 3533 2nd column and 3534 1st column.

¹¹³ Sumners, Hatton W., “Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086,” Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, page 797 2nd column.

live in the presence of the danger do not hear the call. [Applause.] Nature does not waste her energies. When men respond to that call, they respond to a law that is higher than the law of self-preservation. It is the call to the preservation of the race. When men answer to that call, you can not reason with them. That law knows no reason. You can not appeal to their sense of justice. It knows no sense of justice. It is a blind, unyielding, uncompromising, all-sacrificing purpose of the dominant race to control the situation. When that call comes every man who is not a racial degenerate has to answer it. [Applause.] It is the call of the blood. Men do not count the cost under those circumstances when once the race passion is aroused. We will have to work at this thing from every angle. The face of society of his own race must be set against the black criminal, and the white hoodlum must be suppressed. But, above all, while we are working out these problems we must hold in leash the brutal passion of race conflict which inspires the mobs in the North.

When a white woman is raped by a black man the call to the man is from his two strongest, most primitive instincts. No doubt when men lived in caves the strongest instinct of the man was to protect his woman. The next strongest instinct is to protect the blood. When the call comes from the woman, crying out from the depths of her outraged chastity, there comes to the man a call which reaches back to the days when he was a savage in the cave, and he goes. When that call comes from the woman who has been raped by a man of alien blood, woman, who in every age of the world has been the faithful guardian of the purity of the race-when that call comes it is the call of his woman and the call of his blood, and he goes. It is not an easy situation to deal with. [Applause.] He goes not alone. His neighbors, whose women live under the same danger, go with him. The impulse is to kill, to kill as a wild beast would be killed.¹¹⁴

In 1937 this was the rape case which Sumner discussed in his speech:

Mr. SUMNERS of Texas. No; not now. Perhaps I will later. I want to make this statement: There are 14,000,000 colored people in these United States, and we sometimes read in the papers of a horrible crime committed by one of them. It is an infinitesimal percentage of the people who do these things. The few people who do these horrible things are not representative of the colored people of the South. [Applause.]

I will cite you a case to illustrate what I am talking about, and I am going to show you the dangers of this law. In my State, in a community made up of Bohemian citizens, one day when the family went away to the field they left a little 14-year-old girl at home. When they came back home they found this little child weltering in her own blood.

¹¹⁴ Sumners, Hatton W., "Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the Second Session of the Sixty-Seventh Congress, Vol. 62 Part 1, Dec. 5, 1921 to Jan. 11, 1922, pages 1-1086," Government Printing Office (GPO), 1922, page 799 1st and 2nd columns.

They found a man on the railroad tracks, about 3 miles away. He was detained. The whole countryside was aroused. Why? Because every father in that community knew that it was just a matter of accident that it was the daughter of that family and not his own daughter. [Here the gavel fell.]

Mr. SUMNERS of Texas. Mr. Chairman, I yield myself additional time. I may use it all.

Now, I am not trying to make a constitutional speech, but I am talking about something that is as fundamental as the Constitution. I am talking about the instincts of the people.

I am talking about how you would have felt if you had lived there. I am trying to show what we have to deal with and how hard it is. This man was identified by the little girl; still they did not do anything. They took him down about 3 miles to a little village and the constable had him in charge. Really the people had him in charge, the father, brothers, and neighbors. Can you not understand? Somebody said, "If this man committed that crime, unless he has bathed his body, he has this child's blood on his person.

They examined his body and he was clotted with blood; and they killed him on the spot. Bad? Yes. But suppose you had this law on the books, what would have happened in that community? As it was, when the people had calmed down and cooled off and had come to their senses, they began to say, "We must not do this any more; we must control ourselves." A little child ruined for life by a brute, as unworthy of human sympathy as a lion in a community. Only one constable. People are close to each other in such communities. They are exposed to common dangers. It is not easy.¹¹⁵

All the tactics and elements of Sumners two speeches will not be discussed in this essay, but will be reviewed in a forthcoming essay about Sumners. This part of the essay is to show how Sumners incorporated ideas of the Confederate War Memorial with other ideas to block anti-lynching legislation.

The author of this essay hopes this spring 2019 to get Hatton Sumners speeches online. Locally Dallas has sought to honor this person as if he was a great hero in American history and ignore his role in perpetuating lynching.

If you think that these attitudes expressed by Sumners are not part of modern neo-Confederate writing consider an article, "Reconstruction," written by UDC Historian General, 2010-2012, *UDC Magazine*, Dec. 2012, which defends the notorious Black Codes of the period of Presidential Reconstruction:

¹¹⁵ Sumners, Hatton W., "Congressional Record, Proceedings and Debates of the First Session of the Seventy-Fifth Congress, Vol. 81 Part 3, March 18, 1937 to April 15, 1937, pages 2377 to 3568," Government Printing Office (GPO), 1937, speech is pages 3531-35, this account is on page 3534 1st column.

Added to their other worries was the Southern woman's great fear of the shantytowns that sprung up in almost every town. Newly liberated Negroes were not prepared for their freedom and wandered from town to town, sometimes living in shacks and makeshift tents in great congregations on the edges of town. They too, were hungry, sick and unsure of their fates. Negroes greatly outnumbered the whites, and the women were terrified to pass the shantytowns. And yet, at times they had to, just to get from one place to another, so they fought back the dread and held their heads high.¹¹⁶

JUNCTURES OF HISTORICAL NARRATIVES OF VIOLENCE WALTER WHITE VISITS DALLAS

Walter White was a long time campaigner against lynching with the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP).¹¹⁷

In 1937 Walter White campaigned for federal anti-lynching legislation. It passed the U.S. House but was blocked by a filibuster in the U.S. Senate. It is believed that it had the votes to defeat a filibuster, but President Franklin D. Roosevelt refused to publically support the bill and the bill was killed.¹¹⁸

It is not surprising that five years later Roosevelt issued an order putting Japanese Americans into concentration camps but never did the same with German Americans or Italian Americans.¹¹⁹

In 1937 Hatton W. Sumners, U.S. Congressional Representative for Dallas, chair of the House Judiciary Committee,¹²⁰ very vocally fought the attempt in 1937 to pass anti-lynching legislation. The April 16, 1937 *Dallas Morning News (DMN)* article, "House Passes Antilynch Bill despite Sumner's Hot Fight," misspelling his name. The article reports that Sumners "led the Southern opposition to what he termed pestiferous interference of the North in a problem he said the States already are solving." Also, that Sumners waved clenched fists and shouted, "Leave us alone and tend to something you know something about." The article points out that, "Sumners led his fight against the

¹¹⁶ Tindal, Retta, "Reconstruction, 1865-1877," *UDC Magazine*, Dec. 2012, pp. 11-14. Quote on page 11.

¹¹⁷ Dray, Phillips, "At the Hands of Persons Unknown: The Lynching of Black America," Random House, New York, 2002, is an excellent book on the history of lynching in American and amply details the efforts of Walter White to fight lynching.

¹¹⁸ Dray, Phillips, "At the Hands of Persons Unknown: The Lynching of Black America," Random House, New York, 2002, pp. 559-362.

¹¹⁹ Democrats please don't bother me with your whining over this sentence. I am not responsible for your hagiography.

¹²⁰ Monroe, Mary Catherine, "Sumners, Hatton Williams," Texas State Historical Handbook online, <https://tshaonline.org/handbook/online/articles/fsu04>, pdf saved 2/4/2019. Though Sumners was a leading opponent of federal anti-lynching legislation both of the Dyer Bill as well as in 1937, no mention of Sumners' historical role in this is mentioned in the TSHA entry. This should serve as a warning to users of the TSHA that there might be very significant erasures in their handbook.

bill as he did fifteen years ago when he fought the Dyer bill on the same subject." The Dyer Bill was a historically important attempt to pass anti-lynching legislation in 1922.

The April 28, 1938, Thursday, *DMN* has a page one article, "Storm Center of Senate's Antilynching Bill Fight, Blond Negro Coming Friday." In the article he is identified as the leader of the fight in 1937 for the federal anti-lynching bill. White is coming to speak to the Dallas Interracial Commission at the Y.W.C.A.¹²¹ The *Dallas Time Herald* (DTH), had a short item on page 3 "Walter White Will Speak Before Race Relations Members." It also announces that he will be speaking Friday before the Dallas Interracial Commission at the Y.W.C.A. and that he was the leader in the fight for the Wagner-Van Nuys anti-lynching bill of 1937.¹²²

Both articles mention that he is the head of the NAACP.

As reported in a 4/29/1938 *DMN* front page article, "Protest Against Negro Speech Plans: Earl E. Hurt Says White People Should Guard Racial Purity," Earl E. Hurt, Commander of the Texas Division of the Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV) vehemently spoke against allowing Walter White to talk. Hurt is reported stating that he spoke additionally for the John B. Gordon Camp of the SCV, the Daughters of the Confederacy, "and all Southern white people." Also, that Mr. Hurt protested to the Interracial Commission, "that not even for a moment should this Negro be allowed to make such a talk before the white people of Dallas County." The article states that Hurt visited the District Attorney Andrew Patton to see if legal means could be used to prevent White's talk; that Hurt reported that many members of the United Daughters of the Confederacy had called the Y.W.C.A to protest White speaking there. The article ends quoting Hurt stating:

The Southern white people of this city, as well as the entire South should vigorously protest against any Negro coming into our midst, lecturing or talking on issues inimical to the interests of both the white and negro races, such as the talk scheduled to be made by this Negro, Walter White."¹²³

The *Dallas Time Herald* is more forthcoming in reporting the reaction to White's announced speech with the April 29, 1938 front page article, "Slated Negro Speech Brings Hot Protests." The article opens up with:

Kaleidoscopic protests, seething with red, white and black, aroused Thursday against the presentation of Walter White, Negro, in an address scheduled for Friday ...

¹²¹ No author, "Storm Center of Senate's Antilynching Bill Fight, Blond Negro Coming Friday," *DMN*, 4/28/1938, pp. 1.

¹²² No author, "Walter White Will Speak Before Race Relations Members," *Dallas Time Herald* (DTH), 4/28/1938, page 3.

¹²³ No author, "Protest Made Against Negro Speech Plans," *DMN*, 4/29/1938, page 1, 12.

The article reports that the location of the speech was moved to the Moorland “(Negro)” branch of the Y.M.C.A. A Roy Crandall, who is the supreme vice commander of an organization called the Squadrons of Liberty claims that Walter White is backed by William Z. Foster, the president of the Communist Party. Crandall states, “Why should we allow a Negro speaking under the red flag, come into Texas and address white people as an advocator of equality?”

George K. Butcher, former Klan leader sent a telegram to the DTH saying “There will be no Negro speaking to white women in Dallas tonight publicly.” The article reports that A C.C. Booth, secretary of the Dallas County Law Enforcement League, sent a “communication” to the secretary of the Y.W.C.A. asking “in the name of decency, and the safety of our white womanhood” that “the Y.W.C.A. be kept a ‘white woman’s house of pleasure and instruction.’”

Booth further is quoted, “I have many friends among the better class Negroes of our state and value this friendship, but will never allow any equality, and to allow this privilege of using your building many and will install thoughts in the brains of some of the other Negroes that might lead to very serious trouble for men and women.”

The article also quotes Earl E. Hunt that he speaks for Confederate organizations the same statement quoted in the DMN.¹²⁴

The *DMN* reports on 4/30/1938 that Walter White did speak at the Moorland YMCA that Friday under a “cordon of armed police” who stood guard. White arrived in Dallas at 3 pm and left at 6 pm by airplane, no doubt for his safety. Additionally Earl E. Hunt is quoted, “If they want to meet at a Negro joint that’s their business and we don’t care who attends. But they can’t bring Negroes in here and mix them with our young white girls at our YW.”¹²⁵

In a May 2, 1938 editorial, shortly after White’s speech, titled “Intolerance in Dallas,” the persons protesting White’s speech are scolded for giving Dallas another “black mark.” The editorial states, “It is pretty certain that Christian gentleman, Gen. Robert E. Lee, would have been genuinely ashamed of protests made here Friday in the name of the Sons of Confederate Veterans.”¹²⁶

Earl E. Hunt responds to this editorial as Commander Texas Division, S.C.V in a letter to the Editors of the *DMN* published May 4, 1938. This lengthy letter is instructive as it represents the ideology of the neo-Confederate movement in Dallas at the time. As follows.

¹²⁴ No author, “Slated Negro Speech Brings Hot Protests,” *Dallas Time Herald*, (DTH), 4/29/1938, pp. 1, 6.

¹²⁵ No author, “Police Guard Appearance of Negro Speaker, *DMN*, 4/30/1938, pp. 6.

¹²⁶ Editorial, “Intolerance in Dallas,” *DMN*, 5/2/1938, pp. 4.

I am compelled to answer your editorial entitled "Intolerance in Dallas," which appeared in *The News* May 2, because of the misstatements it contained as well as the prejudiced personal opinion of the writer of said editorial.

Evidently the writer does not know or does not care, that this negro speaker, who was forced to speak at the Moorland (Negro) branch of the Y.M.C.A. instead of the white woman's Y.W.C.A. is known as a Communist agitator and that during the late anti-lynching controversy our own United States Senator, Tom Connally from Texas, made a public announcement to this effect. It is time that every patriotic man and woman, with a desire to preserve the principles of this Government, be informed that Communists and those believing in social equality between the Whites and Blacks are, and have been using the churches and schools to carry on their insidious propaganda and nefarious schemes in the guise and under the cloak of religion. Communism is a cancerous growth on the body politic that should be dug out by the roots and exposed and killed by the sun of truth.

My comment on that part of the editorial which states: "It is pretty certain that that Christian gentleman, Gen. Robert E. Lee, would have been genuinely ashamed of protests made here Friday in the name of the Sons of Confederate Veterans" is that, it is too ridiculous for words, and only a self-serving declaration on the part of the writer. How he figures that our beloved General Lee would endorse any character of movement that faintly tinged on social equality between the races is beyond human understanding. Even Abraham Lincoln in his speeches at Charleston, Ill, in 1858, expressed his views on social equality by saying: "I am not know, nor ever have been in favor of making voters or jurors of Negroes, nor of qualifying them to hold office, nor of intermarriage with white people. There is a physical difference between the White and Black races which will forever forbid the two races living together on social or political quality. There must be a position of superior and inferior, and I am in favor of assigning the superior position to the white man." Another noted Northern lecturer, Wendell Phillips, wrote as follows: "Lincoln was badgered into emancipation. After he issued it, he said it was the greatest folly of his life. It was like the Pope's bull against the comet."

The writer of your editorial is further vastly mistaken when he writes: "The vast majority of the people of Dallas are, of course, in sympathy with the ideals of the Interracial Commission." Such statement being absolutely reverse in truth. I was personally commended for my stand by almost every organization in this city, excepting of course, the Y.W.C.A. and the Interracial Commission.

He signs the letter as, "Commander Texas Division, S.C.V."¹²⁷

¹²⁷ Hurt, Earl E., "Letters from Readers," *DMN*, 5/4/1938, pp. 2.

As an aside there might be a tendency by some to imagine that the Interracial Commission to be some force for civil rights, but it should be considered that they could exist to serve to lubricate the gears and wheels of white supremacy and keep it running smoothly. It should be considered that white supremacists can quarrel among themselves as to how white supremacy should be run.

There were letters to the editor of the *DMN* which supported Walter White speaking. Hurt writes another letter which published in the *DMN* May 17, 1938.

I see that both your papers, The News and The Journal, print editorials and publish letters from different readers that are calculated to justify the Negro, Walter White, in his attempt to speak before a mixed audience in a white woman's building, but that you refuse to write editorials or publish letters, except from me, that represent the viewpoint of our Southern white element who are striving to preserve the principles taught us by our forefathers concerning the race question.

Let me say, once and for all time, that Walter White is as well known for his advocacy of social equality between the white and black races as he is for being secretary of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. Above all he was the progenitor of the antilynching bill, the most infamous bill produced since carpet bag days. It is difficult to realize the implications of it, almost to a man, to stand behind our Southern Congressmen as they fought that long battle in Washington, while Walter White sat in the wings and pulled the strings that animated certain politically ambitious ones. Some of us had also read of Walter White's telegram to another Negro, who was director of a settlement house in Boston and who was forced by the white members of the board to give his resignation when his engagement was announced to a white woman. White, at this time, wired to this other Negro, to stand by his guns and marry the woman of his choice.

You also speak of the other Negroes who have made appearance in Dallas, and on this I wish to say that these Negroes invariably try to stop at our leading hotels and are insulted because they are forced by our Jim Crow laws to patronize hotels for their own race. Can someone tell me just why these visiting Negroes consider themselves too good to associate with our Dallas Negroes.

From the response I have received, and am still receiving, all over the State, as well as out of the State, concerning my stand against this Negro, Walter White, I can emphatically state that both your papers would do well to consider that portion of our population who are too well aware of the propaganda such as this Negro is spreading to be hoodwinked by such editorials and letters as appear in your paper in defense of the Interracial Commission.

Again Hurt signs as the “Commander Texas Division, S.C.V.”¹²⁸

REDEDICATION OF THE CONFEDERATE WAR MEMORIAL

The Confederate War Memorial was moved from its original location in City Park to make way for the R.L. Thornton Freeway to Pioneer Park.¹²⁹ It was rededicated Sunday April 29, 1962 in a ceremony conducted by the neo-Confederate groups, United Daughters of the Confederacy (UDC) and the Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV) including a speech by Dallas Mayor Earle Cabell, grandson of Confederate General W.L. Cabell.¹³⁰ There is no record that there was any worry that moving the monument to Pioneer Park would disturb the graves already there.

The new location placed it in a prominent location. The Sons of Confederate Veterans Camp on July 5, 1966 petitioned the Dallas Park Board to relocate over 100 Confederate war veteran dead from the Confederate Cemetery on Electra Street to an area adjacent to the Confederate monument in Pioneer Park and change the name of the Park to Confederate-Pioneer Park.¹³¹ Moving the Confederate Cemetery to a more central location would give the Confederate dead a more prestigious and symbolically important location. The present controversy in 2017 to 2019 about disturbing graves if the Confederate War Memorial is moved is just a pretext to prevent the removal of the Confederate monument.

The dedication was conducted by four Dallas chapters of the UDC with the assistance of the SCV John B. Hood Sons Camp. The invocation was given by Clyde Odeneal Commander of the John B. Hood Camp. The Salute to the Texas Flag was given by Mrs. Ralph D. Widener Texas Division UDC treasurer.¹³²

The views of the neo-Confederate groups doing the rededication would be an important indicator of the meaning of the Confederate War Memorial to these neo-Confederate groups and likely the meaning to the general public. Ralph W. Widener of Dallas published the book, “Confederate monuments: enduring symbols of the South and the War Between the States,” in 1982 and his views in particular would give some idea of the meaning of the Confederate monument rededicated in Pioneer Park.

Also, these monuments would give these neo-Confederate groups literally monumental credibility during the struggle in the mid-20th century Civil Rights era. Having an event

¹²⁸ Hurt, Earl E., “Letters from Readers,” *DMN*, 5/17/1938, pp. 2.

¹²⁹ Raffetto, Francis, “Park Urged to House ‘Freeway’ Monument,” *DMN*, 9/9/1960, page 1; No author, “Monument Due Move from Park,” *DMN*, 4/16/1961, pp. 8, mentions prior and new location;

¹³⁰ No author, “Mayor Cabell Talks at Rededication,” *DMN*, 4/30/1962, pp. 4.

¹³¹ No author, “Park Board Considers Relocations of Graves,” *DMN*, 7/6/1966, page 12.

¹³² No author, “Confederate Monument Rededicated in Dallas,” *UDC Magazine*, Sept. 1962, pp. 22, 55. Members of the UDC used only their husband’s names in articles and publications until sometime in the late 20th century.

at the monument with the mayor of Dallas would give them credibility and would give them self-validation. So it is important to know what views the monument was enabling.

In this essay the history of the SCV will be examined first and then the history of the UDC as it pertains to establishing the meaning of the Confederacy to them at this rededication.

JOHN B. HOOD CAMP SCV

The John B. Hood Camp was re-organized in a meeting April 25, 1954 announced by Brigade Commander Ralph W. Widener Jr.¹³³

In an earlier letter to the DMN, Widener announces that he is trying to “reorganize a camp of that organization which, at one time had several groups here in Dallas.” Widener glorifies the Confederacy in his letter, but also makes it clear the ideological purpose of the proposed SCV camp. He states:

If there are men in Dallas, whom I have not reached already, who are eligible for membership, would you please contact me at the address below, that together we may instill into our descendants a devotion to, and reverence for, the principles for which they fought, and which are just as alive today – the rights of the states to solve their own problems – from which the strength of the whole Union comes.¹³⁴

If there is any doubt about what “problems” Widener is concerned about it will be made clear in the John B. Hood Camp’s publications.

The John B. Hood Camp No. 1224 is reported to be a new camp in the DMN and was organized three months ago. The meeting of April 25, 1954 appears to be a formal “installation program.” Attending the installation was four Dallas chapters of the UDC: Dallas No. 6, Bonnie Blue, Mary Custis Lee and Aaron Shannon Cole.

Of the officers installed: Ralph W. Widener Jr. was the Commander; D.A. Franks, First Lt. Commander; Jimmy Stephenson, Second Lt. Commander; Frank McLain, Third Lt. Commander, Frank McLain; Lloyd S. Riddle, adjutant; John D. Carson, treasurer; Col. Henry Hochwald, quartermaster; Robert E. Burroughs, judge advocate; R.W. Mayo, assistant judge advocate; Rev. Charles L. Bounds, historian; Jim Sowell, color sergeant; Rev. S.B. Beddings Jr., chaplain.

The establishment of this new camp had official support. One of the last living Confederate Veterans Walter Williams was able to visit for the installation was made possible by Texas Gov. Allan Shivers. The Commander-in-Chief of the Sons of Confederate Veterans Neill Bohlinger visited from Little Rock, Arkansas and was

¹³³ No author, “Sons of Confederate Vets Set Meeting to Reorganize,” *DMN*, 4/4/1954, pp. 11.

¹³⁴ Widener, Ralph W. Jr., “Letters from Readers,” *DMN*, 3/30/1954, pp. 2.

presented a "Dallas citizenship certificate form Mayor R.L. Thornton, and an honorary Texas citizenship from Gov. Allan Shivers." All are from Dallas except Marshall and Burroughs.¹³⁵

Later in 1955 Rev. S.B. Bedinger Jr. was elected Commander of the John B. Hood Camp. Other officers are: First Lt. Commander, Dr. O.W. Gibbs; Second Lt. Commander, Bill Teinart; adjutant, W. Clyde Odeneal; judge advocate, Lon Sailers; quartermaster, E.H. Siddon; Historian, Lloyd Riddle; color sergeant, Harry Perkins. Elected to the executive board are Clinton McGlamery and Ralph W. Widener Jr.¹³⁶

The *Dallas Time Herald* on July 13, 1955 has a short item, "Group Hits Ruling on Desegregation," which reports:

The John B. Hood Camp of Sons of Confederate Veterans blasted the U.S. Supreme Court's ruling against segregation as "infamous" and "contemptible" and said it would do all in its power to resist the efforts to "destroy our civilization."

The resolution, signed by Commander Lon Sailers and Adjutant Lloyd S. Riddle, was passed unanimously at a meeting of the camp Monday night.

Though it is often difficult to locate records of local groups which indicate their views in this case a bound volume of the four issues of the *John B. Hood Journal* published in 1965 are available giving an extensive sample of their smug and arrogant racism. The volumes are not paginated.¹³⁷

The first issue opens with a notice, "FROM THE UNRECONSTRUCTED EDITORS," all in capital letters. The editors are: Robert B. Hughes, Jr., Editor; Associate Editor, Robert E. Hatfield; Art Editor, Barbara Jane Hatfield.

A camp roster is published for the year 1965. The officers are: Charles S. West, Jr., Commander; W. Clyde Odeneal, Lt. Commander; Robert B. Hughes, Jr., Adjutant; Alonzo C. Sourlook, Chaplain; Lloyd S. Riddle, Historian; A.C. Sourlook, Judge Advocate; George C. Baker, Quartermaster.

Not every instance of the Journal promoting racism or opposition to civil rights will be given here, but only the more graphic, immediately comprehensible or especially revealing examples will be given. They will use capital letters, punctuation, spelling, etc. exactly as in the original.

¹³⁵ No author, "Sons of Confederates Install Dallas Camp," *DMN*, 4/26/1954, pp. 1, 9.

¹³⁶ No author, "Minister to Head John B. Hood Camp," *DMN*, 12/15/1955, pp. 21.

¹³⁷ Four bound copies are at the Dallas Public Library. Given that the Dallas Public Library is careless in keeping historical items, I have fully documented at least once or twice in the last 25 years and will make provisions that a copy will be available for posterity.

Form Vol. 1 No. 1, there is one short item, "Historian Riddle Lauded":

"THE JOHN B. HOOD JOURNAL is proud to commend Historian Lloyd S. Riddle for his recently published letter to the Dallas Morning News which praised our sister state of Mississippi for her continuous exemplification of Southern tradition and principle. Such extracurricular work on behalf of SCV and The South is exactly what is defined in the preamble to our SCV constitution.¹³⁸

The letter was published in the DMN and was as follows:

In the face of all her detractors, Mississippi stands like the Rock of Gibraltar, a beacon light of hope to the rest of our great republic.

She is the last bastion of Anglo-Saxon Christian civilization, and will remain so, the National Council of Churches and other forces to the contrary notwithstanding.

I say, "Viva Mississippi!" God bless and keep her.¹³⁹

Vol. 1 No. 2 has some really interesting items.¹⁴⁰ As the year progresses the *John B. Hood Journal* really starts revealing the raging racism of the Camps members.

The issue starts off with this first page offer of Whites Only Stickers to put in a person's home. The item is titled, "WHITE ONLY," as follows.

The Journal has available for immediate shipment a small supply of signs to display Early American-Southern tradition. They read, "White Only" and are professionally done. They measure 3X5 inches with black letters on a white background. They are self-adhesive with waterproof ink. Thing of the possibilities. On your personal bathrooms, etc., anywhere they are still legal. The nominal cost is 15¢ apiece or 2 for 25¢. Send your quarter to:

White Only (simply WO, if you prefer)
2622 Kimsey Drive, Dallas, Texas.

The next page leads off with a title, "SUPPORT STROM THURMOND," with note that it is, "FROM THE UNRECONSTRUCTED EDITORS."

It has come to the attention of the editors of this publication that the now infamous ADL has named out beloved compatriot Senator J. Strom Thurmond to

¹³⁸ Vol. 1 No. 1, no date is given for this issue. However, the Dallas Public Library cataloging says 1965. Vol1. No. 2 gives a date of April 1965, so this issue is prior to that date, but Jan. 1, 1965 or later. It is published by the John B. Hood Camp, SCV. The issue is unpaginated.

¹³⁹ Riddle, Lloyd S., "Beacon of Hope," in "Letters to the Editor," *DMN*, 1/28/1965, pp. 2.

¹⁴⁰ Vol. 1 No. 2, April 1965. It is published by the John B. Hood Camp, SCV. The issue is unpaginated.

its 1964 “blacklist”. Such a vile act would normally be ignored by our distinguished organization; however, for any such controversial group as the Anti-Defamation League to dare to attack a leading member of both Sons of Confederate Veterans and the Order of Stars and Bars with the stature of Senator Thurmond is too utterly contemptible to escape our complete condemnation.

This blacklist which is printed by Random House and financed by B’nai Brith made eight different snide attacks on the one-time presidential candidate in the single 1964 volume. Among its other defamation targets were America’s own Charles A. Lindbergh, Westbrook Pegler, Ned Touchstone, and the Church of Christ. The irresponsible smears of this vicious group should be enough to bring the full wrath and indignation of every Christian Southern citizen down on their stooped shoulders.

The JOHN B. HOOD JOURNAL hereby re-affirms its complete support of one of the greatest living Americans who has done more to perpetuate the ideas of our Christian forebears than any other man in the United States Senate. GOD BLESS J. STROM THURMOND!

The Military Order of Stars and Bars (MOSB) is an organization restricted to those who are descended from Confederate officers. They largely coordinate a lot of their activity with the SCV. Ned Touchstone a rabid racist and prominent figure in the anti-Civil Rights movement involved with groups such as the White Citizens Council.¹⁴¹ Westbrook Pegler started out as an opponent of the New Deal and labor unions, and shifted to extremism in the 1950s and 60s. In 1965 Pegler stated that he wished, “some white patriot of the Southern tier will spatter his spoonful of brains in the public premises before the snow flies.”¹⁴² The author of this essay isn’t familiar with the other persons and organizations in the “Blacklist” to whom the editors refer. Perhaps a topic for a revised revision of this paper.

Another item is, “HISTORIAN RIDDLE PRAISED AGAIN,” as follows:

The following letter was recently published in the Dallas Morning News.

“Since it has become the fashion of the age to denounce Mississippi, it comes as a pleasurable relief to read the brave words of Lloyd S. Riddle. They compare favorably with the historic reply of Governor Henry E. Rector of Arkansas to President Lincoln’s inquiry as to what his state to offer the Union. ‘Arkansas has nothing to offer you, he replied in effect. ‘Arkansas will stay with her sister State of Mississippi in defense of her freedom.’”

¹⁴¹ Description of Ned Touchstone is in the description of the Ned Touchstone Papers at the library archives at Louisiana State Univ. <https://scripts.lsu.edu/libarchives/collections.php?collection=392>. Pdf created 2/10/2019.

¹⁴² Frank, Thomas; Mulcahey, David, “Boob Jubilee: The Cultural Politics of the New Economy,” W.W. Norton & Company, New York, 2003, Pp. 358.

Henry A. Burgevin
Rockdale, Texas ¹⁴³

Another item is, "CALIFORNIA BROADCASTER DEFENDS THE SOUTH." It is as follows:

During the most recent smear attacks on the Southland by the national press, Richard Cotten, a commentator from Bakersfield, California risked his radio career to come to its defense. Mr. Cotton's reports told factually how the South has come under attack from a communist conspiracy involving the negro problem. His show exposed the false reporting in favor of "civil riots" and against Christian Southerners over dozens of radio stations in the West and the North. His program schedule may be obtained by writing to:

Richard Cotten
Conservative Viewpoint
Post Office Box 1976
Bakersfield, California.

Richard Cotten was involved with the National States Rights Party. From the book, "The National States Rights Party: A History," page 183:

September 1976 saw the World Nationalist Congress, also called the International Patriotic Congress, convened at Duke's base in Metairie, Louisiana. Aside from Duke, attendees included Jesse Stoner, James Warner, Byron De La Beckwith, Jerry Dutton, Richard Cotton, Louisiana Klansman Rene LaCoste, plus Identity preachers Dan Gayman, Buddy Tucker, and Joseph Dilys from Warner's New Christian Crusade Church.¹⁴⁴

This is the first issue of the John B. Hood Journal to have what would be a recurring section titled, "CONFEDERATE AMMUNITION."

"Can the Ethiopian change his skin or the leopard his spots?"
Thomas Dixon, Jr.
Author of "The Leopard Spots"

Thomas Dixon, Jr. wrote a series of white supremacist novels. It is one of his books in his Ku Klux Klan trilogy.

"I am not, nor ever have been in favour of making voters or jurors of negroes, nor of qualifying them to hold office, nor to intermarry with white people."

¹⁴³ Burgevin's letter was published 2/4/1965, DMN, page 2, in "Letters to the Editor," section.

¹⁴⁴ Newton, Michael, "The National States Rights Party: A History," McFarland & Company, Inc., Jefferson, North Carolina, 2017, Pp. 183.

Abraham Lincoln
Federal President

Another white supremacist is quoted.

“We are playing for keeps and the future of America lies in the balance.”
George Brownlee, Jr.
Editor of The Sandtown Story

The Archives at Yale describes the Sandtown Story publication as follows:

Scope and Contents: Privately printed newsletter of sardonic anti-Semitic, anti-Black, anti-Catholic, anti-Communist political commentary and humor. This issue includes letters from subscribers who are cancelling because, on top of the aforementioned tendencies, the publisher ran an anti-Masonic piece.¹⁴⁵

Another piece of “ammunition” is:

“--- decisions and orders of the Supreme Court of the United States denying the individual sovereign States the power to enact laws relating to the separation of the races in the public institutions of a state are null, void, and of no force or effect.”

Legislature of Florida on May 2, 1957
House Concurrent Resolution 174

Another piece of “ammunition” is:

“--- decisions and orders of the Supreme Court of the United States relating to the separation of the races in the public institutions of a state are null, void, and of no force or effect.”

Georgia State Senate & House
House Resolution 185, 1956 session

One thing that the items in the Confederate Ammunition sections along with other items show is that the editors of this journal were very familiar with white supremacist literature and commentators.

Vol. 1 No. 3 continues to be rabid.¹⁴⁶

In this issue is an essay, “OUR CONSTITUTIONAL GUARANTEES,” by Lt. Commander W. Clyde Odeneal. The article is a history of the constitution starting with the Magna Carta and leads to the subject, “What has happened to our constitutional

¹⁴⁵ Archives at Yale, <https://archives.yale.edu/repositories/12/resources/4068>, Box 1, Folder 10, Call Number: MS775 Series Accession 2016-M-017.

¹⁴⁶ Vol. 1 No. 3, Sept. 1965. It is published by the John B. Hood Camp, SCV. The issue is unpaginated.

guarantees?" There are multiple complaints about taxation other subject, but race occupies one major concern. From his essay:

Usurpation by the Supreme Court began with the school desegregation decision in 1954. In that decision, the court repudiated the separate but equal doctrine in Plessy vs. Ferguson 1896, and in reliance upon psychology, not law, the Court in effect amended the Constitution by usurpation of the constitutional process. ...

The essay continues with complaints about the U.S. Supreme Court.

The issue has a poem titled, "The Negro 23rd Psalm."

Lyndon is my shepherd, I shall not work.
He maketh me to lie down in front of theatres;
He leadeth me to White Universities.
He restoreth my welfare check.
He leadeth me in the paths of sit-ins for Communism's sake.
Yea, though I walk through the Heart of Dixie,
His Federal troops and "Marshalls", they comfort me.
He prepareth a table for me in the presence of White people,
He annointeth my hair with anti-king hair straightener,
My Cadillac tank runneth over,
Surely the Supreme Court shall follow me all the days of my
Life, and I shall dwell in the Federal Housing Projects forever.

This issue has the, "CONFEDERATE AMMUNITION," with the following items.

"Governor Wallace your days are numbered."
Sammy Davis, Jr.
Negro Agitator

Sammy Davis Jr. was a famous entertainer and was part of what was called in the 1950s the "Rat Pack" with other famous performers.

"If God is color-blind, then why did He create separate races of men on earth?
Could He not have made them of one conformation?"
Ned Touchstone
Editor, The Councilor

Vol. 1 No. 4 had interesting items also.¹⁴⁷

¹⁴⁷ Vol. 1 No. 4, Dec. 1965. It is published by the John B. Hood Camp, SCV. The issue is unpaginated.
Do not copy

A full page essay, "QUALITY NOT QUANTITY NEEDED," by Lloyd S. Riddle, made is very clear what the purpose of the Sons of Confederate Veterans was about and what the expected viewpoint of its members were and what Confederate "heritage" was about. It is as follows:

There is no place in the Sons of Confederate Veterans for persons who do not subscribe to the principles from which they are descended. We, of the organization, sully the memory of our illustrious ancestors, if we accept or retain persons in our organization who by their daily actions desecrate the memory of the soldier of the South.

During the Reconstruction days the term Carpetbagger and Scalawag were extant - - Carpetbagger meaning the scum who were sent into our beloved to grow rich during bayonet rule - - these scoundrels were of Northern birth. Scalawag meaning one born in the South but a collaborator with the Carpetbagger against his own land that had nurtured him from birth.

Of the two classes, the Scalawag was the more despicable being a traitor to his won heritage.

We must not forget that we have the Scalawag with us today in 1965, the most notorious being Lyndon B. Johnson, who unfortunately occupies the White House, one Ralph W. Yarborough senior United States Senator from Texas, and Earle Cabell Congressman from the fifth district of Texas. This is, of course, by no means a complete list of Southern scalawags, but it is a list known to Texans.

All of the above mentioned characters are descended from Confederate ancestry, and Earle Cabell's grandfather was a Confederate General. All of these persons are working in direct contradiction of what their ancestors stood for. Lyndon Johnson has sponsored more legislation to destroy the South than any man who ever occupied the White house. Among the many pieces of despicable legislation sponsored by this turncoat, is the misnamed Civil rights Act and the Voting Rights Act which though patently unconstitutional will be upheld by a Supreme Court with no regard to the constitution. Ralph Yarborough worked for and voted for the Civil Rights Act and the Voting Rights Act, and he is and has been the fair-haired boy of the NAACP, CORE, and other negro agitating groups - he is, in other words, their man, signed sealed and delivered. Congressman Earle Cabell voted for the Voting Rights Act and is a Lyndon Johnson rubber-stamp.

It is right and proper that we keep alive the historical aspects of the War Between the States, but I believe it is more important that we stand for the ideals and principles of the men who served in that great conflict. If we do not, our recalling of their great service is hollow indeed.

There is this announcement, "CONFEDERATE DAY SET FOR FAIR."

The annual Confederate Day at the State Fair, sponsored by the United Daughters of the Confederacy, is set for Saturday October 16, 1965. This program is held each year in commemoration of our Confederate heritage and always has a fine speaker. This year, Judge Stout, District Judge of Ellis County will be the speaker. His topic will be, "Reconstruction 1865, 1965." The program will be held in the Lecture Hall of State Building, Fair Park, Dallas, Texas. ...

District Judge Royce A. Stout was a bitter opponent of civil rights. He attacked civil rights bills and Supreme Court decisions during his career.

On April 19, 1956 Stout gave a speech attacking the decisions of the U.S. Supreme Court including decisions regarding segregation. He also used the segregation decisions as a relative reference to assert that more recent decisions were even worse.¹⁴⁸

In an August 27, 1964 speech in Dallas, Texas before the High Noon Club at a luncheon in the Hotel Adolphus he stated that the Civil Rights Act was "one of the greatest civil wrongs ever forced upon a people ...". Stout claimed that "the government is run by minority groups for minority groups." Stout said that the real agenda of minority groups was "to turn class against class ... the more they get, the more they want."¹⁴⁹

There were other *DMN* articles such as, "Supreme Court's Power Grasp," 9/15/1963, page 2, by Stout himself.

Another item in the Journal is a news item, "BARNETT CALLS FOR PEOPLE TO STAND BY THEIR CONSTITUTION," concerning a speech made by Mississippi ex-Governor Ross R. Barnett to the 70th Annual Convention of the Sons of Confederate Veterans. He was also given an honorary lifetime membership. Barnett was infamous for his efforts to fight civil rights.

In the issue is a lengthy essay by Camp Lt. Commander W. Clyde Odeneal titled, "THE STATES AND THE SUPREME COURT."

In the essay Odeneal writes on how he sees the U.S. Supreme Court is usurping the U.S. Constitution. As examples he gives a series of Supreme Court decisions which extended civil rights. Odeneal states, "The judicial legislation (making laws, not interpreting them) really began with such cases as the Lonnie Smith case, holding that Negroes could not be excluded from a Democratic primary in Texas ..." Odeneal then refers to the case of *Mitchell vs. U.S.* stating that state segregation laws don't apply to interstate travel, *Shelley vs. Kraemer* which held that racial deed restrictions aren't enforceable in court, and the *Sweatt* case regarding admission of African Americans to the University of Texas Law School.

¹⁴⁸ Doss, Stewart M., "Judge Hits High Court," *DMN*, 4/20/1956, pp. 1

¹⁴⁹ No author, "Civil Rights Bill Rapped by Ellis County Judge," *DMN*, 8/28/1964, pp. 5.

He denounces in particular Brown vs. Board of Education which integrated the schools.

There is in this issue there is again a section titled, "CONFEDERATE AMMUNITION."
Some items are as follows.

"John Brown had realized his vision of the Plains. He had raised a national Blood Fued."

Thomas Dixon
Author of "The Man in Gray"

Thomas Dixon was an author who wrote white supremacist novels.

"The Constitution is a covenant with Death, an agreement with Hell. I loath it. I despise it. I spit upon it - - -"

John Brown
Traitor

For some reason people think this is radical. I suppose it is if you think Black Lives Don't Matter.

"Every lover of freedom knows that this war was not a war waged by the South in defense of slavery."

Colonel John A. May
Commander-in-Chief
Sons of Confederate Veterans

Another item is:

"Of course we favor racial mixing, including marriage - - -"
The Pittsburgh Courier
A negro publication

Another item is:

"The Bible says, "Take unto yourself a wife" And it don't say nothing about her color"

Sammy Davis, Jr.
A negro agitator

Another item is:

"Can anyone name one stable republic in all history that was predominantly, or even substantially, Negro?"

Carleton Putnam

Author of "Race and Reason"

The *John B. Hood Journal's* Editor Robert E. Hatfield was the person who in 1963 spat on U.S. Ambassador Adlai Stevenson's face while Hatfield, "talked almost incoherently about the United Nations," in what was one of Dallas' most notorious incidents of right wing craziness.¹⁵⁰

Robert E. Hatfield praised an attack on boxer Muhammed Ali (Cassius Clay) in the following letter to the editor in the *DMN*:

Congratulations to yours sports writer Sam Blair. His column of March 24 really used common sense in his evaluation of Cassius Clay (or Cassius Mud as Mr. Blair refers to him).

It is just and proper for Mr. Blair to condemn any sports "hero" who supports the Black Muslims or any other subversive organization.¹⁵¹

At the rededication of the Confederate War Memorial the invocation was given by W. Clyde Odeneal as Commander of the John B. Hood Camp. He was the author of "Segregation: Sin or Sensible?" reprinted from *Destiny Magazine* as a pamphlet by Destiney publishers, copyright 1958. It condemns Supreme Court decisions in favor of civil rights. It is a deranged scream of madness. These are some samples from the pamphlet.

In this excerpt interracial relations are supposed to have brought on Noah's flood in Genesis:

A casual reading of the sixth chapter of Genesis should convince the most ardent advocate of mongrelization that miscegenation was the principle sin which brought on the great flood of antiquity.

Odeneal asserts that Africans are incapable of civilization on their own.

History says that the white and non-Negro colored races (Chinese and Indians for example) developed languages, formed intricate systems of writing, kept records, discovered mathematic and other scientific principles, built cities and civilizations, created monuments to their achievements, and through their inventive genius largely mastered the forces of land, sea and air. History also says that the Negro as a race did none of these things – that he developed no more than crude dialects for a language, and made no advance towards civilization. ... Nearly all Negroes in their native sphere – untouched and uninfluenced by the white man – are a simple and childlike race, without literature, history, science or art.

¹⁵⁰ No author, "Witness Describes Spitting Incident," *DMN*, 5/20/1964, page 6.

¹⁵¹ Hatfield, Robert E., "Commonsense Writing," "Letters to the Editor," *DMN*, 4/3/1964, page 2.

Africans are supposed to be incapable of governing themselves referring to Liberia and Haiti, small republics existing in a worldwide system of white supremacy stating:

From these quotations we see that history attests the fact long known to us and our forefathers that the Negro as a race never has been able to successfully demonstrate any capacity for self-government and that the difference between the negro and other races is much more fundamental than mere skin color.

Another well-known example of the inability of negroes to govern themselves is Haiti.

African Americans are held to be a menace regarding rape, he writes:

We have whipped the crime of lynching, but they seem unable to control the crime which provoked lynching.¹⁵²

If it is thought that Odeneal is an outlier from racial attitudes in Dallas it should be understood that in an attack on social security Lynn Landrum, one of the *Dallas Morning News* leading and popular columnists, uses the notorious racist Van Evrie for an assertion about African Americans. In his column titles, "Thinking out Loud," in 1938 Landrum in a section of his editorial, titled "Joys of Slavery," starting out quoting Van Evrie, writes:

"A negro slave with a master is the happiest of beings. A white slave without a master is the most wretched, miserable and unfortunate of all God's creatures. It is a fact that all Southern slaves are happy – none are melancholy, none tired or dissatisfied with life – none commit suicide, for none are underfed or overworked – none suffering in the present or apprehensive of the future."

"The only difficulty about slavery, as Dr. van Evrie truly remarks, is, is it the best form of society for the master races?"¹⁵³

Racist screeds were mainstream in Dallas history.

In 1948, when the National States' Rights Party organized in Texas, Ordeneal was on the executive committee of the state party. They adopted a platform of states' rights and these were some of the positions.

4. A stand for segregation of the races and the racial integrity of each race, and opposition to the civil rights program.

¹⁵² Odeneal, Clyde W., "Segregation: Sins or Sensible," Destiny Press, Merrimac, Massachusetts, 1958. Flooding quote pp. 4, capability of civilization pp. 9, capability of self-government, pp. 9-10, lynching pp. 10.

¹⁵³ Landrum, Lynn, "Thinking out Loud," *DMN*, 12/13/1938, pp. 1, 6.

5. Condemnation of the Philadelphia conventions of both parties for sponsoring the civil rights program.
6. Contention that enforcement of efforts of it would destroy the social, economic and political life of southern people.¹⁵⁴

This was the political party that nominated segregationist Strom Thurmond for president in a revolt against the Democratic Party civil rights platform.

In 1955, Odeneal along with Clinton A. McGlamery, member of the Hood Camp, and Ross Carlton applied for a state charter for the Texas Citizens Council, the Texas version of the White Citizens council. The *DMN* reports the group's purpose as follows:

The officers' statement declared they want to disseminate facts of history, science and experience "designed to foster good racial relations among the citizens of Texas." The purpose is to encourage all races to "take pride in their racial origin and civilization and in the culture of this state," the group said.

One of the directors for the group is another Hood camp member, S.B. Bedinger Jr.¹⁵⁵

As might be guessed Odeneal and other members of the John B. Hood camp wrote numerous letters to the *DMN* in opposition to civil rights. Since the A.II. Belo Corp. hasn't had the *Dallas Time Herald* digitized, which is irresponsible and incompatible with whatever claims they might make to be good corporate citizens, there likely is much more to discover about the John B. Hood camp, but we will here have to rely on the *DMN* only for information.

In searching the *DMN* database there are roughly 18 letters to the editor against civil rights or the subject of race from 1948 to 1972 by Odeneal. Lloyd S. Riddle wrote well over 30 letters to the editor against civil rights or the subject of race starting in 1955 and ending in 1974.

(Future version will quote some of the letters of Odeneal and others.)

Odeneal's well known white supremacist activism didn't impede his progress in the SCV. In a notice for Confederate Day at the State Fair in 1967 in the *DMN*, he is mentioned as the Commander-in-Chief of the Texas Division of the SCV.¹⁵⁶

UDC FOUR CHAPTERS: DALLAS CHAPTER NO. 6, BONNIE BLUE FLAG CHAPTER NO. 1852, AARON SHANNON COLE CHAPTER NO. 2203, MARY CUSTIS LEE CHAPTER NO. 2156

¹⁵⁴ Duncan, Dawson; Pace, Clint, "Fourth Party Organized By States Rights Texans," *DMN*, 9/9/1948, pp. 1, 7.

¹⁵⁵ Morehead, Richard M., "State Charter Given to Citizens' Council," *DMN*, 9/10/1955, page 3.

¹⁵⁶ No author, "Confederate Day to be Saturday at State Fair," *DMN*, 10/20/1967, page 7.

The UDC chapters in Dallas were vigilant enforcers of white supremacy in Dallas. Items related to the Ku Klux Klan and other violent white supremacist groups will be treated in another section of this essay. The national UDC organization was active in opposing white supremacy.

In the Dallas Bonnie Blue Flag chapter report in the 1925 Minutes of the 29th Annual Convention of the Texas Div. of the UDC, they reported how they implemented segregation in a book review essay contest. From the report.

In a Book Review contest held among the Dallas schools we found that the negro children were being allowed to compete with the white children. In this last contest a negro child won the first prize. Our committee called upon the School Board protesting such a contest and offered to furnish a separate prize for a contest between negro children. The School Board advised that a mixture contest would not be held in the future.¹⁵⁷

In 1935 the Little Oak Cliff Theater was shut down and put out of business by the UDC when they attempted to put on a play with an interracial cast. In the Dallas Time Herald, May 28, 1935 is an article, "Death of a Theater," which gives details into the harassment out of existence of the Little Oak Cliff Theater. The article reprints the official notice of theater announcing its closure.

Whereas public co-operation of the Oak Cliff Little Theater has diminished to such a point that further operations are both impractical and inadvisable, and whereas, the present management of the Oak Cliff Little Theater recognized this sentiment and believes it desirable no longer to operate contrary to the manifest sentiment of the community.

Therefore, be it resolved by the directors of the Oak Cliff Little Theater assembled, That effective at once, it is the sense of the this body that such organization should cease to exist ...

The article explains that "Tuesday morning a fuller statement on the passing of the theater was released by the group's board of directors." The statement issued by the Little Oak Cliff Theater was that they had earlier ran an article in the paper in the first week in May announcing that they were going to perform the play "Jute" with a racially mixed cast and had only received positive responses. Then it states:

¹⁵⁷ No author, "Bonnie Blue Flag Chapter, No. 1852, Dallas," "Minutes of the Twenty-Ninth Annual Convention of the Texas Division United Daughters of the Confederacy, Held in First Methodist Church Marshall, Texas, Oct. 13-16, 1925," pp. 145-148, school prize pp. 146. The author hasn't found out who this African American child was and what the topic of the essay was. Nor has the author done further research into it, however, at some point a letter will be sent to the Dallas Independent School Board to ask for more information and to ask for some type of reparations.

On or about May 20 we received a letter from the United Daughters of the Confederacy, protesting and stating the show must not go on, as it would disgrace the city and the state. The following day we received a letter from one of the local camps of the United Confederate Veterans, an affiliated organization also protesting the show. The following day letters from several other organizations and individuals were also received.

All told, the opposition was such minority, we refused at first to take it seriously. On Friday morning we received a telephone call from the secretary of the commercial association, stating he was besieged with telephone calls and that something must be done.

The Oak Cliff Little Theater in response told the commercial association that they would have a board meeting and get back to them, but on the following day of this first call they received another call refusing to allow the Oak Cliff Little Theater the use of the building. The Oak Cliff Little Theater shut down shortly thereafter.¹⁵⁸

One notable thing about the shutdown of the Oak Cliff Little Theater you will not find this reason for the shutdown in local histories.¹⁵⁹

The Texas Division UDC President C.C. Cameron gloated over defeating the Oak Cliff Little in her address to the Texas Division UDC 39th Annual Convention in San Antonio Oct. 29 – Nov. 1, 1935.

In her address she takes care describing the many different colors of the flows blooming in Texas on her travels calling out each type of flower and its color. The purpose of this become clear when she starts discussing their triumph over the Oak Cliff Little Theater. Describing returning to Dallas after visiting Elgin, Texas she states:

On my returning to Dallas our Daughters were horrified that a Dallas Little Theatre had announced the production of a play using a mixed cast of whites and blacks. Joining other patriotic bodies, after some little controversy we finally convinced the Little Theatre that this must be stopped and the production of the play was withdrawn. We would encourage in every way a Negro Little Theatre as we would a white, but we believe God was wise and had a purpose in mind when he gave us colors in people as well as colors in flowers, and as a group of

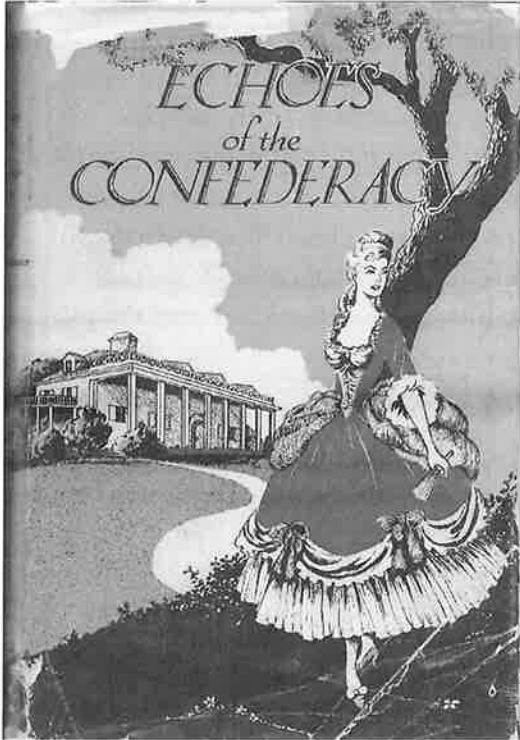
¹⁵⁸ Lovell, Jimmy, "Death of a Theater," *Dallas Time Herald*, 5/28/1935, page 12.

¹⁵⁹ I plan on writing up a complete history of the shutdown of the Little Oak Cliff Theater and also how the history has been omitted from local histories. I have also purchased a copy of the play "Jute." It is a racist play and was performed by an all-white cast and an all-African American cast in Dallas previous. It was the proposed performance of an interracial cast where white people would play the white characters and African Americans would play the African American parts that infuriated the neo-Confederates.

Southern people we wish to return to Him His colors as He intended them to be.¹⁶⁰

In this Cameron is asserting that white supremacy is like making a floral bouquet.

The views of the Texas UDC is best represented by a book, "Echoes of the Confederacy," by Mrs. J.K. Bivins, (Viola), twice president of the Texas Division of the UDC, of Longview, Texas. She published it in 1950 and it was "manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Company" in Dallas.



Mrs. Jack Orr,¹⁶¹ president of the Bonnie Blue Flag Chapter in Dallas was awarded first prize for her essay review of the book, "Echoes of the Confederacy," at the Texas Division UDC annual convention in El Paso, Texas in 1951.¹⁶²

An Associated Press story reports that, "The Washington UDC honored Mrs. E. Avinger Haggard, of Miami, Fla., the new president general, and Mrs. Bivins, who wrote the organization's book of the year – 'Echoes of the Confederacy.'"¹⁶³

Her obituary in the Longview News-Journal mentions that her book, "Echoes of the Confederacy," was "selected as book of the year by the General Convention of the UDC at Richmond, Va., in 1950."¹⁶⁴

For Confederate Day at the Texas State Fair in 1951 the event announced in the *DMN* was that, "Mrs. Jack Orr, president of the Bonnie Blue Flag Chapter, will review 'Echoes of the Confederacy.'"

The author doesn't know if there is a connection between Mr. Jack Orr's family and Orr Street in Dallas.

¹⁶⁰ Cameron, C.C., "Address of Mrs. C.C. Cameron President of Texas Division United Daughters of the Confederacy," in "Thirty-Ninth Annual Convention Texas Division United Daughters of the Confederacy, San Antonio, October 29, November 1, 1935," pp. 56-61, mention of Oak Cliff Little Theater, pp. 59-60.

¹⁶¹ UDC members went by their husband's names.

¹⁶² No author, "UDC Delegates Receive Honors at Convention," *DMN*, 10/18/1951, page 4.

¹⁶³ No author, "Texas UDC Member Honored in Washington," *DMN*, 11/22/1950, page 11.

¹⁶⁴ No author, "A Patriot Passes," *Longview News-Journal*, 9/16/1951, page 4.

Viola Bivins died in 1951 and UDC Magazine has an obituary notice for her. The notice is sympathetic to her saying that UDC members will “regret” her passing and mentioning her book, “Echoes of the Confederacy.”¹⁶⁵

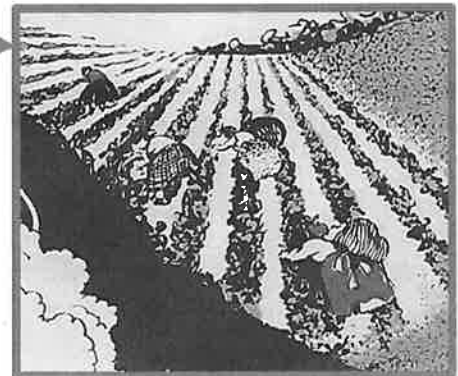


The views of the book, “Echoes of the Confederacy,” were supported by local Dallas UDC chapters, the Texas Div. UDC, and the national UDC.

A 1950 book review in the Longview News-Journal slyly digs at the book noting that the book has “fiercely loyal sentiments peppered with italics and exclamation points.” The reviewer concludes that, “It pictures a rosy view of the ante-bellum South.” The last sentence in the book notes the dust jacket illustrations for the book, “In front a Southern belle stands before a mansion, and on back, a Negro cabin,

cotton and slaves.”¹⁶⁶

The slaves on the dust jacket are picking cotton and the book does have a very “rosy” view of slavery.



In the Preface Bivins explains the purpose of the book as follows:

This book is written to be of practical and inspirational use to the U.D.C. Chapters for program and research materials, to Church Women’s study groups, and to families of Old South lineage who would like to brief themselves and their children in the roles their ancestors played in one of the most brilliant and remarkable civilizations the world has known.¹⁶⁷

The dust jacket concisely summarized Bivins’ view as to why the slave states seceded:

¹⁶⁵ No author, “Mrs. J.K. Bivins Passes in Texas,” *UDC Magazine*, Vol. 14 No. 10, Oct. 1951, page three.

¹⁶⁶ Mixon, Rita, “‘Echoes of the Confederacy’ Mrs. J.K. Bivins’ New Book,” *Longview News-Journal*, 5/28/1950, page 3. The reviewer is slyly ridiculing the book in the review.

¹⁶⁷ “Preface,” in “Echoes of the Confederacy,” unpaginated, author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950.

“The Southern States were driven to fight for their constitutionality guaranteed State Rights, and they lost,” says this belligerent defender of the South. “Today you notice that all the States are losing their rights, more and more all the time.” Bivins is drawing a connection between the claimed fight for states’ rights during the Civil War, the assertion made during the original Confederate War Memorial monument speeches made at the cornerstone laying and unveiling, with contemporary political conflicts where states’ rights are invoked which would include resistance against civil rights and anti-lynching legislation.

The chapters are given Roman numerals and the first four are: I, “Plantation Life in the Old South”; II, “What Made That Civilization?”; “How Was the Old South Civilization Destroyed?”; “What Civilization Has Replaced the Old?”

These chapters are nearly word-for-word copies of the speech UDC Historian General Mildred Rutherford made on Nov. 9, 1916 in Dallas, Texas in the Municipal Hall, the title of which was: “The Civilization of the Old South: What Made It: What Destroyed It; What Has Replaced It.”¹⁶⁸

In historiographical discussions of whether U.S. antebellum slaves were happy or not there is a tendency to just discuss the material condition of the slaves and whether they were in fact happy. This overlooks the profound racism implied in the assertion that African slaves could be happy. A being that is thought capable of being happy as a slave is a being that isn’t thought of as being fully human. American students are brought up with the slogan from the American Revolutionaries, “Give Me Liberty or Give Me Death.” Would anyone hire anyone for a non-menial position from a race for which it is thought they could be content with being slaves? Certainly not for any position which required initiative. What would white Westerners think of an assertion that Beethoven or Michelangelo could hypothetically be content and produce their art just as well if they had been slaves? There would a sensation of horror. Yet, the discussion of the contentment of slavery is often seen as merely a technical one of food calories, clothing, and housing. This needs to be kept in mind in considering the pro-slavery ideology of this book.

This is a representative text of the book:

There was something in the economic system of the Old South that forged bonds of personal interest and affection between the master’s family and their servants -- the one taking pride in the other. The master would boast, “My servants are the best on all the plantation around, best workers, best mannered, most contented, the healthiest.” And the servants in turn would say, “Our white folks are quality folks – none of yo’ po’ which trash. Ain’t nobody in the world like our Old Master

¹⁶⁸ The author of this essay owns both a copy of “Echoes of the Confederacy,” and a copy of Mildred Rutherford’s pamphlet and has done a survey through it. The introduction to the first chapter seems to be slightly different, but otherwise it appears that the chapters are just taken from Rutherford’s pamphlet, but the author hasn’t don’t a detailed comparison, and there might be a few words here and there that are different.

and Ole Mis.” Under slavery these Negroes were well fed, well clothed and well housed.

The book after stating how wonderful slavery was for Africans states argues that emancipation has been detrimental for Africans. The chapter gushingly describes a fantasy plantation wonderland that is delusional.¹⁶⁹

However, the conclusion of the chapter reveals Bivins views of African slavery in other ways. As for the punishment of slaves the underground railroad, Bivins’ chapter states:

As in family life when a child is disobedient and must be punished, so in plantation life a disobedient or unruly Negro had to be whipped or punished. It was natural that he should prefer to run away to escape a punishment he justly deserved, and knew he would surely receive, especially tempted to run into a free state when incentives were offered to come and be transported by some underground way and hidden from the owner. It was perfectly natural also for him to give the most exaggerated reports of his treatment to willing listeners who really set a premium upon these exaggerations.

Bivins argues that if there had been no abolition movement the Civil War would have been avoided and African slavery would have been abolished “by gradual emancipation” and that, “there would be no race problem today to adjust.”

If the Civil War had been avoided Bivins argues that “State Sovereignty would still remain ...”¹⁷⁰

The next chapter, “What Made the Civilization of the Old South,” and in particular what made is so much better than the other slave societies in history involves many of the standard assertions of the Lost Cause mythology. However, one particular item should be noted by many white people who previously have accommodated neo-Confederate mythologies. In the 19th and 20th centuries there were ideologies of racial hierarchy among white people.¹⁷¹ The neo-Confederates were generally supporters of Anglo-Saxonism and theories of white racial distinctiveness of the South.¹⁷² Bivins gives

¹⁶⁹ “Echoes of the Confederacy,” author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 2-4.

¹⁷⁰ “Echoes of the Confederacy,” author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 15-17.

¹⁷¹ Richard McMahan’s dissertation, “The Races of Europe: Anthropological Race Classification of Europeans 1839—1939, http://cadmus.eui.eu/bitstream/handle/1814/6973/2007_06_%20McMahon.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y is a good source of information on this largely forgotten racist ideology.

¹⁷² The racial theories have varied over time. During the Civil War the South was held to be Normans versus a Saxon north, (Normans and Saxons: Southern Race Mythology and the Intellectual History of the American Civil War, Ritchie Devon Watson Jr., LSU Press), later some asserted it was Anglo-Saxon, the neo-Confederate movement in the last part of the 20th century asserted that the South was Celtic (“The Confederate Memorial Tartan,” Scottish Affairs, No. 31 (Spring) 2000, pp. 55-84, by Ed Sebesta.)

Anglo-Saxon racial purity as the reason for the superiority of Southern antebellum slave society in its aristocratic culture. She states:

The Cavaliers and their descendants and the men who settled the Southern Colonies, men into whose blood came that of the Irish, Scotch, Welsh, and the French Huguenots, made up a people who have no superiors in the world; and today, after all these years, the purest Anglo-Saxon blood outside of rural England is to be found in the Southern States. ...

The Puritans and their descendants and the other colonies that settled the North, into whose blood came the Dutch, Swedes, and the Danes, and Quakers, made a sturdy race whose strength of character and business qualifications have always made them prominent as men of large affairs in the business world, great prominence in religious activities, and ability in financing large undertakings.¹⁷³

The underlying assumption of this section is pseudoscientific ideas of race and the reader can only imagine what Bivins thought of immigrants from Italy and Greece. Other sections of this chapter assert that slavery was beneficial since it made Africans Christians.

The next chapter in the book, "How Was the Civilization of the Old South Destroyed?" Bivins gives as the answer that emancipation and the efforts to give African Americans civil rights destroyed the civilization of the Old South. Since this chapter is the same as the speech given by Mildred Rutherford, it has the pro-KKK sections and statements.

Again Emancipation is held to be injurious to African Americans. A typical statement is, "We of the South – as much as we have been forced to bear from the impertinent and shiftless Negro of freedom – can never and must never forget the faithful Negroes of slavery ..." ¹⁷⁴

States' Rights are discussed in this chapter and it is clear that it is understood that the ideology has current application. The chapter states:

Just as in 1820 when the eyes of political jealousy were turned upon the Slave States because of their prosperity and prominence in the control of the affairs of the government, and the States' Rights were violated by the Missouri Compromise, so today the eyes of political jealousy are again turned to the South

¹⁷³ "Echoes of the Confederacy," author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 23.

¹⁷⁴ "Echoes of the Confederacy," author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 38.

because of its unparalleled prosperity and prominence in government affairs, you notice there is a combined effort against to destroy States Rights.¹⁷⁵

Beyond these four chapters made of Rutherford's address in 1916, much of the book is the standard Lost Cause writing of its time. Confederate leaders are glorious heroes, slaves were faithful is a chapter in reference to modern civil rights efforts. Chapter XVII is titled, "Editorials: Carpetbaggers Again – Comments – Quotations." The key item in the title is "Carpetbaggers Again," in reference to current civil rights efforts.

Though not identified as to origin in the book, the lead item is an editorial from the *Longview News-Journal* in 1942 titled "Carpetbaggers Again," which is a rebuttal to Earl Brown's landmark civil rights essay, "The American Negro and the War," in *Harper's Magazine*, April 1942.¹⁷⁶ The follow is an extract from the article which starts out asserting that carpetbaggers, who are called "false friends" mislead African Americans to seek racial equality and defends the use of the term "nigger":

The carpetbaggers, bitter-enders in the civil war, did this not to help the Negro but to infuriate his former master. The Negro, for his part, has been paying for this shortsighted attitude for the better part of a century. If the Negro writer in Harper's typifies the attitude that the New Deal government ought to force employers all over the nation to place Negro workers alongside whites without regards to consequences, it will be several centuries more before the breach is healed.

White men do not begrudge the Negro his success in any field of his own. If the Negro is as able and enterprising as the Harper's writer paints him, and he doubtless is, he can build his own factories and hire his own help. Incidentally, the word "nigger" of which the writer complains was given its meaning by the conduct of the bearer. It is a corruption of the Spanish word negro, meaning "black," and indications are that it was the Negro's own early pronunciation. If the Negro uses the word "nigger" as a term of reproach to others of his race, he should have some idea of its implications.

Bivins also makes it clear that she is an advocate of employing the violence of the Reconstruction era to oppose civil rights. She quotes an unattributed editorial from the "Arkansas Democrat" as follows:

There was an editor of the Atlanta Constitution once who was so famously nation-minded, it was said of him that he "died literally loving a nation into

¹⁷⁵ "Echoes of the Confederacy," author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 38.

¹⁷⁶ "Echoes of the Confederacy," author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 175. The unattributed editorial, is a word for word match, with the editorial, "Carpetbaggers Again," *Longview News-Journal*, 5/10/1942, page 12. The *Harper's Magazine* article, appears to be "The American Negro and the War," April 1942, pp. 545-572, by Earl Brown.

peace.” But when forced measures against the South were proposed and these states found themselves called upon for genius and loyalty to face once again that ancient problem, this editor of the Constitution stood up before the merchants of far-off Boston and declared: “We wrested our state government from Negro supremacy when the federal drumbeat rolled closer to the ballot box and federal bayonets hedged it deeper about than will ever again be permitted in this free government. But sirs, though the cannon of the republic thunder in every voting district of the South, we should still find in the mercy of God the means and the courage to prevent its establishment.” The Editor’s name was Grady, Henry Grady.¹⁷⁷

Henry Grady made this infamous speech to the Boston Merchants’ Association, at Boston, Massachusetts, Dec. 12, 1889.¹⁷⁸ What Grady was doing was to threaten insurrection in the face of possible efforts to secure African Americans civil rights. What Bivins is doing in her selection of this editorial, is threatening violent insurrection in the fact of possible actions to secure African Americans civil rights, which was starting to be done and was underway.

So with Bivins book we see the threads of glorifying violence to preserve white supremacy, the invocation of states’ rights to discredit efforts for possible laws to prevent this type of violence, and extensive writing asserting African American racial inferiority.

Another indication of the views of UDC members during the time of the Confederate War Memorial rededication is indicated by a series of articles published in *UDC Magazine* at about the same time.

UDC MAGAZINE DURING THE MID-20TH CENTURY CIVIL RIGHTS ERA

A series of articles were published from 1957 to 1959 attacking efforts for civil rights and the Supreme Court decision to integrate the schools. Some of the articles were serialized such that one issue of UDC Magazine, might be finishing one anti-civil rights article, starting and another and doing a middle installment of yet another.

One article is a good example on how the veneration of Confederate leaders is related to antipathy towards civil rights. In the June 1958 *UDC Magazine*, is an article, “Jefferson Davis – The Man America Needs Today.” The article makes it clear that Davis is needed to block civil rights and “mogrelization.” After giving a summary of Davis’ career to show that he was a hero, the article proclaims because of the U.S. Supreme Court, “... our

¹⁷⁷ “Echoes of the Confederacy,” author & publisher J.K. Bivins (Viola), manufactured by Banks Upshaw and Co., Dallas, 1950, pp. 176-177. The author of this essay has yet to track down this editorial.

¹⁷⁸ Grady, Henry W., “The Race Problem,” in Reed, Thomas B., “Modern Eloquence: Vol. 1 After Dinner Speeches, A-D,” Editor, Thomas B. Reed, pub. John D. Morris & Co., Philadelphia, copyright held by the University Society, 1900, pp. 534-550.

Constitution today is being tattered and torn, like a flag in battle, and States rights under it, has become a mockery!”

The article complains about foreign aid as well as the Supreme Court and states:

This constant waste of America’s wealth, together with forced shameful race-mixing, that causes lowered educational standards, immorality, and finally a mongrelized people, will bring about the down fall of America, as integration of races doomed the once cultured, and prosperous cities and nations of Carthage, Athens, Rome, and Sparta; and made of Egypt the week world power that she is today.

After mentioning the calling out of troops in Little Rock, Arkansas to support the integration of the High School there the article fears that “hundreds of righteously incensed men, women, and children” might be slain by troops. The article then states:

May God forbid this to happen in America!

May it please Him to preserve America, and to give to use a Christian fearless leader, like Jefferson Davis, who with the help of all true, loyal Americans, will preserve and defend the Constitution of our beloved Country, our freedom, and our independence!¹⁷⁹

Another example, is an article by the editor of the Chattanooga News Free Press, Lee Stratton Anderson, titled “Why The South Honors Lee and Jackson,” in the March 1959 *UDC Magazine*.¹⁸⁰

Anderson in reference to people studying the history of Lee and Jackson states, “But if we are sincere in paying our respects, we must ask ourselves if this is really enough.” Anderson makes his position clearer writing:

In these troubled times do we do honor to these great men – or do we brand ourselves as hypocrites – simply by praising their names without seeking to match their devotion to the cause in which they believed?

What Lee and Jackson’s cause is and what they would do in these ‘troubled times’ Anderson states:

Who can deny that Lee and Jackson in this modern day would be standing with their feet, firmly planted on conviction, with Christian morality and dedication to the established Constitution, determined to use every legal means possible to

¹⁷⁹ Dunstan, Bruce, “Jefferson Davis – The Man America Needs Today,” *UDC Magazine*, June 1958, pp. 19, 23, 26, 27.

¹⁸⁰ The Lee and Jackson here are two Confederate generals, Robert E. Lee and Thomas Jonathan Jackson, popularly known as Stonewall Jackson.

thwart usurpation that threatens to tear our nation asunder and destroy freedom by destroying the Constitution?

Who might be destroying the Constitution according to Anderson? In a section of the article, "Court Can't Legislate," Anderson explains:

And yet today we find the Constitution violated. We cannot depend upon Congress alone for enactment of laws, for the Warren Court has usurped the, "legislative power" of the United States, making "laws" by decrees where no such law or enforced practice existed prior to the court's pronouncement.

Anderson reveals more specifically what this usurpation might be about with this assertion:

Judicial power does not include the right to make laws, the right to assume dictatorship, for purposes either desirable or undesirable, good or ill. The judicial power is limited to cases under existing law and is not altered by the books of sociologists, either foreign or domestic.

It was well known that the Supreme Court in its *Brown vs. Board of Education* decision, which ruled that schools could not be racially segregated, had cited the work of Swedish sociologist Gunnar Myrdal's work, "An America Dilemma." This would have been well known to anyone would followed public affairs and many that didn't. Readers having an interest in integration would certainly have known to what Anderson was making reference.

The article asserts that states have control of education which would make a Supreme Court decision invalid.

In his conclusion Anderson brings together the issue of states' rights, segregation and honoring Lee and Jackson.

In the light of these grave questions affecting not only the traditions of the beloved Southland but the freedom of all Americans under a written Constitution, can we honor Lee and Jackson today simply by singing their praise? Or do we resort to hypocrisy lest we rededicate ourselves to stand as Lee and Jackson stood; come what may, to uphold the Constitution of the United States, the basic document which made this a land of freedom?¹⁸¹

A February 1962 article, "The Confederate Soldier and Why He Fought," by D.M. Nelson, President Emeritus, Mississippi College, published just two months prior to the rededication of the Confederate War Memorial makes clear the purpose of venerating the Confederacy. After a long recount of why the civil war wasn't over slavery but state

¹⁸¹ Anderson, Lee Stratton, "Why the South Honors Lee and Jackson," *UDC Magazine*, March 1959, pp. 12.

sovereignty and local government, echoing the original speeches for the Confederate War Memorial when the cornerstone was laid and unveiled, concludes with the following:

Indeed the soldiers of the sixties engaged in a holy warfare. They fought for the principle of local self-government; they battled for the rights guaranteed under the Constitution; they contended for the doctrine of self-determination of a free people. ... These Southern heroes were moved by the same spirit that has stirred patriots of every age, and inspired them to strike for freedom and to contend for the rights of free men and high born souls.

The great controversy over what is the better form of government for all the people still goes on apace. It is the burning issue before the people today. There is a veiled but determined attempt to deny the Southern states their authority under the Constitution and to deprive the people of the right to govern themselves.

The stake is large. The survival of a Christian civilization depends upon a favorable outcome.¹⁸²

¹⁸² Nelson, D.M. "The Confederate Soldier and Why He Fought," *UDC Magazine*, Vol. 25 No. 2, Feb. 1962, pp. 24-25.

The Mau Maus Are Coming!



This is typical of anti-civil rights rhetoric. There is a torrent of fine sounding phrases about principles and freedom, but in the end it is about the oppression of African Americans.

John B. Hood Camp officers Odeneal and Bedinger were also officers of the White Citizens Council. The Citizens Council's publication, *The Citizens' Council*, endlessly made reference to the Constitution, states' rights, federalism and freedom and expressed concern for African American. However the publication's cartoons revealed their real attitudes. The cartoon, "The Mau Maus Are Coming!" is from the Nov. 1958 *The Citizens' Council*.

There is this cartoon from the Dec. 1958 *The Citizens'*

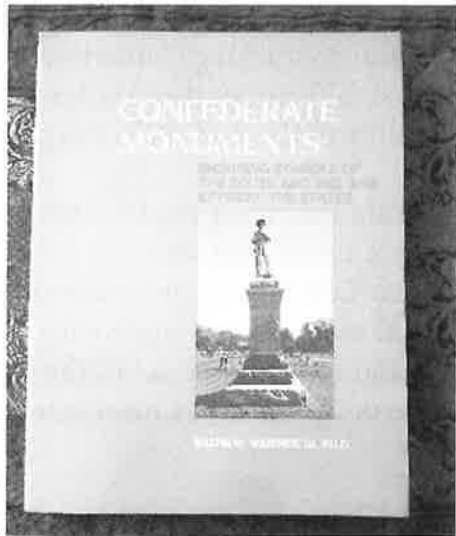
Council. The posters in the cartoon imply that African Americans are cannibals.

Mau Mau Party—Mississippi Headquarters



The Citizens' Council endlessly invokes the Confederacy and Reconstruction in opposition to civil rights. It utilized the historical narratives that the neo-Confederate groups like the UCV, SCV, and UDC had taught the public.

These neo-Confederate organizations would see monuments as endorsement of their ideology.



If you wanted to advance a neo-Confederate ideology that the South has a Confederate identity and make it credible monuments give this concept literally monumental endorsement. Similarly, if you argue that Confederate leaders and soldiers fought for states' rights which you are using to oppose civil rights, monuments literally monumentally endorse the actions of the Confederate leaders and soldiers. So monuments were seen as important by Ralph W. Widener, Jr. and he published a book, "Confederate Monuments: Enduring Symbols of the South and the War Between the States." The title itself asserts that the South is Confederate. The book is 308 pages long, with each page having pictures of three to five monuments, so the book has over 1,000 monuments included.¹⁸³

CONFEDERATE DAY AT THE STATE FAIR

Another indication of the meaning of Confederate heritage for those who rededicated the Arlington War Memorial are the speakers and topics at neo-Confederate events on Confederate Day at the State Fair.

Ex-Confederates attended the State Fair as a group at least back to 1891.¹⁸⁴ In 1892 it isn't clear whether the *DMN* is reporting an official Confederate Day. Instead it appears that Confederate veterans are there at the Fair as an activity for the Confederate reunion being held in Dallas.¹⁸⁵ However, in 1893, there is a reference to a Confederate Day at

¹⁸³ Widener, Ralph W. Jr., "Confederate Monuments: Enduring Symbols of the South and the War Between the States," self-published 1982. Produced by Andromeda Associates.

¹⁸⁴ No author, "The Fourth Day," *DMN*, 10/21/1891, page 2. It is in the 2nd column from the right under a subheading, "To-Day for the Military."

¹⁸⁵ No author, "State Fair Notes," *DMN*, 10/5/1892, page 3. No author, "The State Fair," *DMN*, 10/23/1892, page 11, which refers to Confederate Days, which is the reception of Confederate Veterans who will have a parade in downtown Dallas, 2nd column from the right towards the bottom, section titled "Confederate Days." The days at the Fair appear to be part of the Confederate Reunion in Dallas, see "No Author, "The State Fair," *DMN*, 10/25/1892, page 1.

the State Fair in the *DMN*.¹⁸⁶ A *DMN* 1967 article stated that, “Confederate Day at the Fair has been a custom since the first State Fair was held in Dallas ...”¹⁸⁷

After 1893, Confederate Day is generally mentioned in *DMN* news coverage with some information about the day until 1967.

Afterwards from 1968 to 1978 there is just mention of the day. The A.H. Belo Corp. which publishes the *DMN* and owns the assets of the defunct *Dallas Time Herald* (*DTH*) has failed to have the *DTH* digitized to be searchable and so tracking Confederate Days at the State Fair is limited to only the digitized *DMN*. A significant part of Dallas history is essentially inaccessible due to the lack of responsibility of the A.H. Belo Corp.

Reviewing *DMN* news coverage of Confederate Days at the State Fair from 1951 to 1967, gives another clue as to what the meaning of the Confederacy was to those who rededicated the Confederate War Memorial and the Dallas neo-Confederate movement. Though this investigation is limited by the lack of biographical materials on some who participated. Many of these events were in the Hall of State and so would be set in the Hall’s artwork of white triumphalism. So far none of the texts of the speeches has been found.

YEAR	Speakers and topics	Notes
1951	Mrs. Jack Orr reviews “Echoes of the Confederacy”	Book has been mentioned earlier in this paper.
1952	No information	
1953	Rev. Charles E. Pike is speaker	Have not been able to track down anything.
1954	Speakers are Judge F.B. Davenport, Lloyd S. Riddle, Mrs. J.H. Dunavent.	Lloyd S. Riddle’s white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in this paper.
1955	Clyde Odeneal spoke on Jefferson Davis.	Clyde Odeneal’s white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in this paper.
1956	Rev. S.B. Bedinger Jr., Commander John B. Hood Camp speaks	Rev. S.B. Bedinger Jr., white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in this paper.
1957	W.F. Billings is the speaker. Clyde Odeneal gives speech of welcome.	In one letter to the <i>DMN</i> editor, about the Korean War, he writes, “... thousands of good Americans who are tired of having their sons suffer and die under a mongrel United Nations flag ...”

¹⁸⁶ No author, “The State Fair,” *DMN*, 10/19/1893, page 1.

¹⁸⁷ No author, “Confederate Day to be Saturday at State Fair,” *DMN*, 10/20/1967, page 7.

1958	Leslie Jackson speaks on “The Invincible Spirit of the Confederacy”	Have not been able to track down anything.
1959	Giles E. Miller will speak on states’ rights.	Was involved with the Federation for Constitutional Government which fought against integration and proposed interposition. Was extensively involved with political opposition in Dalls to the Supreme Court’s ruling against segregation.
1960	Clyde Odeneal is speaker.	
1961	Robert H. Lawrence speaker on topic, “Our Southern Heritage.”	Was the Executive Director of Bureau for Economic Understanding.
1962	Dallas Mayor Earl Cabell is the speaker.	As U.S. Representative he was an opponent of civil rights legislation speaking out against it.
1963	No information	
1964	Clyde Odeneal speaker	Clyde Odeneal’s white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in this paper.
1965	Judge Royce Stout of Waxahachie is principal speaker.	Stout gave a speech denouncing civil rights that was carried by the Associated Press.
1966	Judge Lester Newton Fitzhugh will lecture. Introduced by Clyde Odeneal and Robert W. Hatfield	Clyde Odeneal’s white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in the paper. Who Robert W. Hatfield was is not known.
1967	Clyde Odeneal, now Commander-in-Chief of the Texas Division SCV has talk on our Southern Heritage.	Clyde Odeneal’s white supremacist activities mentioned earlier in this paper.

The author of this essay will be publishing as part of a paper on Fair Park a more detailed review of Confederate Day speakers at Fair Park, and other Confederate activities there. This is to show that during the period of the rededication of the Confederate War Memorial the nature of what Confederate “heritage” was.

MODERN NEO-CONFEDERATE IDEOLOGIES AND HISTORICAL NARRATIVES OF VIOLENCE

The Confederate War Memorial and monuments like that empower the neo-Confederate agenda. With the monuments in place on public property they literally monumentally endorse the neo-Confederate agenda. With the monuments removed, the narrative to neo-Confederate groups is that they are not endorsed, and further they are rejected. It reduces them to being fringe cranks.

It might be thought that views endorsing the Ku Klux Klan remain in an increasingly distant past. However, as this section will show pro-Klan and pro-white terrorist groups is a contemporary thing in the neo-Confederate movement.

This pro-white terrorist groups historical narratives are empowered by the Confederate War Memorial and other Confederate monuments. The Confederate War Memorial travels through time and has continuing agency as it persists in Pioneer Park. It needs to be understood what narratives will be empowered if the Confederate War Memorial is left in place. Hence this section.

The topics of violence and neo-Confederacy might bring to the public's mind of stereotypes of racists or racist groups such as the Ku Klux Klan spouting racist slurs and flying the Confederate battle flag. A person might think of individual extremists such as Dylann Roof who shot nine unarmed church goers to death at the Emanuel African Methodist Episcopal Church on June 17, 2015.¹⁸⁸

Less well known is that when Timothy McVeigh blew up the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City April 19, 1995 he was wearing a neo-Confederate T-shirt celebrating the assassination of Abraham Lincoln that was sold by *Southern Partisan* magazine.¹⁸⁹

The subject of this section is modern neo-Confederate ideologies and views supporting violence, in particular their support of violence that seeks to intimidate, to support insurrection, and terrorize communities.

MICHAEL ANDREW GRISSOM AND NEO-CONFEDERACY

Michael Andrew Grissom, a neo-Confederate writer, first book was *Southern by the Grace of God*, originally published by Rebel Press in 1988, then was picked by neo-Confederate Pelican Publishing Company in Gretna, Louisiana, in 1988 and there have been eleven printings as of 2007, there may have been more printings and the book is still in print. It is distributed in mainstream bookstores.¹⁹⁰ He has since authored a series of books.

¹⁸⁸ Smith, Glenn, Boughton, Melissa, Behre, Robert, "Nine dead after 'hate crime' shooting at Emanuel AME," *The Post and Courier*, Charleston, SC, <http://www.postandcourier.com/article/20150617/PC16/150619408>, printed out 6/15/2016.

¹⁸⁹ OKC Bombing Trial Transcript – 05/29/1997 16:25 CDT/CST, published 5/29/1997, *The Oklahoman*, Oklahoma City, OK, <http://newsok.com/article/1074807>, printed out 6/15/2016. Author has this t-shirt in his artifact collection. It was sold by the *Southern Partisan* magazine in their Christmas catalog which the author received November 1995. He ordered the t-shirt and received a letter dated Dec. 3, 1995 from *Southern Partisan* explaining that due to the demand for the t-shirt they were out of the size ordered and substituted a different size. Catalog in author's research collection.

¹⁹⁰ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," Pelican Publishing Company, Inc., Gretna, Louisiana, 1988; Also, Rebel Yell, Nashville, Tennessee, 1988. Michael Andrew Grissom had a website

This book is worth examining in detail for several reasons. It was, along with, *The South Was Right!* published a few years later by the Pelican Publishing Company, these two books launched the modern radical neo-Confederate movement. It has been enthusiastically praised and has been supported by both the United Daughters of the Confederacy and the Sons of Confederate Veterans. As noted earlier it has sold many copies and is widely distributed. Grissom's writings as a whole are also worth reviewing, though not all of his books have sold as many copies. Other works by Grissom have been endorsed by neo-Confederate groups and they also reveal his thinking and his neo-Confederate ideology.

Again, I would point out that the lack of capitalization of "negro" is in the original. The effort to have "Negro" capitalized goes back to the early 20th century and was an accepted practice decades before Grissom's book was published. Grissom in refusing to capitalize "Negro" is making a statement.

Finally one reason to focus on Grissom's, "Southern by the Grace of God," he has multiple elements of the neo-Confederate ideology relating to violence in just this one book and with the widespread praise of this book by the neo-Confederate movement, it is a good example of the movements ideologies relating to violence.

Grissom denounces emancipation as "the idea advocated by fanatic abolitionists, of freeing the slaves."¹⁹¹ Grissom assesses Southern slavery as follows:

There was a rudimentary misconception among northerners about slavery and the negro in general. Fiercely believing that slaves, who in the mild form of slavery practiced in the South would more fittingly have been called servants, were an unhappy lot just waiting for a chance to escape ...¹⁹²

Grissom has a chapter titled, "Reconstruction – Nightmare of the South." Quoting Thomas Dixon, it portrays African Americans as wild ignorant irresponsible savages in a time of misrule and corruption. The following are some typical texts:

In North Carolina, burned plantations had resulted in roaming bands of negro bandits. In the northeastern part of that state, the crimes perpetrated by these hoodlums were particularly atrocious. They raided the unprotected countryside, burning houses and looting with near impunity. They entered the homes of defenseless ladies, forced them to entertain at the piano, cursed them, robbed

<http://www.michaelandrewgrissom.com> which no longer exists but is archived at www.archive.org. Look at captures in the years 2007 and prior.

¹⁹¹ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 127, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹² Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 128, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

them, stripped them of their clothing, and subjected them to indignities better left unprinted.¹⁹³

With a little prodding, the illiterate negro masses could be worked into a frenzy at most any time.¹⁹⁴

Grissom defends the infamous Black Codes explaining that they were needed to get African Americans to work for wages.¹⁹⁵ The 14th Amendment, and 15th Amendment to the United States Constitution which, respectively, made African Americans citizens and gave African Americans the right to vote, are asserted by Grissom to be the cynical plans of the Republican Party to manipulate African Americans who he characterizes as ignorant. Grissom writes:

... There were nearly 4,000,000 negroes in Dixie, most of whom could neither read nor write. Most of them had no comprehension of matters beyond the boundary of the plantation, this ignorance of affairs presenting a golden opportunity to the Republicans who could instruct them how to vote. Forbid white people to vote, and Negroes could be manipulated into sending Republicans to Congress from every Southern state.¹⁹⁶

Grissom refuses to recognize African Americans as citizens in the Reconstruction state constitutional conventions complaining:

Every southern state was required to rewrite its constitution in a constitutional convention of delegates chosen in a statewide election of *all* adult males, *except those with disqualifications*. This meant that many ex-Confederates could not vote, and it meant that Negroes, even though they were not citizens, could vote. [Italics in the original]¹⁹⁷

Grissom devotes several pages portraying Louisiana's violent white supremacist groups, The Knights of the White Camellia and The White League, as heroes and saviors of Louisiana.¹⁹⁸ About the Knights of the White Camellia Grissom writes:

¹⁹³ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 151, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹⁴ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 166, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹⁵ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 162-164, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹⁶ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 165-171, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹⁷ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 167, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

¹⁹⁸ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "Southern by the Grace of God," pp. 173-178, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

With a negro police force in Shreveport who cared little for the safety of white citizens, the white men organized the Knights of the White Camellia. The Knights in Caddo parish declared “a white man’s government or no government” and made night rides, breaking up political meetings in which scalawags and carpetbaggers were instructing and inflaming the gullible freemen.¹⁹⁹

The Ku Klux Klan are especially held up as the saviors of the South. Grissom writes:

There were three requisite conditions for Republican power in the South: the negro vote, Republican control of the national government, and federal troops. Should any one of these supports be weakened or removed, Republican rule would collapse. The southerner had little control over troops or national politics, having himself been barred from voting, so he turned his efforts to the local scene, where the secret societies began to spring up in an effort to stop negro voting and run the carpetbaggers out of the South.

Grissom then writes of what he sees as the romance of the Ku Klux Klan, recommends *The Clansman* by Thomas Dixon published in 1905 and the 1915 movie *The Birth of a Nation* which glorifies the Ku Klux Klan in Reconstruction and quotes Woodrow Wilson’s praise of it, that it was “history written by lightning.” This book and movie portray African Americans as beasts and glorifies their subjection by violence.²⁰⁰

Grissom captions an illustration of a hooded Klansman on a movie poster for D.W. Griffith’s, *The Birth of a Nation* as follows:

The original Ku Klux Klan (1866-1877) played a vital role in ridding the post-war South of brutal carpetbagger rule.

The Red Shirts in South Carolina, who violently established white supremacy in South Carolina are also praised by Grissom.²⁰¹

In a short section in the book titled, “Papa and the KKK” Grissom portrays the Klan of the early 20th century as a benevolent patriotic organization that fought socialism and communism and did “*benevolent work among the poor.*” An example given of their patriotism was in a case of a sugar rationing violation in which “*they stopped the man and gave him a good beating.*”²⁰²

In another section, “The Hangin’ At Ada,” a lynching in Ada, Oklahoma, of a white man is praised as an example of civic spirit. Grissom quotes a newspaper, *Daily Oklahoman*

¹⁹⁹ Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” pp. 173-4, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

²⁰⁰ Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” pp. 180-181, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

²⁰¹ Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” pp. 181-182, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

²⁰² Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” pp. 446-448, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

that the lynching “was entirely justified in the eyes of God and man” and “those who took part in it have no reason today to be ashamed or conscience-stricken.”²⁰³

Grissom has a chapter of recommended reading material with a list of books and periodicals. The white supremacist novels *The Clansman* and *The Leopard Spot's* by Thomas Dixon as well as his autobiography *Southern Horizons* is recommended.²⁰⁴ The reader is strongly encouraged to read *Southern Partisan* and the *Citizen Informer*, the latter the official publication of the white supremacist Council of Conservative Citizens.

Grissom's book endorses white supremacist violent terror against African Americans explicitly. It has been praised by leading neo-Confederate organizations.

The United Daughters of the Confederacy helped launch the sales of the book by running an excerpt in their magazine in 1988 and announcing that the work would soon be published. The excerpt included an address where readers could order the book.²⁰⁵ Retta D. Tindal, UDC Historian General (2010-2012) in a 2007 article, “Confederate Classics: For Research, Reference, or Refresher,” enthusiastically recommends Grissom's book stating, “If you have a child or a grandchild or a UDC friend or any friend or family member who loves Confederate history, these books are sure to become there treasurers, too.” *Southern by the Grace of God* is one of the books Tindal is referencing here.

Tindal informs the reader that *Southern By the Grace of God*, “is a primer of all things Confederate” and that:

Mr. Grissom wrote this book for four reasons: to offer a firm understanding of our heritage, to instill pride in being Southern, to pursue the elements that characterize the South, and to rally Southerners to defend and preserve their unique heritage.²⁰⁶

Being that Tindal considers this book a “treasure” she sees it as accomplishing these goals, which gives insight as to how she defines this “unique heritage.”

In 2011 Tindal, as Historian General of the UDC published the General Historical Programs for Sept. 2011 to August 2013. These are a list of historical topics recommended for chapters for each month along with recommended books as

²⁰³ Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” pp. 411-418, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

²⁰⁴ Grissom, Michael Andrew, “Southern by the Grace of God,” “Southern Horizons” recommended on page 532, “The Clansman” recommended on page 533, “The Leopard Spots” recommended on page 535, *Southern Partisan* and *Citizen Informer* recommended on pages 538-9, Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, 1992.

²⁰⁵ Grissom, Michael Andrew, name given as “Mike,” “The Mystery of John Hunt Cole,” *The United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine*, Vol. 51 No. 9, Sept. 1988, pp. 27-29.

²⁰⁶ Tindal, Retta D., “Confederate Classics: For Research, Reference, or Refresher,” *United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine*, Vol.70 No. 10, Nov. 2007, pp. 15.

references. For May 2012 the topic is Sam Davis, and one of the two books recommended is *Southern By the Grace of God* by Grissom.²⁰⁷

The UDC has also awarded Michael Andrew Grissom its Jefferson Davis medal, which is awarded “for outstanding contributions in furthering the study and preservation of Confederate history through historical research, writing, public speaking, and other points of special achievement.”²⁰⁸

Other neo-Confederate publications gave Grissom’s book their enthusiastic endorsement. In the 1989 *Confederate Veteran*, book editor James N. Vogler Jr. praises the book as follows:

This is a 569-page love letter to the Southland and the author makes no bones about it. ... As the author reveals at the beginning of the book, if you want to read something negative about the South you had better pass this one up.²⁰⁹

The SCV started offering Grissom’s book for sale in *Confederate Veteran* in 2001 in the “Classic Southern Reprints,” section with the notice, “Celebrates in photographs and text the enduring legacy of being a Southerner. Issues a clarion call for those who love the South to defend and maintain that heritage.”²¹⁰ It is currently offered for sale by the SCV online with the notice, “The essential handbook for Southerners-proudly proclaims the traditions, the culture and the values that have long distinguished the South from the rest of the nation.”²¹¹ It was offered for sale in the SCV Merchandise Catalogs for 2004-2005, 2005-2006, 2008-2009, 2009-2010, 2011-2012, and 2015-2016 with the same book notice.²¹² It was also offered for sale in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without a caption.²¹³

However, none of these ads or book reviews or articles mention the book’s references to the Ku Klux Klan or any of Grissom’s views about race, slavery, Reconstruction, or other white supremacist groups or Grissom’s account of a lynching in Ada, Oklahoma. If a person was to pick up one of the neo-Confederate magazines or view an advertisement online none of these things would become evident. This is a key aspect of the neo-

²⁰⁷ No Author, “General Historical Programs September 2011 – August 2013,” *United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine*, Vol. 74 No. 5, May 2011, pp. 10-11.

²⁰⁸ Back outside cover of “American Terrorists,” by Michael Andrew Grissom and published through Create Space in 2016. Purpose of the medal is stated by the United Daughters of the Confederacy on their web site. <http://www.hqudc.org/objectives/>, printed out 9/11/2016.

²⁰⁹ Vogler, James N. Jr., “Books In Print,” *Confederate Veteran*, Sept. – Oct. 1989, page 37.

²¹⁰ No author, “Classic Southern Reprints,” *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 3 2001, pages 42-43, book notice on page 42.

²¹¹ <https://scv.secure-sites.us/store.php>, printed out 5/26/2013.

²¹² Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016, page 28. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have this book listed.

²¹³ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 15, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 Nol. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

Confederate agenda. They are quite aware of the need to manage their image and it appears that often the communication of ideas that would injure their image is out of the general public's view.

Another Grissom book is, *When the South Was Southern*, which has a section of photographs of Ku Klux Klan robes. Grissom writes:

The world knows the story of the Ku Klux Klan. Riding in the dark of night, southern men reclaimed the South from the black terror. Carpetbag rule was overthrown; civil law was reinstated; and, negro rampage was summarily ended.²¹⁴

The SCV offers for sale this book online currently (8/9/2016), and has sold it in their merchandise catalogs. It was sold in the SCV Merchandise Catalogs for 2005-2006, 2008-2009, 2009-2010, 2011-2012, and 2015-2016 with the same book notice.²¹⁵ It was also sold in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without a caption.²¹⁶

KU KLUX KLAN AND RECONSTRUCTION VIOLENCE

While the SCV passes resolutions against the contemporary Ku Klux Klan, however, it has a long history of praising the Reconstruction-era Ku Klux Klan. When United Daughters of the Confederacy General Historian S.E.F. Rose first published her enthusiastic praise for the Ku Klux Klan in 1914 it was endorsed by the Sons of Confederate Veterans at their 1914 Jacksonville convention. Such SCV veneration of the Reconstruction Klan are not, however, only a century old.²¹⁷

In Vol. 1 2001 issue of the *Confederate Veteran* in a section titled "Classic Southern Reprints," a video of the notorious film *Birth of a Nation*, which glorifies the Ku Klux Klan is for sale. The SCV notice for the book doesn't mention the Ku Klux Klan stating:

... [D]irector D.W. Griffith recreates the human tragedy of the War Between the States and Reconstruction in the South after the downfall of the Confederacy.

²¹⁴ Grissom, Michael Andrew, "When the South Was Southern," Pelican Publishing Company, Gretna, Louisiana 1994, pp. 322-325, quote on page 323.

²¹⁵ Online at www.scv.secure-sites.biz, printed out 8/9/2016, Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016, page 28. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have this book listed.

²¹⁶ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 15, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 No. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

²¹⁷ Rose, S.E.F., "The Ku Klux Klan or Invisible Empire," published L. Graham Co. Ltd., New Orleans, 1914. Quote in unpaginated front pages. To read excerpts of the book go to www.confederatepastpresent.org and use search term "Klan" to find other books praising the Klan published by neo-Confederates.

Filmed just fifty years after the end of the war, this epic motion picture takes a controversial look at the birth of Lincoln's "new nation" out of the ashes of the Constitutional Republic.²¹⁸

In the Volume Three 2001 *Confederate Veteran* ad for the video the notice is changed to read, "Relive history with this classic silent film from 1915, D.W. Griffith's masterpiece takes a controversial look at the birth of Lincoln's 'new nation' out of the ashes of the constitutional republic."²¹⁹ The idea that this film is historical instead of shrieking bigotry is laughable and calling it a "masterpiece" is an endorsement of the film.

The Volume Two 2002 *Confederate Veteran* laments that "Birth of a Nation," is "So demonized in today's politically correct climate that it is no longer shown publicly."²²⁰

It is also currently (6/18/2016) offered for sale online with the comment, "his silent film masterpiece made in 1915. An epic account of The War Between the States and Reconstruction. So Politically incorrect it hasn't been shown in years!"²²¹

It was also offered for sale in the SCV Merchandise catalogs for 2004-2005, 2005-2006, 2008-2009, 2009-2010, 2011-2012, 2015-2016 with the comment, "An epic account of The War Between the States and Reconstruction. So Politically incorrect it hasn't been shown in years!"²²² It was also in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without a caption.²²³

What seems to be the avoidance of actually mentioning that this film is about the Ku Klux Klan is, to the author, typical of how the SCV appears to seemingly promote the Reconstruction KKK as heroes. They praise a pro-Klan work, but at the same time it is not apparent from their promotion of the video that film they promote is pro-Klan. The sales of the video stopped in the "Confederate Gifts" ad section of their magazine. Though in online ads and in the catalogs you do see the image of a Klansman on a horse on the DVD cover.

Clyde Wilson at the Abbeville Institute in his 2014 article, "Reconstruction: Violence and Dislocation," defends the Ku Klux Klan as being justified as a measure of self-defense of the South. He writes:

²¹⁸ No author, "Classic Southern Reprints," *Confederate Veteran*, 2001 Vol. 1, pages 28-29, quote from page 28.

²¹⁹ No author, "Classic Southern Reprints," *Confederate Veteran*, 2001 Vol. 3, pages 42-43, quote from page 43.

²²⁰ No author, "Classic Southern Reprints," *Confederate Veteran*, 2002 Vol. 1, pages 44-45, quote from page 45.

²²¹ <https://scv.secure-sites.us/store.php>, printed out 5/25/2013.

²²² Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005, page 37; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 37; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 36; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 36; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, page 36; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016, page 36. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have this video listed.

²²³ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 17, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 Nol. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

In this situation, where the law was a travesty and the government was in the hands of the unscrupulous, Southerners reacted as free Americans have always done. They took matters into their own hands to restore genuine law and order. Sympathetic Northerners and visiting Europeans mostly agreed that the kind of resistance represented by the Ku Klux Klan and similar groups was necessary and right, at least in the beginning. Southern actions, so viciously indicted by today's historians, were mostly defensive.²²⁴

Recently published in 2016 by a new neo-Confederate press, Shotwell Publishers, is *Washington's KKK: The Union League During Reconstruction*, by John Chodes with a forward by Clyde Wilson. This book argues that the Ku Klux Klan was organized to defend the South against who Chodes asserts were the real terrorists the Union Leagues. As Chodes states, "The Ku Klux Klan came into existence as a result of, and as a reaction to, the illegal, unconstitutional and criminal activities of the Union League."²²⁵

Another book which the SCV offers for sale, but the author hasn't seen offered online (last checked 8/10/2016) nor seen offered in the *Confederate Veteran*, but only offered for sale in the SCV catalogs is *Invisible Empire: The Story of the Ku Klux Klan, 1866-1871*, by Stanley Horn. It was sold in five SCV Merchandise catalogs for 2004-2005, 2005-2006, 2008-2009, 2009-2010, and 2011-2012. From the text in the book for the catalog:

Conceived in the minds of six former Confederates as a social club for their own amusement, this Klan was disbanded in 1871, after its purpose of countering post-war aggression against the Southern people by Carpetbaggers was fulfilled. Presented for research purposes.²²⁶

The Ku Klux Klan of Reconstruction in the SCV catalog is held to be the savior of the South and not a racist terrorist organization. It was also offered in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without a caption.²²⁷

²²⁴ Wilson, Clyde, "Reconstruction: Violence and Dislocation," Abbeville Institute web site, posted Oct. 39, 2914, <http://www.abbevilleinstitute.org/clyde-wilson-library/reconstruction-violence-and-dislocation/>, printed out 6/13/2016, originally the final part of a lecture delivered at the Abbeville Institute 2009 Summer School titled, "Reconstruction in the Experience of the Southern People."

²²⁵ Chodes, John, "Washington's KKK: The Union League During Reconstruction," Shotwell Publishers, Columbia, South Carolina, 2016, pp. x.

²²⁶ Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005, page 30; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 30; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, page 29. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have had this book listed.

²²⁷ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 14, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 Nol. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

RED SHIRTS

The Red Shirts were a violent group that overthrew the Reconstruction government of South Carolina through violence and intimidation during the elections of 1876 ending multiracial democracy there. The United Daughters of the Confederacy (UDC) operates the museum Oakley Park, which in a 2001 *UDC Magazine* article, "Oakley Park: Only Shrine of its Kind," the author Donna Harris informs us that, "Today it stands as a shrine to the Red Shirt campaign of 1876."²²⁸ The article gives briefly explains that the Red Shirts were a "... movement to redeem South Carolina from Radical rule."

However, when the UDC was raising funds for the building in the 1940s they were much more direct as to the reasons why they admired the Red Shirts.

The UDC South Carolina Division issued a publication with the cover, "United Daughters of the Confederacy, South Carolina Division: Golden Anniversary 1896-1946." In it on page 13 is an article titled, "Oakley Park, Edgefield's Red Shirt Shrine." Oakley Park is an old Plantation house which the South Carolina UDC division had decided in October 1944 to restore. The importance of this house for restoration is stated in the following article, "Oakley Park was the home of General Martin Witherspoon Gary, who with his Red Shirts, in 1876, did so much to restore white supremacy in South Carolina." The article also explains "The 'Red Shirts' were largely ex-Confederate soldiers under their one-time military commanders."²²⁹ Thus the article explains why this violent white supremacist group is part of Confederate "heritage."

At the November 13, 1947 national convention of the UDC in Florida, the entire organization adopted the restoration of Oakley Park for a Red Shirt Shrine. A series of reports follow from 1948 to 1950 in the UDC Convention Minutes and articles in the UDC magazine on the progress of restoration until it is completed by Mrs. J. Frost Walker (Cornelia Walker).²³⁰ In the UDC magazine there are reports that make clear the purpose of the Red Shirts were.

In the *United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine*, March 1947, "General Wade Hampton," pp. 11-3, the author, Mrs. J.A. Yarbrough said:

He devoted himself to the rehabilitation of his stricken State which was overrun by the Republican Party with Negroes holding high offices. Great as was his war service, his leadership in the trying days that followed was even greater. He was a

²²⁸ Harris, Donna, "Oakley Park: Only Shrine of its kind," *UDC Magazine*, Vol. 64 No. 6, June/July 2001, pp. 23-24.

²²⁹ "United Daughters of the Confederacy, South Carolina Division: Golden Anniversary 1896-1946," no author, "Oakley Park, Edgefield's Red Shirt Shrine," pages 13.

²³⁰ Walker, Cornelia, "Report of Oakley Park, The 'Red Shirt Shrine,' pp. 189-91, "The Minutes of the Fifty-Fifth Annual Convention of the United Daughters of the Confederacy," 1948; Walker, Cornelia, "Oakley Park Report ('The Red Shirt Shrine', located at Edgefield, SC)," pp. 188-191, "The Minutes of the Fifty-Sixth Annual Convention of the United Daughters of the Confederacy," 1949; Walker, Cornelia, "Oakley Park: The Red Shirt Shrine (Final Report)," pp. 189-192, "The Minutes of the Fifty-Seventh Annual Convention of the United Daughters of the Confederacy," 1950. Most issues of *UDC Magazine* for 1948 & 1949.

member of a delegation sent by a taxpayers' convention to protest with the authorities in Washington against upholding the enemies of law, order and decency in Columbia. The appeal fell upon deaf ears.

Exhausting every resource to secure peace and order, the white people of South Carolina determined to overthrow the government by a direct fight in 1876, and they selected as their leader, Wade Hampton. In convention at Columbia they nominated him for governor.

The campaign was one of the most remarkable political struggles in the world's history. The famous Red Shirt campaign for the redemption of the State from outside and Negro rule is one of the great episodes of South Carolina history. Daily it seemed that a bloody conflict would ensue. The slightest error would have meant civil war. But Hampton kept the peace. His cool head, strategy and bravery gave his people the victory and once more South Carolina was under respectable rule. It was months, however, before the other party and the Federal troops were removed from the State and Governor Hampton was finally in full control.

Similar praise of post-Civil War terrorism can be found in Mrs. J.R. Carson's²³¹ article in the *United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine*, September 1948, pp. 6-8, "The Great Triumvirate of the Reconstruction Period in South Carolina." Carson also asserts that allowing African Americans to vote was a mistake.

After the collapse of the Confederacy there was in South Carolina practically no civil authority; no organized State government, and no militia organization to afford protection of life and property. Garrisons of United States troops, many of them Negroes, former slaves, misled by passion, ignorance and evil counsellors, were stationed in the various towns and cities, and completely controlled the actions of citizens. Adventurers from without the State soon appeared to incite the Negroes to turn against their former owners, to become active in politics and to aspire to political office. Within a few years the control of the State government was rampant. Extravagance in the appropriation of public funds; dishonesty, disorder and a lawlessness reigned supreme, and for a decade the white population was helpless, and almost hopeless. Rancor towards the Southerners and philanthropy towards the Negroes combined to produce the measure known as Reconstruction, and this policy had the above disastrous results. No people in any time or anywhere faced so many difficult problems as did the people of South Carolina, and all of these at the same time. Social and economic, political and racial, all combined and interwoven, and upon the wise and proper solution of which depended not only white supremacy, but the very existence of the white race.

²³¹ Until the latter part of the 20th century members of the UDC often used only their husband's name and what the author's name often isn't known. The names used are the names that the authors used for themselves.

The *UDC Magazine* articles more recently have not included direct statements about white supremacy regarding the Red Shirts, as indicated in a 2013 article by Retta D. Tindal, Historian General of the UDC (2010-2012), "General Wade Hampton III," about a Confederate general who became governor of South Carolina when the Red Shirts overthrew Reconstruction in South Carolina. The essay entirely omits mention of the Red Shirts. Tindal instead states, "His reputation as spokesman for a conciliatory policy for the Negro in the South grew in the post war years." His opponent in the 1876 election for governor is called "a Maine carpetbagger." The Republicans in 1876 are "Radical" which continues the idea that only a "Radical" would not support white supremacy. Tindal concludes, "He was from that time on known as the man who brought South Carolina out of Reconstruction."²³²

The Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV) has also advertised books in which the Red Shirts are portrayed as Confederate heroes. The SCV advertised reprints of the 1935 book, *Hampton and His Red Shirts: South Carolina's Deliverance in 1876*, by Alfred B. Williams in a section, "Confederate Gifts from IHQ," (International Headquarters) in the *Confederate Veteran*. The book is praised as "a fascinating chronicle of how the people of South Carolina, let [sic] by former Confederate General Wade Hampton and his famous Red Shirts, rose up to free themselves from the intolerable and dangerous conditions of the Reconstruction period."²³³ When the book is sold in the *Confederate Veteran* in 2009, the SCV is more oblique, stating "The story of the restoration of home rule in South Carolina following eleven years of reconstruction."²³⁴

Another book that the SCV also advertises in their 2015-2016 merchandise catalog and earlier catalogs is the 1927 book, as well as online is "Ousting the Carpetbagger from South Carolina," by Henry L. Thompson.²³⁵ Both these books on South Carolina and Reconstruction were also advertised in the SCV Merchandise Catalog 2013-2014 which was an insert in the Sept/Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran* but without captions.²³⁶

There are four important conclusions to be drawn from the history of neo-Confederate praise for the Red Shirts. One is that neo-Confederate groups see the Civil War and Reconstruction as one long conflict; two, that they comprehend the Red Shirts as part of the Confederate legacy to be honored; and three, they celebrate violent white terrorists as part of their Confederate "heritage."

²³² Tindal, Retta D., "General Wade Hampton III," *UDC Magazine*, Vol. 76 No. 5, May 2013, pp. 15-16.

²³³ No author, "Confederate Gifts from IHQ," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol 62. No.3, May/June 2004, pp. 62.

²³⁴ No author, "Confederate Gifts from IHQ," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol 67. No.1, Jan./Feb. 2009, pp. 62.

²³⁵ Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005, page 30; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 30; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016, page 29. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have had this book listed. For the online store. SCV Online store, <http://scv.secure-sites.us>, printed out 5/15/2016.

²³⁶ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 14, insert after page 20 in *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 No. 5, Sept./Oct. 2014.

The fourth important conclusion is how neo-Confederate ideology can embrace white supremacists but not have it perceived by the public. Whereas almost all Americans know about the Ku Klux Klan, few know about the Red Shirts and other similar but more obscure violent groups during Reconstruction. So groups have been somewhat more visible in their embrace of the Red Shirts, though there has been some efforts to obscure this since the neo-Confederate organizations know that the author has been tracking them and publishing results.

OPPOSITION TO HATE CRIME LEGISLATION AND SUPPORT OF BIAS VIOLENCE

Hate crime legislation is designed to stop bias violence by groups such as the Ku Klux Klan and similar groups as well as that committed by individuals. Hate crime legislation provides another defense against terror directed against individuals and groups based on who they are. Anti-hate crime legislation is directly counter to the neo-Confederate tradition of honoring violent white terrorists.

Neo-Confederates oppose anti-hate crime legislation and otherwise support means by which bias crimes are enabled. It is a means of directing violence when more direct methods are not feasible.

Paul Gottfried in his article, "Our American Cultural Revolution," published May 27, 2016, at the Abbeville Institute website (www.abbevilleinstitute.org), complains about student protests against prejudice and institutional racism and sees it deriving from civil rights legislation and anti-hate crimes legislation. Gottfried a larger complaint about civil rights legislation in general. He writes:

Now the kids and their instructors manufacture grievances as the action unfolds. Protestors are for or against the wearing of Hallowe'en costumes on campus, depending on which side can be used to humiliate gutless administrators. They take offense at the name of any dead white man or denounce any form of lookism or micro-aggression, providing the resulting protest permits them to express outrage.

In the early 1960s such things did not happen, and for a self-evident reason. Sixty years ago we did not have a vast state apparatus fighting "discrimination," judging "hate crimes" and by implication "hate speech," and monitoring the treatment of protected minorities.

Gottfried, explains that he doesn't care about social justice or ending discrimination and sees efforts against discrimination as a means to expand the power of the state.

In regards to rape he writes:

Woman students on our campuses are now encouraged by the state to accuse male students of rape; and those who have state power on their side are in a position to wreak havoc on those they accuse. Although felony laws protect women who have been physically assaulted in colleges and elsewhere, the Department of Education and other government agencies insist on more stringent guidelines. They mandate sensitivity training for faculty and staff and demand that university authorities give concentrated attention to well-rehearsed grievances. And the government, under both political parties, has created this Inquisition.²³⁷

In the early 21st century the book, *The South under Siege: 1830-2000*, by Frank Conner has gained prominence, acceptance and endorsement in the neo-Confederate movement. The following establishes this, before we discuss his views on hate crime legislation. Also, for a latter chapter on anti-Semitism in this book.

The Sons of Confederate Veterans have advertised it for sale in their magazine and merchandise catalogs, and a review in *Southern Mercury* recommended it. It is very clear what this book was about, so, for the author, it is hard to believe that the SCV didn't know or understand what the book was about.

Frank Conner ran a series of full page ads for the book in *Confederate Veteran* magazine starting in 2003. The July/August 2003 issue ad makes very clear the book's view point. One paragraph of the ad states.

Ever since the 1830s, various groups of Northern liberals have been waging an ideological war against the white South, using black civil-rights as their main weapon against us. Their objectives are to discredit and destroy our society-and Southern Christianity along with it; and then to discredit Christianity in the US, and substitute secular humanism for it as the official religion, to justify establishing a totalitarian-socialist government in America.

This ad was repeated in the Nov./Dec. 2003 *Confederate Veteran*.²³⁸

The South Under Siege was praised by Ann Rives Zappa in a reviewed in the Sept./Oct. 2003 *Southern Mercury*, a publication of the Educational PAC (Political Action Committee) of the Sons of Confederate Veterans. She calls it "a masterful volume of work painstakingly researched" and that "Author Conner uses several chapters of *The South under Siege*, to detail the rise of powerful black political movements and the proliferation of our enemies. He covers policies and events created by liberals through the Supreme Court and Congress during the Fifties and Sixties to keep the South in subjugation."

²³⁷ Gottfried, Paul, "Our American Cultural Revolution," May 27, 2016, <http://www.abbevilleinstitute.org/review/our-american-cultural-revolution/>, printed out 6/21/2016.

²³⁸ No author, full page advertisement, "At Last!: The Real History That the Southern Historians Weren't Allowed to Write," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 51 No. 4, July/August 2003, pp. 2; Vol. 51. No. 6, Dec. 2003, pp. 2.

In the Sept.-Oct. 2003 *Confederate Veteran* the full page ad lists some of the content.

7. How the white Southerners had to disenfranchise and segregate the blacks.

...

9. How the liberals ran the black-civil-rights movement as a war against the white South.

10. How the liberals used the federal government to establish the first phase of Reconstruction II: the Civil Rights Act of 1964 and the Voting Rights Act of 1965 (still in force.)

11. How the liberals used the black activists and the news/entertainment media to establish the second phase of Reconstruction II, which is now destroying the white South.²³⁹

The March/April 2004 *Confederate Veteran* full page ad for the book omits mentioning civil rights legislation or African Americans, the book is about, "The fact is that various groups of Northern liberals have been waging an ideological war against the conservative Christian South at least since the 1830s ..." ²⁴⁰ In the Sept./Oct. 2004 *Confederate Veteran* ad informs that reader that:

The book chronicles the twists and turns in the ideological war which various groups of Northern liberals have been waging against the traditional white South for the past 170 years, in order to replace Christianity with secular humanism as the national religion, and to replace limited government with lockstep socialism in the US."

The May/April 2004 *Confederate Veteran* full page ad feels Southerners have been fooled:

Those Southerners have been suckered into believing that states' rights is really racism; that a strong aversion to socialist government is really a complete disregard for the welfare of the blacks and other disadvantaged minorities ...²⁴¹

It is hard for the author to believe that the Sons of Confederate Veterans at this time didn't know what this book, with its racism, anti-Semitism, and conspiracy theorizing, was about.

²³⁹ No author, full page ad, *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 51 No. 5, Sept./Oct. 2003, pp. 51.

²⁴⁰ No author, full page ad, *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 62 No. 2, March/April. 2004, pp. 17. **(From 2003, to 2004 the volume of the *Confederate Veteran* jumps from Vol. 51 to Vol. 62. The author uses the volume and number as printed in the magazines themselves.)**

²⁴¹ No author, full page ad, *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 62 No. 3, May/June 2004, pp. 65.

In the next issue, July/August 2004 *Confederate Veteran* the book is first sold in the magazine by the Sons of Confederate Veterans themselves in their section titled, "Confederate Gifts from IHQ," with and explaining that it tells a true history how supposedly the South has been oppressed by the "North" and that it is "an excellent defense" against the history taught in "the government schools."²⁴²

The ad besides not mentioning the fact that the book is hostile to civil rights, also defines this book as a "Confederate Gift," that is it is part of Confederate "heritage."

The book is currently (6/24/2016) offered for sale online by the Sons of Confederate Veterans with the same comments as in the first SCV Confederate Veteran ad for the book.²⁴³

It has been offered for sale by the *Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalogs* for 2004-2005, 2005-2006, 2008-2009, 2009-2010, 2011-2012, and 2015-2016 with the same endorsement.²⁴⁴ It was also offered for sale in the 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog insert in the Sept.-Oct. 2013 *Confederate Veteran*.²⁴⁵

The SCV started to offer it for sale it more frequently again in the *Confederate Veteran* starting with July/August 2011, Sept./Oct. 2012, Sept./Oct. 2013, Jan./Feb. 2014, July/August 2014, Jan./Feb. 2015, May/June 2015 and since has stopped, probably because the author was sending documentation about the SCV selling this book to the media, synagogues, Christian denominations, and others in 2015.²⁴⁶

However, what really demonstrates the influence of Frank Conner in neo-Confederate circles and in the SCV was that he was selected to write a series of four articles for the *Southern Mercury* magazine of the Educational PAC of the SCV. These weren't just any articles. The *Southern Mercury* magazine had Conner define both the history of the South and also the purpose of the SCV and what direction it should take in the future. Each article also mentioned that he was the author of *The South under Siege* with contact information so the reader could purchase his book.

When the publication was launched Conner wrote the cover article, "Death of a Nation: The Almost Forgotten Body and South of the Confederate Veterans," for the first issue of *Southern Mercury*, July/Aug. 2003, in which he gives forth the neo-Confederate

²⁴² No author, "Confederate Gifts from IHQ," *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 62 No.4, July/August 2004, pp. 62.

²⁴³ No author, <http://scv.secure-sites.biz/store.php>, printed out 6/24/2016.

²⁴⁴ Sons of Confederate Veterans Merchandise Catalog 2004-2005, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2005-2006, page 29; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2008-2009, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2009-2010, page 28; Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2011-2012, Sons of Confederate Veteran Merchandise Catalog 2015-2016 page 28. Note, the author only possesses six of these catalogs, there may be others which might also have this book listed.

²⁴⁵ 2013-2014 SCV Merchandise Catalog, pp. 15, inserted in the *Confederate Veteran*, Vol. 71 No. 5, Sept.-Oct. 2013, insert was glued in between pages 20-21.

²⁴⁶ *Confederate Veteran* issues: July/August 2011, pp. 62; Sept./Oct. 2012, pp. 75; Sept./Oct. 2013, pp. 70; Jan./Feb. 2014, pp. 71, July/August 2014, pp. 70; May/June 2015 pp. 70. (These pages are the first page of the "Confederate Gifts from IHQ" ad.)

concept of Southern history, and calls for the SCV membership to be educated with a with that understanding. He is worried that “Some SCV members have actually accepted the beliefs of Northern liberalism (multiculturalism, et al.), and are helping the liberals to destroy the traditional Southerners as a people ...”

Conner writes:

Today the SCV should be a formidable instrument, successfully (and lawfully) defending the South’s traditional belief system and way of life against the accelerating attacks by the liberals and black activists, who are bent on vilifying and suppressing every vestige of our heritage.”

In the article Conner regrets that the SCV isn’t currently this ideological force.²⁴⁷

In the next issue of the *Southern Mercury*, Sept./Oct. 2003, Conner writes “Where We Stand Now: And How We Got Here,” where he gives his understanding of Southern history in the 20th century. Conner sees the civil rights movement of the 20th century as an attack on the South and to counter this attack Conner writes, “To do that, we must urgently reform the SCV, and convert it into a (lawful) effective fighting organization; and we must use it to fight.”²⁴⁸

His Jan./Feb. 2004 *Southern Mercury* article, “The Enemy’s Strategy,” is a complaint that liberals and African Americans are attacking the “traditional South.”²⁴⁹

However, of particular interest is his last article in the *Southern Mercury*, “Reorganizing the Sons of Confederate Veterans,” in the May/June 2004 issue. In the article he calls for the reorganization of the SCV into a right wing ideological organization to fight culture wars. The individual members are to get training to fight culture wars to defend Confederate heritage which he defines is “the Protestant-based conservative belief system, and the set of values and way of life resulting from it, which were the essence of the Old South ...”

Conner further explains in the article:

It will teach each SCV member how and why a people possessed of that viewpoint would (and will) demand and get good (constitutional) government, and maintain a moral society while enjoying maximum individual freedom of action and low taxation.²⁵⁰

²⁴⁷ Conner, Frank, “Death of a Nation?: The Almost Forgotten Body and Soul of the Sons of Confederate Veterans,” *Southern Mercury*, Vol. 1 No. 1, July/August 2003, pp. 8-13.

²⁴⁸ Conner, Frank, “Where We Stand Now: And How We Got Here,” *Southern Mercury*, Vol. 1 No. 2, Sept./Oct. 2003, pp. 10-14.

²⁴⁹ Conner, Frank, “The Enemy’s Strategy,” *Southern Mercury*, Vol. 2 No. 1, Jan./Feb. 2004, pp. 5-7, 32-33.

²⁵⁰ Conner, Frank, “Reorganizing the Sons of Confederate Veterans,” *Southern Mercury*, Vol. 2 No. 3, Jan./Feb. 2004, pp. 8-11, 27.

This is largely the direction the SCV seems to have taken as it becomes more explicitly political in its publication *Confederate Veteran*.

Having established that Conner and his book are a significant influence in the SCV and the neo-Confederate movement we should become familiar with his view of hate crime legislation.

Conner's writing in the *Southern Mercury* didn't mention Judaism, Jews or Jewish culture. The book focuses heavily on just those things. Though one often hears that this or that writing is "frightening" to such an extent that the word is deadened in its impact when reading it or hearing it, "frightening" is truly the word to use here. However, that will be discussed later in a section devoted to anti-Semitism in the neo-Confederate movement. Here the focus will be on Conner's views on hate crimes. Every synagogue in the nation however should consider the risks to their security as well as that to any Jewish intellectual who isn't ultra-reactionary posed by the modern neo-Confederate movement.

In a section of one chapter, "The Liberal/Black Coalition Undertakes its Next Major Campaign: The Hate-Crime Laws." Conner explains:

By the late 1980s, the black/liberal coalition's combination of attack campaigns in phase 2 had been so successful that the Jewish intellectuals/activists were ready to execute their master stroke: securing the enactment of comprehensive federal hate-crime laws.

This is in reference to what Conner sees as an attack on the South driven by "Jewish intellectuals." Conner claims:

The real purpose of hate-crime legislation is to punish politically incorrect thoughts—initially, any dissent from liberalism's preachments re multiculturalism.

Conner references white supremacist Jared Taylor, publisher of the notorious *American Renaissance*, whose writings and books assert that African Americans are a menace to white people. Conner insists that hate-crime laws are meant to cover up the criminality of African Americans asserting:

First, such laws can be used to conceal both the harsh fact that far more blacks commit crimes of violence against whites than vice versa, and the harsh fact that the percentage of young urban-black males who commit violent crimes is now so high that many observers call into question the mental stability of the black race.

Conner recounts a history of anti-hate crime legislation claiming that these laws have an ulterior motive to protect themselves from murderous persecution in America:

The hate-crime legislation that is ostensibly enacted to protect the blacks also provides equal protection to other designated "victim"-groups—including the

Jews... the real purpose of the hate-crime laws is to protect the Northern Jewish activists ... against their fears of pogroms in America.

Conner sees anti-hate crime legislation leading to anti-hate speech legislation which Conner asserts is part of a long term deceptive campaign for political domination:

It will be the culmination of a campaign begun by the Northern Jewish intellectuals in the 1920s ... And if the Northern Jewish intellectuals ... are given complete protection under law against whatever they may deem "hate speech," they will then be free to pursue any course of political action they may desire—and no one will dare question it. The Jews are perilously close to that point already.

Conner asks what might be the ultimate objective of this campaign and suggests that the momentum for hate crimes legislation is fed by a conspiracy led by Jews in the media:

At this point we must ask ourselves two questions. First, why would the Jewish-controlled U.S. news media be so willing to distort the truth about racial violence so greatly, in order to obtain hate-crimes legislation?

As a possible answer Conner poses the question, "... are they the acts of a dangerously-paranoid people?"

Besides arguing that hate-crime legislation is a secret Jewish conspiracy, this section of the book and other chapters in the book asserts in the most inflammatory language that there is a secret Jewish plot against the South. It is quite reasonable to be concerned that this book could lead some disturbed individual to commit an act of violence.

It also shows how the SCV efforts to offer for sale certain books could have a pernicious impact.

CONCLUSION

Monuments are erected for the purpose of remembering the past in a certain way so that society will be sent in a certain direction into the future.

With this history of the Confederate War Memorial in Fair Park we can clearly see in what direction it was intended to direct society into the future. We can see how it has worked to shape society and how it has worked with other white supremacist agendas to further white supremacy.

In 2019 we should not want a monument that works to maintain white supremacy and works to direct society into a white supremacist future.

We need to have a Dallas ready for the multipolar world of the future in which it won't be a world in which white privilege is dominate, when the eras of European world imperialism have long since been gone, where when need to understand and respect peoples from around the world, peoples in many cultural currents flowing into the future.

We won't be ready if we think we can just do superficial things and not seriously address our past.

Further we will be a laughing stock if we do superficial things, for outside Dallas superficial actions will be seen for what they are. They will server to discredit the City of Dallas.

Finally, if this Confederate monument at Pioneer Park remains, it will be a scarecrow to warn others away from Dallas.

APPENDIX ONE – The White Supremacy of the Confederate Individuals Represented by Statues at the Confederate War Memorial.

Since the history William Lewis Cabell's white supremacy continues into the 20th century and his very much a part of the story of lynching in Dallas his biography is discussed in the relation of the statue to lynching in this essay and not in this appendix. He is represented by the monument with a medallion showing his head.

Albert Sidney Johnston

Military personnel often don't leave much in terms of a historical record on political topics. Confederate Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston died during the Civil War, However, his son, William Preston Johnston, in his biography of his father, "The Life of Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston," wanted the reader to know that Johnston was a supporter of slavery and an opponent of abolitionism.

In a section, "Opinions of Johnston," his son has the following: [Boldface added.]

During the summer and fall of 1856 all other interests were subordinate to the political struggle which resulted in the election of Mr. Buchanan, the Democratic candidate, over Fremont, the nominee of the Antislavery party. The following letters are inserted, because they clearly define General Johnston's views on the subject of abolitionism and his apprehensions at that time.

On the 21st of August, writing from San Antonio to the author, he says:

The best friends of the Union begin to feel apprehensions for its permanency. A disruption is too horrid for contemplation. War and its accompaniments would be a necessary consequence; a peaceful separation is impossible. Let us make war against the world rather than against each other. Our compact of union seems to be drifting toward a lee-shore; already expectant, we stand to listen for the insolent shouts of the greedy wreckers. May Divine interposition prevent the shock!

SAN ANTONIO, TEXAS, September 12, 1856.

MY DEAR SON: We are all well, but good health is no novelty here; the beneficence of Providence has accorded this blessing to all the inhabitants of this beautiful region. The simplicity of our habits, from the necessity of practicing a rigid economy, imposes upon us the fulfillment of the conditions which insure that blessing to us. After providing for our wants, though not many, there is nothing left for hospitality. This gives me no uneasiness. I prefer rather that my creditors (now very few) should regard me as an honest man than that the world should esteem me a generous fellow. My outfit and necessary expenses in bringing my family to this country on a long overland route will keep me under half-pay until March. I notice with sorrow the progress of **fanaticism** in the North. What do they want? We want the Union with the Constitution. We want to share in its glorious, benevolent, civilizing mission, and its- high and magnificent destiny. Our whole hearts are devoted to its support and perpetuity. We want the rights and independence of the States and the security to individuals guaranteed by its Constitution; we claim immunity from intervention and interference. Do they want these things? Let them then cease to agitate a question which reaches our hearths and should be sacred, which disturbs our peace and produces a feeling of insecurity which is intolerable. With whatever sorrow, however heart-felt and agonizing, we will not hesitate to encounter separation with all its attendant horrors rather than bear the evils and degradation relentlessly heaped upon us by the heartless folly of **fanaticism**.

Hypochondriac persons, without a single cause of unhappiness, by cherishing insane ideas, contrive to make themselves truly miserable. So with our people of the North. A merciful and beneficent God has placed within our grasp every source of human happiness. He has given us the finest country on earth, embracing every variety of climate, soil, and production, affording the means of a perfect independence of the rest of the world; a government more free than any other, and laws whose extreme benevolence hardly restrains individual action sufficiently for public safety; and the right to worship even according to our fancy. Yet with all these gifts surely divine they cannot be happy unless their Southern brothers will consent to lie upon the Procrustean bed they have

constructed for them. They must adopt some other basis for the settlement of the question in agitation than passion. Why not let reason again resume its sway?

Yours, affectionately, A. S. JOHNSTON.

Writing on the 23d of November, he says, in allusion to the same topic, and the election of Mr. Buchanan as President:

MY DEAR WILL: We are all well, and contented with the result of the election. If our Northern brethren will give up their **fanatical, idolatrous negro worship**, we can go on harmoniously, happily, and prosperously, and also gloriously, as a nation. We hope this, although we fear it is asking too much of poor human nature. It is more in accordance with human experience to believe that they will cherish their unhappy delusion. What a people! what a destiny! Great, almost without limit we would be, if they would employ all the energy, all the talents, all the genius, and all the resolution, to build up, beautify, adorn, and strengthen our Government, which they have used from the beginning to cripple and destroy it.

For Albert Johnston the desire to end slavery is “fanatical,” “fanaticism,” “fanatic,” and “idolatrous negro worship.”

Preston Johnston also describes the views of his father’s pro-slavery views in another section of the book:

General Johnston’s views in regard to slavery were those generally held in the South, where he was born and brought up, and with whose social structure he had been identified. Right or wrong, they were the beliefs of eight millions of people, who have shown as high traits, as pure a morality, as lofty a courage, and as intelligent a statesmanship, as any who ever lived. With no great respect for political abstractions, and perceiving clearly the differences that mark race and condition, he rejected with intellectual scorn the generalizations which overlook all existing facts, and confound all the relations of life. He recognized our common humanity, no man more distinctly; and acted upon it, no man no more fully. But he could not ignore that the manifest inferiority of the negro fitted him for the place he held, and that time alone could fit him for any other. The slaves had been bought with a price, under the strongest legal sanctions, and all arguments for their forcible emancipation applied equally well to the confiscation of every other species of wealth or property. The destructive consequences of the abolition of slavery had been proved in the West Indies, and were as certain as any future event could be. Hence he shared the resentment, though not the expression of it, universal in the South, against the domineering philanthropy that assailed its institutions. His views in regard to the nature and polity of the

United States Government, on the whole, fairly represented the ideas of the army-officers as a class, but enlarged and modified by a wider experience. If they could be summed up in a single word, it would be— *conservative*. [Italics in the original.]²⁵¹

Thomas Jonathan Jackson

Thomas Jonathan Jackson (“Stonewall”) doesn’t leave much in terms of a historical record of his views. Confederate apologists make much of Jackson having a Sunday school for slaves as indicating that he a friend of African Americans. However, many slave owners with their pro-slavery theology, believed the Bible sanctioned slavery and their religious instruction to slaves emphasized that. Leading pro-slavery theologian Rev. James Henley Thornwell, was famous for his 1850 sermon, “The Rights and the Duties of Masters,” a lengthy defense of slavery, condemnation of abolitionism, and that there should be religious instruction of slaves. Thornwell in his sermon asserts:

The slave is to show his reverence for God – the freedom of his inward man – by a cheerful obedience to the lawful commands of his master...

In the conclusion of his sermon Thornwell explains, “... that we should remunerate their service,” that is compensate the slaves by giving them their Christianity. He also explains that teaching Christianity to the slave will avert revolt and make slaves accept slave owner’s authority. Thornwell writes:

It is not easy to conceive in what manner instructing men in their duties should indispose them to comprehend the true grounds of authority, and the obligation to obedience, should indispose them to obey.²⁵²

This lengthy fifty-one page sermon was given at the dedication of a church “for the instruction of the negroes” in Charleston, South Carolina. Antebellum white people instructing slaves on Christianity is no indication by itself of support for the slaves or opposition to their bondage.

Thomas Jonathan Jackson did not write down his views regarding slavery. However, we can examine what neo-Confederates thought Jackson’s views were. Pro-slavery racist theologian Robert Lewis Dabney’s biography, “Life of General Thomas J. Jackson,” widely known, largely defined the image of Jackson as an extremely religious person and

²⁵¹ Johnston, William Preston, “The Life of Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston,” pub. D. Appleton and Co., New York, 1878, pages 189-190 for the letters and page 258 for a review of Johnston’s view on slavery.

²⁵² Thornwell, James Henley, “The Rights and the Duties of Masters,” Steam-Power Press of Walker & James, 1850, pp. 37 for “cheerful obedience,” pp. 47-48 for “remuneration,” and page 50 for “obligation.” This publication can be download from www.archive.org.

a Christian Confederate hero.²⁵³ R.L. Dabney was the army chaplain of the 18th Virginia Infantry in 1861 and was the chief of staff for Jackson in 1862.

For his health he moved to Texas and was appointed a professor of mental and moral philosophy at the Univ. of Texas in Austin and then when his health failed, he lived with one of his sons in Victoria, Texas. One of his sons, Lewis Meriwether Dabney, 1865-1923, was a prominent attorney in Dallas.

Dabney in his biography of Jackson makes a statement what Jackson's views were and also what Jackson represented or demonstrated.

In a discussing Jackson's religious faith in a section headed, "A Christian master," Dabney asserts that Jackson proves that slavery is compatible with being a good Christian, stating, "It may be accepted as a significant dispensation of Providence, that Jackson, the best type of Christian master in the South, should be made the hero of this war for Southern independence." More directly expressed, Dabney is asserting that God has made Jackson a hero for the Confederacy to show the righteousness of slavery exemplified by a Christian master and that Jackson was in his life an example of the rightness of pro-slavery Christianity. He contrasts Jackson against "Northern anti-slavery men," whose support of civil rights is a "pretence to the negro," but who really "despise the African," and will bring ruin to the former slaves. (Pages 95-96)

Dabney asserts that Jackson was a "States'-Right Democrat of 'the most straitest sect.'"

These political ideas, as Dabney explains rejects "all meddling with the institution of domestic slavery in the States." (Pages 125-126)

At the end of discussing the theory of states' rights Dabney explains:

Such were the doctrine which the party of the States' rights had always maintained, and to which Major Jackson was committed by the firmest convictions. (Page 136)

Dabney also writes:

Major Jackson spent the summer vacation of 1860 in New England, in pursuit of health. On his return, he said he had seen and heard quite enough in the North, to justify the division which had just occurred in the Democratic party, and which

²⁵³ Robert Lewis Dabney wrote, "Life and Campaigns of Lieut.-Gen. Thomas J. Jackson," 1866; a book in defense of slavery, "A Defense of Virginia, and Through her, of the South, in Recent and Pending Contests Against the Sectional Party," 1867; and the 4th volume, "Secular," of his "Discussions," of his shorter essays edited by C.R. Vaughan, 1897, have multiple examples of his raging racism, he regarded African Americans as a "sordid alien taint." There is a biography of him by another pro-slavery theologian, Benjamin Morgan Palmer, which also has sections revealing Dabney's racism.

resulted in the defeat of Douglas and the election of Lincoln; a division, he predicted, which would render the dissolution of the Union inevitable. (Page 145)

Then Dabney discusses how the Democratic Party split in 1860 over how to interpret the Kansas-Nebraska Act. In this text Dabney is saying that Jackson had heard enough anti-slavery opinion in the North that Jackson felt that the Southern slavery faction in the Democratic Party was justified in what they did.

Dabney does reveal Jackson to be a murderous fanatic in a war for slavery in discussing Jackson's desire to take no prisoners of war and explains Jackson's reasoning as follows:

The character of his thinking was illustrated by the declaration which he made upon assuming this command, that it was the true policy of the South to take no prisoners in this war. He affirmed that this would be in the end truest humanity, because it would shorten the contest, and prove economical of the blood of both parties; and that it was a measure urgently dictated by the interests of our cause, and clearly sustained by justice. This startling opinion he calmly sustained in conversation, many months after, by the following considerations, which he prefaced with the remark, that, inasmuch as the authorities of the Confederate States had seen fit to pursue the other policy, he had cheerfully acquiesced, and was as careful as other commanders to enjoin on his soldiers the giving of quarter and humane treatment to disarmed enemies. But he affirmed this war was, in its intent and inception, different from all civilized wars, and therefore should not be brought under their rules. It was not, like them, a strife for a point of honor, a diplomatic quarrel, a commercial advantage, a boundary, or a province; but an attempt on the part of the North against the very existence of the Southern States. It was founded in a denial to their people of the right of self-government, in virtue of which, solely the Northern States themselves existed. Its intention was a wholesale murder and piracy, the extermination of a whole people's national life. It was, in fact, but the "John Brown Raid" resumed and extended, with new accessories of horror, and, as the Commonwealth of Virginia had righteously put to death every one of those cut-throats upon the gallows, why were their comrades in the same crime to claim now a more honorable treatment? Such a war was an offence against humanity so monstrous, that it outlawed those who shared its guilt beyond the pale of forbearance. But as justice authorized their destruction, so wisdom and prudence demanded it, for it is always wisest to act upon principle, in preference to expediency. (Pages 192-194)

As Dabney explains, Jackson had "calmly" explained this opinion over "many months." Jackson saw the war as being a war over slavery, "the extermination of a whole people's national life," an attack like abolitionist John Brown's attack on Harper's Ferry, and the war a crime against humanity, and American soldiers deserving execution as criminals, and the war should be carried with no prisoners taken. This proposed policy of Jackson

presupposes a support for slavery to the extreme that he supports war crimes in the defense of slavery and that Jackson understood the war to be about defending slavery.

Dabney continues to explain Jackson's argument with statements like, "Indeed, it was in every way for the advantage of the Confederate States, that the war should be made to unmask its murderous nature."

Dabney then explains:

Such, in substance, were the reasons which he rendered for his conclusion. They were given with an unpretending simplicity, which no other can reproduce; for it was characteristic of his mind, that the most profound considerations were seen by him so clearly and simply, that they were expressed without logical parade or pomp, as though they had been easy, and obvious to every understanding.²⁵⁴

For a city elite that wanted to promote states' rights as an obstacle to civil rights Jackson's ideas would support that, and his murderous ideas would support violence against civil rights.

Jackson's is primarily known in Lost Cause mythology as a great Christian who died fighting for the Confederacy and so he would also be consistent with the theme of Christian martyrs dying for states' rights as expressed in the dedication speeches.

Robert E. Lee

The mythologies about Robert E. Lee which used to be passed off as history by historians have been demolished. There are three books that have treated Lee historically and not in terms of Lost Cause mythology.

The first book to treat Lee historically was, "Lee Considered: General Lee and Civil War History," by Alan T. Nolan, Univ. of North Carolina Press, 1991. Nolan very pointedly explains that the title uses "Considered" and not "Re-Considered" because he doesn't regard previous books on Lee to be historical and just fables. Nolan focuses on the Lost Cause mythologies about Lee and the Civil War, race and slavery.

In 2000 John Hopkins Univ. published, "The Making of Robert E. Lee," by Michael Fellman, a biography of Lee which is historical and not a Lost Cause fable. Fellman

²⁵⁴ Dabney, Robert Lewis, "Life and Campaign of Lieut.-Gen. Thomas J. Jackson," Blelock & Co., 1866. Jackson as a Christian master, pages 95-96; Jackson and states' rights and slavery, pages 125-126; statement that Jackson believed in the doctrines of states' rights as explained by Dabney on pages 125-135, on page 136; division of the Democrats, page 145; Jackson's advocacy and justification of not taking prisoners pages 192-195. This book can be downloaded from www.archive.org. The neo-Confederates consider R.L. Dabney a hero.

points out that the construction of the mythology making Lee a selfless saint is made to cloak the ugly racism which the Lost Cause mythology supported.

In 2002 two trunk of Lee's correspondence were discovered in a bank vault and Elizabeth Brown Pryor was the first scholar granted access.²⁵⁵ Additionally Pryor discovered other Lee correspondence that had not been published nor examined by historians. Pryor research resulted in the publication of the book, "Reading the Man: A Portrait of Robert E. Lee Through His Private Letters," published by Penguin Books, in 2007.

In these books it is very clear that Lee supported slavery, was a white supremacist, was violent towards his slaves, and after the Civil War worked to restore white supremacy and end civil rights.²⁵⁶

What will be offered here is some of Lee's own words to show that he was a white supremacist, a supporter of slavery, and an opponent of civil rights for Africans. Not every possible historical record will be shown, but just a sample.

Robert E. Lee in a letter to Confederate congressional representative Andrew Hunter, January 11, 1865 about the possible arming of blacks for the Confederate army shows Lee's views of slavery and his white supremacist views. Also, the letter shows that Lee was only contemplating this change out of desperation with the Confederacy collapsing. Lee's argument is that if they don't do something soon the American armies are going to liberate the slaves anyways.

Some neo-Confederates have attempted to argue that the late decision to admit persons of African ancestry into the Confederate army represents some type of progressive evolution regarding race. The full text of this letter shows that it isn't. Though I can be criticized for trying to arguing against neo-Confederate interpretations of history in that facts usually don't matter with neo-Confederates and behind every demolished neo-Confederate historical assertion there is another rationalization waiting. Given the length of this letter I will bold face some critical parts. Also, it isn't known whether any persons of African descent actually ever served in the Confederate army.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY NORTH VIRGINIA,
11th January, 1865

²⁵⁵ Fox, Margalit, "Elizabeth Brown Pryor, Biographer of Clara Barton and Robert E. Lee, Dies at 64," *New York Times*, <https://www.nytimes.com/2015/04/29/arts/elizabeth-brown-pryor-biographer-of-clara-barton-and-robert-e-lee-dies-at-64.html>.

²⁵⁶ It has to be asked why it took until late in the 20th and early in the 21st for a real histories of Robert E. Lee to be written. It demonstrates the low state of a certain class of authors who have the temerity of calling themselves historians.

HON. ANDREW HUNTER, RICHMOND, VA.

DEAR SIR: I have received your letter of the 7th inst., and, without confining myself to the order of your interrogatories, will endeavor to answer them by a statement of my views on the subject. I shall be most happy if I can contribute to the solution of a question in which I feel an interest commensurate with my desire for the happiness of our people. **Considering the relation of master and slavery, controlled by humane laws and influenced by Christianity and an enlightened public sentiment, as the best that can exist between the white and black races while intermingled as at present in this country, I would deprecate any sudden disturbance of that relation unless it be necessary to avert a greater calamity to both.** I should therefore prefer to rely upon our white population to preserve the ratio between our forces and those of the enemy which experience has shown to be safe. But in view of the preparations of our enemies it is our duty to provide for continued war, and not for a battle or campaign, and I fear that we cannot accomplish this without overtaxing the capacity of our white population. Should the war continue under existing circumstances, the enemy may in course of time penetrate our country and get access to a large part of our negro population. It is his avowed policy to convert the able-bodied men among them into soldiers, and to emancipate all. The success of the Federal arms in the South was followed by a proclamation of President Lincoln for 280,000 men, the effect of which will be to stimulate the Northern States to procure as substitutes for their own people the negroes thus brought within their reach. Many have already been obtained in Virginia, and should the fortune of war expose more of her territory, the enemy would gain a large accession to his strength.

His progress will thus add to his numbers, and at the same time destroy slavery in a manner most pernicious to the welfare of our people. Their negroes will be used to hold them in subjection, leaving the remaining force of the enemy free to extend his conquest. Whatever may be the effect of our employing negro troops, in cannot be as mischievous as this. If it end in subverting slavery it will be accomplished by ourselves, and we can devise the means of alleviating the evil consequences to both races. I think, therefore we must decide whether slavery shall be extinguished by our enemies and the slaves be used against us, or use them ourselves at the risk of the effects which may be produced upon our social institutions. I believe that with proper regulations they can be made efficient soldiers. They possess the physical qualifications in an eminent degree. Long habits of obedience and subordination, coupled with the moral influence which in our country the white man possess over the black, furnish an excellent foundation for that discipline which is the best guarantee of military efficiency. Our chief aim should be to secure their fidelity.

There have been formidable armies composed of men having no interest in the cause for which they fought beyond their pay or hope of plunder. But it is certain that the surest foundation upon which the fidelity of an army can rest, especially in a service which imposes peculiar hardships and privations, is the personal interest of the soldier in the issue of the contest. Such an interest we can give our negroes by giving immediate freedom to all who enlist, and freedom at the end of the war to the families of those who discharge their duties faithfully (whether they survive or not,) together with the privilege of residing at the South. To this might be added a bounty for faithful service.

We should not expect slaves to fight for prospective freedom when they can secure it by going to the enemy, in whose service they will incur no greater risk than in ours. The reasons that induce me to recommend the employment of negro troops at all render the effects of the measures I have suggested upon slavery immaterial, and in my opinion the best means of securing the efficiency and fidelity of this auxiliary force would be to accompany the measure with a well-digested plan of gradual and general emancipation. As that will be the result of the continuance of the war, and will certainly occur if the enemy succeed, it seems to be advisable to adopt it at once, and thereby secure all the benefits that will accrue to our cause.

The employment of negro troops under regulations similar in principle to those above indicated would, in my opinion, greatly increase our military strength, and enable us to relieve our white population to some extent. I think we could dispense with our reserve forces except in cases of necessity.

It would disappoint our which our enemies base upon our exhaustion, deprive them in a great measure of the aid they now derive from black troops, and thus throw the burden of the war upon their own people. In addition to the great political advantages that would result to our cause from the adoption of a system of emancipation, it would exercise a salutary influence upon our whole negro population, by rendering more secure the fidelity of those who become soldiers and diminishing the inducements to the rest to abscond.

I can only say in conclusion, that whatever measures are to be adopted should be adopted at once. Every day's delay increases the difficulty. Much time will be required to organize and discipline the men, and action may be deferred until it is too late.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

R. E. Lee, General.²⁵⁷

Neo-Confederates have in the past asserted that Lee was an opponent of slavery by selectively quoting from this letter to his wife, Dec. 27, 1856, commenting on the benefits of slavery for Africans. I bold face some critical portions.

The steamer also brought the President's message to Cong; & the reports of the various heads of Depts; the proceedings of Cong: &c &c. So that we are now assured, that the Govt: is in operation, & the Union in existence, not that we had any fears to the Contrary, but it is Satisfactory always to have facts to go on. They restrain Supposition & Conjecture, Confirm faith, & bring Contentment: I was much pleased with the President's message & the report of the Secy of War, the only two documents that have reached us entire. Of the others synopsis [sic] have only arrived. The views of the Pres: of the Systematic & progressive efforts of certain people of the North, to interfere with & change the domestic institutions of the South, are truthfully & faithfully expressed. The Consequences of their plans & purposes are also clearly set forth, & they must also be aware, that their object is both unlawful & entirely foreign to them & their duty; for which they are irresponsible & unaccountable; & Can only be accomplished by them through the agency of a Civil & Servile war. **In this enlightened age, there are few I believe, but what will acknowledge, that slavery as an institution, is a moral & political evil in any Country. It is useless to expatiate on its disadvantages. I think it however a greater evil to the white man than to the black race, & while my feelings are strongly enlisted in behalf of the latter, my sympathies are more strong for the former. The blacks are immeasurably better off here than in Africa, morally, socially & physically. The painful discipline they are undergoing, is necessary for their instruction as a race, & I hope will prepare & lead them to better things. How long their subjugation may be necessary is known & ordered by a wise Merciful Providence.** Their emancipation will sooner result from the mild & melting influence of Christianity, than the storms & tempests of fiery Controversy. This influence though slow, is sure. The doctrines & miracles of our Saviour have required nearly two thousand years, to Convert but a small part of the human race, & even among Christian nations, what gross errors still exist! **While we see the Course of the final abolition of human Slavery is onward, & we give it the aid of our prayers & all justifiable means in our power, we must leave the progress as well as the result in his hands who sees the end; who Chooses to work by slow**

²⁵⁷ Lee, Robert E. letter to Hon. Andrew Hunter, the letter is from "Memoranda on the Civil War," pages 600-601, *The Century Illustrated Monthly Magazine*, Vol. 36 No. 4, August 1888. Nolan has the entire text in his book, as Appendix A and gives as a source the Official Records, Series 4, 3:1012-13.

influences; & with whom two thousand years are but as a Single day.

Although the Abolitionist must know this, & must See that he has neither the right or power of operating except by moral means & suasion, & if he means well to the slave, he must not Create angry feelings in the Master; that although he may not approve the mode which it pleases Providence to accomplish its purposes, the result will nevertheless be the same; that the reasons he gives for interference in what he has no Concern, holds good for every kind of interference with our neighbors when we disapprove their Conduct; Still I fear he will persevere in his evil Course. Is it not strange that the descendants of those pilgrim fathers who Crossed the Atlantic to preserve their own freedom of opinion, have always proved themselves intolerant of the Spiritual liberty of others? ²⁵⁸

In reading this letter in its entirety you can see that Lee was thinking of abolition in perhaps a million years. Lee denounces the abolitionist. The reader can deduce what part of this letter the neo-Confederate selectively quotes to put forth the idea that Lee was against slavery.

Lee was cruel to his slaves. This is an account by Wesley Norris, a former slave of Lee.

It has frequently been represented by the friends and admirers of Robert E. Lee, late an officer in the rebel army, that, although a slaveholder, his treatment of his chattels was invariably kind and humane. The subjoined statement, taken from the lips of one of his former slaves, indicates the real character of the man:

"My name is Wesley Norris; I was born a slave on the plantation of George Parke Custis; after the death of Mr. Custis, Gen. Lee, who had been made executor of the estate, assumed control of the slaves, in number about seventy; it was the general impression among the slaves of Mr. Custis that on his death they should be forever free; in fact this statement had been made to them by Mr. C. years before; at his death we were informed by Gen. Lee that by the conditions of the will we must remain slaves for five years; I remained with Gen. Lee for about seventeen months, when my sister Mary, a cousin of ours, and I determined to run away, which we did in the year 1859; we had already reached Westminster, in Maryland, on our way to the North, when we were apprehended and thrown into prison, and Gen. Lee notified of our arrest; we remained in prison fifteen days, when we were sent back to Arlington; we were immediately taken before Gen. Lee, who demanded the reason why we ran away; we frankly told him that we considered ourselves free; he then told us he would teach us a lesson we never would forget; he then ordered us to the barn, where, in his presence, we were tied firmly to posts by a Mr. Gwin, our overseer, who was ordered by Gen. Lee to strip

²⁵⁸ Freeman, Douglas Southall, "R.E. Lee," 4 vols., published Charles Scribner's Sons, 1934-1935, from volume 1, pages 371-373, and his reference is, Lee to Mrs. Lee, Dec. 27, 1856; *Lee MSS.*, Library of Congress.

us to the waist and give us fifty lashes each, excepting my sister, who received but twenty; we were accordingly stripped to the skin by the overseer, who, however, had sufficient humanity to decline whipping us; accordingly Dick Williams, a county constable, was called in, who gave us the number of lashes ordered; Gen. Lee, in the meantime, stood by, and frequently enjoined Williams to 'lay it on well,' an injunction which he did not fail to heed; not satisfied with simply lacerating our naked flesh, Gen. Lee then ordered the overseer to thoroughly wash our backs with brine, which was done. After this my cousin and myself were sent to Hanover.²⁵⁹

Pryor points out that fans of Lee have tended to dismiss it, but that the account by Norris is credible and that Lee had interpreted the will in such a fashion as to delay the manumission of Custis' slaves until ordered by the court to free them. Further Lee rented out slaves to such an extent that as Pryor explains, "By 1859 old men and little boys were the only workers left at Arlington. Worst of all, Lee ruptured the Washington and Custis tradition of respecting slave families. By 1860 he had broken up every family but one on the estate, some of whom had been together since Mount Vernon days."²⁶⁰

After the Civil War Lee expressed his disdain for African Americans, fought against their civil rights, and hoped to rid Virginia of African Americans.

From the "Report of the Joint Committee on Reconstruction," of congress, pages 135-136, testimony of Robert E. Lee before the Congressional Joint Committee on Reconstruction in response to questions by Mr. Blow, on February 17, 1866. Blow is asking all the questions and Robert E. Lee is giving all the answers.

By Mr. Blow:

Question. Has there been any considerable change in the number of the negro population?

Answer. I suppose it has diminished, but I do not know.

Question. Diminished in consequences of more negroes going south than was made up by the natural increase?

Answer. My general opinion is that the number has diminished and for the reason you give.

²⁵⁹ Blassingame, John W., editor, "Slave Testimony: Two Centuries of Letters, Speeches and Interviews, and Autobiographies," Louisiana State Univ. Press, from originally the *National Anti-Slavery Standard*, April 14, 1866.

²⁶⁰ Pryor, Elizabeth Brown, "Reading the Man A Portrait of Robert E. Lee Through His Private Letters," Penguin Books, 2007 Viking Penguin edition, this from the 2008 Penguin Edition, paperback, page 260-275, quote on page 264.

Question. I suppose that the mass of the negroes in Virginia, at the present time, are able to work; that there are not many helpless ones among them?

Answer. There are helpless ones, certainly, but I do not know to what extent.

Question. What is your opinion about its being an advantage to Virginia to keep them there at all. Do you not think that Virginia would be better off if the colored population were to go to Alabama, Louisiana, and the other southern States?

Answer. I think it would be better for Virginia if she could get rid of them. That is no new opinion with me. I have always thought so, and have always been in favor of emancipation—gradual emancipation.

Question. As a matter of labor alone, do you not think that the labor which would flow into Virginia, if the negroes left it for the cotton States, would be far more advantageous to the State and to its future prosperity?

Answer. I think it would be for the benefit of Virginia, and I believe that everybody there would be willing to aid it.

Question. And do you not think it is peculiarly adapted to the quality of labor which would flow into it, from its great natural resources, in case it was made more attractive by the absence of the colored race.

Answer. I do.²⁶¹

Lee was interviewed by the Marquess of Lorne May 14, 1866 and expressed his opposition to giving African Americans civil rights. Lee is quoted in Lorne's interview as stating:

The Radical party are likely to do a great deal of harm, for we wish now for good feeling to grow up between North and South, and the President, Mr. Johnson, has been doing much to strengthen the feeling in favour of the Union among us. The relations between the negroes and the whites were friendly formerly, and would remain so if legislation be not passed in favour of the blacks, in a way that will only do them harm. We do not seem to see that they are raising up feelings of race and if a bad feeling is raised in consequence of unfair laws being passed against the weaker party it must yield. The blacks must always here be the weaker; the whites are so much stronger that there is no chance for the black, if

²⁶¹ From the "Report of the Joint Committee on Reconstruction," of congress, pages 135-136, testimony of Robert E. Lee before the Congressional Joint Committee on Reconstruction in response to questions by Mr. Blow, on February 17, 1866.

the Radical party passes the laws it wants against us. They are working as though they wished to keep alive by their proposals in Congress the bad blood in the South against the North. If left alone the hostility which must be felt after such a war would rapidly decrease, but it may be continued by incessant provocation.²⁶²

The “provocation” to Lee is civil rights for African Americans and civil rights will harm African Americans since whites will be provoked with bad feelings and African Americans are weaker. This is a threat of violence. Lee also makes it clear later in the interview that civil rights will prevent reconciliation, that “they are doing their best to destroy all real union.”

Robert E. Lee was against employing African American labor on farms.

This is an extract from a book, “Recollections and Letters of General Lee,” by his son Robert E. Lee Jr. about Lee’s advice given to a friend Col. Carter at a social outing.

In talking with Colonel Carter about the situation of farmers at that time in the South, and of their prospects for the future, he urged him to get rid of the negroes left on the farm—some ninety--odd in number, principally women and children, with a few old men—saying the government would provide for them, and advised him to secure white labour. The Colonel told him he had to use, for immediate needs, such force as he had, being unable at that time to get the whites. Were upon General Lee remarked:

“I have always observed that wherever you find the negro, everything is going down around him, and wherever you find the white man, you see everything around him improving.”²⁶³

In 1868, paranoid Lee advises Lee Jr. that African Americans are their enemies and are conspiring against them. Lee also hopes to get white Europeans to settle in Virginia as farm labor. Also, it shows his duplicity, he denounces African Americans but claims that he “wishes them no evil.” I bold face the relevant section of Lee’s paranoid fears.

Lexington, Virginia, March 12, 1868.

“My Dear Rob: I am sorry to learn from your letter of the 1st that the winter has been so hard on your wheat. I hope, however, the present good weather is shedding its influence upon it, and that it will turn out better than it promises. You must, however, take a lesson from the last season. What you do cultivate, do

²⁶² Campbell, John Douglas Sutherland, Duke of Argyll, “Passages from the Past,” Hutchison & Co., London, 107, Vol. 1, pp. 165-166.

²⁶³ Lee, Robert E., Jr., “Recollections and Letters of General Lee,” Doubleday & Co., 1904, page 168 of the Broadfoot reprint of 1988

well. Improve and prepare the land in the best manner; your labour will be less, and your profits more. Your flat lands were always uncertain in wet winters. The uplands were more sure. Is it not possible that some unbidden guest may have been feasting on your corn? Six hundred bushels are a large deficit in casting up your account for the year. But you must make it up by economy and good management. A farmer's motto should be toil and trust. I am glad that you have got your lime and sown your oats and clover. Do you use the drill or sow broadcast? I shall try to get down to see you if I go to Richmond, for I am anxious to know how you are progressing and to see if in any way I can aid you. Whenever I can, you must let me know. You must still think about your house and make up your mind as to the site and kind, and collect the material. I can help you to any kind of plan, and with some ready money to pay the mechanics. I have recently had a visit from Dr. Oliver, of Scotland, who is examining lands for immigrants from his country. He seems to be a sensible and judicious man. From his account, I do not think the Scotch and English would suit your part of the country. It would require time for them to become acclimated, and they would probably get dissatisfied, especially as there is so much mountainous region where they could be accommodated. I think you will have to look to the Germans; perhaps the Hollanders, as a class, would be the most useful. When the railroad shall have been completed to West Point, I think there will be no difficulty in getting the whites among you. I would try to get some of our own young men in your employ. I rode out the other day to Mr. Andrew Cameron's and went into the field where he was plowing. I took great pleasure in following the plows around the circuit. He had four in operation. Three of them were held by his former comrades in the army, who are regularly employed by him, and, he says, much to his satisfaction and profit. People have got to work now. It is creditable to them to do so; their bodies and their minds are benefited by it, and those who can and will work will be advanced by it. **You will never prosper with the blacks, and it is abhorrent to a reflecting mind to be supporting and cherishing those who are plotting and working for your injury, and all of whose sympathies and associations are antagonistic to yours. I wish them no evil in the world—on the contrary, will do them every good in my power, and know that they are misled by those to whom they have given their confidence; but our material, social, and political interests are naturally with the whites.** Mr. Davis's trial was fixed for the last of this month. If Judge Chase's presence is essential, I do not see how it can take place, unless that of Mr. Johnson is to be postponed. I suppose that will be decided to-day or to-morrow, and then I shall ...²⁶⁴

In the upcoming elections of 1868, Rosecrans, Civil War general and now Democratic Party campaigner sought to counter the Republican Party in the election by getting a

²⁶⁴ Lee, Robert E., Jr., "Recollections and Letters of General Lee," Doubleday & Co., 1904, pages 305-307 of the Broadfoot reprint of 1988.

statement from former Confederate leaders and prevailed upon Robert E. Lee to write a letter. This letter is also known as the "White Sulphur Manifesto." With Lee signing the letter, other ex-Confederate leaders also signed the letter, with Lee both suggesting signatures to collect and encouraging others to collect signatures for the letter.²⁶⁵

The purpose of the letter is to undermine and oppose the civil rights policies of the Republican Party during Reconstruction. Robert E. Lee, through this letter, plays a significant role in defeating civil rights and condemning African Americans to nearly a century of discrimination, lynching, segregation, and violence. This letter is addressed to Rosecrans. This text of the letter is from "R. E. Lee: A Biography by Douglas Southall Freeman published by Charles Scribner's Sons, New York and London, 1934, pages 375-377.

It also shows what a pompous self-congratulatory racist and hypocrite he was. Boldface applied to one section.

"General:

"I have the honor to receive your letter of this date, and, in accordance with your suggestion, I have conferred with a number of gentlemen from the South, in whose judgment I have confidence, and who are well acquainted with the public sentiment of their respective States.

"They have kindly consented to unite with me in replying to your communication, and their names will be found, with my own, appended to this answer.

"With this explanation, we proceed to give you a candid statement of what we believe to be the sentiment of the Southern people in regard to the subjects to which you refer.

"Whatever opinions may have prevailed in the past with regard to African slavery or the right of a State to secede from the Union, we believe we express the almost unanimous judgment of the Southern people when we declare that they consider these questions were decided by the war, and that it is their intention in good faith to abide by that decision. At the close of the war, the Southern people laid down their arms and sought to resume their former relations to the government of the United States. Through their State conventions, they abolished slavery and annulled their ordinances of secession; and they returned to their peaceful pursuits with a sincere purpose to fulfil all their duties under the Constitution of the United States which they had sworn to support. If their action in these particulars had been met in a spirit of frankness and cordiality, we believe that,

²⁶⁵ The use of this letter is discussed by Nolan in his book, "Lee Considered," on pages 143-145, and by Fellman in his "The Making of Robert E. Lee," pages 286-288.

ere this, old irritations would have passed away, and the wounds inflicted by the war would have been, in a large measure, healed. As far as we are advised, the people of the South entertain no unfriendly feeling towards the government of the United States, but they complain that their rights under the Constitution are withheld from them in the administration thereof. The idea that the Southern people are hostile to the negroes and would oppress them, if it were in their power to do so, is entirely unfounded. They have grown up in our midst, and we have been accustomed from childhood to look upon them with kindness. The change in the relations of the two races has brought no change in our feelings towards them. They still continue an important part of our laboring population. Without their labor, the lands of the South would be comparatively unproductive; without the employment which Southern agriculture affords, they would be destitute of the means of subsistence and become paupers, dependent upon public bounty. Self-interest, if there were no higher motive, would therefore prompt the whites of the South to extend to the negro care and protection.

“The important fact that the two races are, under existing circumstances, necessary to each other is gradually becoming apparent to both, and we believe that but for malign influences exerted to stir up the passions of the negroes, the relations of the two races would soon adjust themselves on a basis of mutual kindness and advantage.

“It is true that the people of the South, in common with a large majority of the people of the North and West, are, for obvious reasons, inflexibly opposed to any system of laws that would place the political power of the country in the hands of the negro race. But this opposition springs from no feeling of enmity, but from a deep-seated conviction that, at present, the negroes have neither the intelligence nor the other qualifications which are necessary to make them safe depositories of political power. They would inevitably become the victims of demagogues, who, for selfish purposes, would mislead them to the serious injury of the public.

“The great want of the South is peace. The people earnestly desire tranquillity and restoration of the Union. They deplore disorder and excitement as the most serious obstacle to their prosperity. They ask a restoration of their rights under the Constitution. They desire relief from oppressive misrule. Above all, they would appeal to their countrymen for the re-establishment, in the Southern States, of that which has been justly regarded as the birth-right of every American, the right of self-government. Establish these on a firm basis, and we can safely promise, on behalf of the Southern people, that they will faithfully obey the Constitution and laws of the United States, treat the negro populations with

kindness and humanity and fulfil every duty incumbent and peaceful citizens, loyal to the Constitution of their country.”²⁶⁶

Jefferson Davis

Jefferson Davis was a U.S. Senator from Mississippi prior to the secession of Mississippi. He was also a slave owner. Davis’ history is so full of vileness that only a sample of the wretched things he has done will be given.

In 1851 Henry Clay had proposed a resolution to draft a more effective law to prevent the participation of American seamen and ships in the African slave trade. It was adopted by a vote of 45 to 9 in the U.S. Senate with Jefferson Davis voting no. The United States at this time also provided ships for the navel squadrons off the coast of Africa to suppress that Atlantic slave trade. Jefferson Davis participated in this debate and in his remarks expresses his opposition to the African Squadron and efforts to suppress the Atlantic slave trade. Davis also doubts that the United States ban on importing slaves is humanitarian.

Mr. DAVIS, of Mississippi. Not having seen, either in manuscript or in print, the paper which has been the subject of remarks this morning, I do not purpose to discuss it. Sir, it is not my purpose to keep entirely within the rules of debate, and will proceed to my object, which was to say a few words on the resolution before the Senate. I will oppose its reference, because the policy indicated is one which does not permit me to anticipate such action as it would be possible to approve. As a matter of policy we have abolished the slave trade to the United States, and no one proposes to open it; no one believes it has not been wholly suppressed. If the argument of humanity were relied on, it might be difficult to show that our policy was most conducive to the well-being of the African captive. But leaving our laws to stand on the well-established basis of national policy, I maintain that we have no right to interfere with the slave trade in other countries. Having suppressed it, so far as the States and Territories of our Union are concerned, we have nothing of duty or of right which would justify interference with the policy of other countries. Subject to the necessary protection of our own privileges and interests, we should leave them to engage in whatever trade they may choose. If Brazil prefers to continue the slave trade, it is a matter in which the rule of international relation laid down by Washington, and happily followed, with but few exceptions, down to the present day.

I was always opposed to the African squadron, and am now in favor of its withdrawal, as worse than useless in the suppression of the slave trade; as a service destructive of the health, and to no small extent fatal to the lives of our

²⁶⁶ Freeman, Douglas Southall, “R.E. Lee: A Biography,” Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1935, pages 373-377. I just give this as a reference for the text. The book is a fable and not a history. Also, it was in the New York Times, Sept. 5, 1868.

sailors, and as part of that policy of interference in the affairs of others which is an evil in all Governments and an exception in the practice of ours, Brazil may have other trade with the coast of Africa than that for slaves, yet it is assumed that she has not, as the foundation of this denial of sea letters. Our laws denominate the slave trade piracy; in us it is certainly offensive to assume that such is the only trade for which vessels are fitted out in the ports of a friendly nation. What would we say if any other country should take such position towards the United States?²⁶⁷

Jefferson Davis' plantations were slow death camps where slaves were worked to an early grave. An apologist for Jefferson Davis, William J. Cooper explains in *Jefferson Davis, American* as follows:

Certain common traits characterized Davis's holdings from 1840 to 1860. First, his force consisted overwhelmingly of young slaves. In 1840 over half of his slaves were under twenty-four, while but seven were thirty-six or older, with only two over fifty-five. That spread of ages did not change fundamentally down to 1860, even though the total number of slaves almost tripled...The continuing imbalance towards younger slaves on Brierfield strongly indicates that only a small percentage of Davis's bondspeople lived past forty... This rarity of the elderly also helps explain why the master of Brierfield evinced such affection for the ancient slave known as Uncle Bob. He had practically no peers. The modern calculation of life expectancy puts it at only thirty-six years in 1850.²⁶⁸

Cooper also explains, "No evidence suggests that Davis made a habit of selling older slaves. Besides, no lucrative market existed for slaves past forty, especially in the lower Mississippi Valley." Cooper makes some excuses for this short life span which should warn the reader not to purchase this book or any other by the author though Cooper does acknowledge that the lack of older slaves is "striking."

²⁶⁷ Jefferson Davis' participation in this debate can be found in the *Congressional Globe*, 31st Congress, 2nd Session, pages 307-309. See also "The Papers of Jefferson Davis, Vol. 4, 1849-1852," edited by Lynda Lasswell Crist, sponsored by William Marsh Rice University and the Jefferson Davis Association, Louisiana State Univ. Press, 1893, pp. 154-156 for more details. In reading the Congressional letter there is only reference to the last name and in this debate there is a Davis from Massachusetts as well as a Davis from Mississippi.

²⁶⁸ Cooper, William J., "Jefferson Davis, American," Alfred A. Knopf, 2000, page 248. Reported average life spans in history are greatly influenced by infant mortality and the mortality of children. It is a common place in high school history classes for teachers to explain that just because the average life span was very low, that didn't mean there weren't old people around in the past. Even in the past, if you made it to be 15 years old you had a fairly good chance to make it to be 60 years old. To have a mortality curve truncate around the age of 40 years, is indicative of something morbid and is sinister. Cooper's rationalizations and excuses for this truncation on Brierfield are appalling. As Cooper explains in his book, Jefferson Davis was a steady purchaser of slaves, most whom would have been at least in their teenage years if not young adults. With this in mind it can be assumed that the Brierfield worked its slaves to an early death. Cooper discusses Davis' purchase of slaves on pages 248-250.

This is an extract of Jefferson Davis's denunciation of the Emancipation Proclamation which calls for the execution of the officers of African American troops in the American army. [Boldface added.]

The public journals of the North have been received, containing a proclamation, dated on the 1st day of the present month, signed by the President of the United States, in which he orders and declares all slaves within ten of the States of the Confederacy to be free, except such as are found within certain districts now occupied in part by the armed forces of the enemy. We may well leave it to the instincts of that common humanity which a beneficent Creator has implanted in the breasts of our fellowmen of all countries to pass judgment **on a measure by which several millions of human beings of an inferior race, peaceful and contented laborers in their sphere, are doomed to extermination**, while at the same time they are encouraged to a general assassination of their masters by the insidious recommendation "to abstain from violence unless in necessary self-defense." **Our own detestation of those who have attempted the most execrable measures recorded in the history of guilty man** is tempered by profound contempt for the impotent rage which it discloses. So far as regards the action of this Government on such criminals as may attempt its execution, I confine myself to informing you that I shall, unless in your wisdom you deem some other course more expedient, deliver to the several State authorities **all commissioned officers of the United States that may hereafter be captured by our forces in any of the States embraced in the proclamation, that they may be dealt with in accordance with the laws of those States providing for the punishment of criminals engaged in exciting servile insurrection.** The enlisted soldiers I shall continue to treat as unwilling instruments in the commission of these crimes, and shall direct their discharge and return to their homes on the proper and usual parole.²⁶⁹

Davis can't imagine that African Americans could live outside slavery so he thinks the slaves will die and the Emancipation Proclamation is a great crime. The punishment for inciting a slave insurrection was death.

Jefferson Davis wrote a letter of endorsement of J.H. Van Evrie's booklet, "Negroes and Negro "Slavery;" The First an Inferior Race – The Latter, Its Normal Condition," a screed published by the Day Book Office, New York, 1853, which asserted Africans were

²⁶⁹ "Jefferson Davis to the Confederate Congress," (From Messages of the President.) Richmond, January 12, 1863, from *Jefferson Davis Constitutionalist: His Letters, Papers, and Speeches*, collected and edited by Dunbar Rowland, Volume V, pages 396-415, printed for the Mississippi Department of Archives and History, Jackson, Mississippi, 1923, an extract from page 409-411. It is also in the *Journal of the Confederate Congress*, U.S. Serial Set, Numbers 4610-4616, Vol. 3, Journal of the Senate, Jan. 14, 1863, extract from pages 13-14.

a separate species than Europeans. Thus Davis helped launch the career of this pseudoscientific white supremacist.

From Front Inside cover, it is the lead endorsement for the booklet.

From Hon. Jefferson Davis, Secretary of War.

WASHINGTON, 3d June, 1853.

Dr. Van Evrie:

Dear Sir, – I have read the enclosed pages with great interest, and not as a Southern man merely, but as an American, I thank you for your able and manly exposure of a fallacy which more than any or all other causes has disturbed the tranquility of our people and endangered the perpetuity of our constitutional union. With high regard I am your obedient servant,

JEFFE'N DAVIS.

This booklet also devoted pages to discussing Latin Americans as being racially mixed and hence degraded, a view that Davis proclaimed in his speeches.

This is a newspaper report of a speech Davis made to the Democratic convention in Portland, Maine in 1858 in which he contrasts white racial purity in America to Latin America. Davis is also using his racial theories to justify the conquest of Latin America.

He said that everything around him spoke eloquently of the wisdom of the men who founded these colonies – their descendants, who sat before him, contrasted strongly, as did their history and present power, stand out in bold relief, when compared with those of the inhabitants of Central and Southern America. Chief among the reasons for this, he believed to be the self-reliant hardihood of their forefathers who, when but a handful, found themselves confronted by hordes of savages, yet proudly maintained the integrity of their race and asserted its supremacy over the descendants of Shem, in whose tents they had come to dwell. Their descendants of that pure and heroic blood have advanced to the high standard of civilization attainable by that type of mankind. Stability and progress, wealth and comfort, art and science, have followed their footsteps.

Among our neighbors of Central and Southern America, we see the Caucasian mingled with the Indian and the African. They have the forms of free government, because they have copied them. To its benefits they have not attained, because that standard of civilization is above their race. Revolution succeeds Revolution, and the country mourns that some petty chief may triumph, and through a sixty days' government ape the rules of the earth. Even now the nearest and strongest of these American Republics, which were fashioned after the model of our own, seems to be tottering to a fall, and the world is inquiring as

to who will take possession; or, as a protector, raise and lead a people who have shown themselves incompetent to govern themselves.²⁷⁰

What type of person Jefferson Davis is also illuminated by his two volume history, "The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," published in 1881 long after the close of the Civil War showing that he had no regrets over his pro-slavery and racist views.

Abolitionists are still condemned as zealots.

A few zealots in the North afterwards created much agitation by demands for the abolition of slavery within the states by federal intervention, and by their activity and perseverance finally became a recognized party which, holding the balance of power between the two contending organizations in that section, gradually obtained the control of one, and to no small degree corrupted the other.

He condemns critics of the infamous Dred Scott decision.

From Vol. 2 in which he is angered at the enlistment of African Americans into the U.S. Army.

Let the reader pause for a moment and look calmly at the facts presented in this statement. The forefathers of these negro soldiers were gathered from the torrid plains and malarial swamps of inhospitable Africa. Generally they were born the slaves of barbarian masters, untaught in all the useful arts and occupations, reared in heathen darkness, they were transferred to shores enlightened by the rays of Christianity. There, put to servitude, they were trained in the gentle arts of peace and order and civilization; they increased from a few unprofitable savages to millions of efficient Christian laborers. Their servile instincts rendered them contented with their lot, and their patient toil blessed the land of their abode with unmeasured riches.

In the book he reprints part of his condemnation of the Emancipation Proclamation that he made in 1863. In 1881 he still condemns the Proclamation.

Davis praises a judge who closes his court rather than allow African American jurors.²⁷¹

²⁷⁰ "Speech of Jefferson Davis at the Portland Convention," from "Jefferson Davis Constitutionalist: His Letters, Papers, and Speeches," collected and edited by Dunbar Rowland, Volume III, pages 284-288, printed for the Mississippi Department of Archives and History, Jackson, Mississippi, 1923.

²⁷¹ Davis, Jefferson, "The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," D. Appleton and Company, New York, 1881. De Capo Press edition, 1990. Vol. 1: Calling abolitionists zealots, pp. 3, condemnation of critics of the Dred Scott decision, pp. 70. Vol. 2: For condemnation of African American troops, pp. 161; condemnation of Emancipation Proclamation, pp. 600; rejection of African American jurors pp. 628.

Numerous other examples could be mentioned which express the views of Davis, but these given should be ample to show who he was.

These five individuals selected to be honored by the Confederate monument had views about race and slavery which were well known and by having them honored their views were endorsed and these individuals memorialized in the monument would be an endorsement of a white supremacist viewpoint and a political theory of states' rights to support the continuation of white supremacy in Dallas, in Texas, and in America.

APPENDIX TWO – The white supremacist biographies of many of the speakers.

Since W.L. Cabell and Reagan's biographies are part of the history of lynching and the ideology of the statue, they are not included here but are in the essay.

In researching the historical records of these individuals regarding race, there is the challenge that there aren't many historical records regarding minor figures of history. So this section has to content itself with what it could find. However, surprisingly many of them have left of their white supremacist attitudes in the historical record.

Date	DMN article	Speaker
4/25/1896	DMN18960626 For the Heroic Dead	Col. W. L. Crawford of Dallas.
		Hon. W.C. Kimbrough
		Hon. H.W. Lightfoot
4/28/1897	DMN18970429 Men Who Wore Gray	John H. Reagan speech.
		Letter from ex-Gov. Ross
		Gen. J.M. Pearson, Mayor of McKinney. Extract.
		Col. W.L. Crawford.
		Col. W.W. Laing of Oak Cliff article mentioned that he gave a speech, but text not given.
		Col. T.J. Beall of El Paso article mention that he gave a speech, but text not given.
4/29/1897	DMN 18970430 Feast of Oratory	Mayor J.M Pearson of McKinney
		W.L. Cabell sent text.
		Col. W.L. Crawford of Dallas.
		Gov. Culberson
		Col. Charles L. Martin on behalf of Sterling Price camp UCV
		John H. Reagan.
		Judge George N. Aldredge
		Judge Henry W. Lightfoot

	Judge Norman G. Kittrell
	Judge A.T. Watts
	Letters to Lee by Prof. Philip Stanhope Worsley of Oxford
	Memorial address by R.M. Swearingen M.D. of Dec. 11, 1889

Col. W.L. (William Lyne) Crawford was active in the Democratic Party in ending Reconstruction in Texas and thereby ending civil rights protections for African Americans in Texas.

He was a member of the Committee of Platform and Resolutions at the Democratic State Convention, Austin, Sept. 3-5, 1873. The resolutions of which celebrate the ending of Reconstruction measures to protect African Americans and the national governments efforts to protect the Reconstruction government in Louisiana.

He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1875 which eliminated the Reconstruction Constitution of 1869 which had proclaimed the equality of all men. He was a national delegate at the 1876 Democratic State Convention. He was a member of the Committee of Platform and Resolutions for the 1886 Democratic State Convention which called for segregated schools.²⁷²

The Democratic Party was the party of white supremacy in the United States well into the 20th century.

In 1890 Memorial address, Crawford explains that reconciliation over the Civil War is about a specific type of white supremacy. After pointing out that there is reconciliation Crawford explains:

We are no longer Federals and Confederates. We are the mightiest race of people into whose hands the God of the inevitable ever gave control of the destinies of nations or men, wrung from the Anglo-Saxon, Norman and Celts – a people born to rule wherever they may be domiciled.

After further praising reconciliation, Crawford says:

I rejoice that this is an indissoluble union of indestructible States, and I trust in God that it may always be perpetual to show to what lofty heights, what broad eminence, the Anglo-Saxon race under free institutions may attain.

²⁷² For his participation in the Constitutional Convention of 1875, the entry in Texas State Historical Association, online at <https://tshaonline.org/handbook/online/articles/fcr14>. For his participation in the Democratic Conventions, see "Platforms of Political Parties in Texas" edited by Ernest William Walker, *Bulletin of the University of Texas*, Sept. 20, 1916, No. 53, pages 158, 173, 238 for Crawford role at these conventions. The platforms are: Democratic State Convention, 1873, pages 159-162; Democratic State Convention, 1886, pages 238-240.

In the conclusion of the speech Crawford states, "We are the superior of the earth." He was an advocate of Anglo-Saxonism in which whites from Great Britain were superior to whites from elsewhere.²⁷³

Lawrence Sullivan Ross as governor of Texas in the Jaybird – Woodpecker war in 1888-1889 helped the white supremacist faction, Jaybird Democrats bring to an end by violence the interracial alliance of the Woodpecker faction which had been running the county by winning elections for 20 years. After losing the election of 1888 the Jaybirds engaged in a campaign of violence. Governor Ross sent in the Houston Light Guards and Ross himself then "mediated" the conflict which resulted in all the Woodpecker officials resigning or removed from office and the Jaybirds placed in the offices. The Jaybirds then instituted a white supremacist regime until the civil rights era in the 20th century.²⁷⁴

Ross is known for attending the 1876 Constitutional Convention and helping write it the Texas constitution which was the final end of Reconstruction.

During the Civil War Ross would have been a notorious war criminal like W.L. Cabell, but for the fact he didn't have the military ability to commit the crime.

From "Confederate Rage, Yankee Wrath: No Quarter in the Civil War," by George S. Burkhardt:

As before a storm, an eerie quiet settled upon Yazoo City and its defenders. It did not last long. On the morning of March 5, Ross's Texans and a small brigade of mostly Tennessee cavalry men attacked. After initial successes, Ross failed in repeated efforts to take the main redoubt. Although surrounded, 3rd Colored Cavalry and some 11 Illinois soldiers stubbornly repelled all attacks. Stymied by their determined resistance, Ross delivered an ultimatum demanding immediate and unconditional surrender. Quite frankly, he declared he would not recognize the black Federals as soldiers or promise them or their officers protection as such. He warned that unless they surrendered immediately, he would be unable to restrain his men when they stormed the redoubt. All defenders, black or white, would be put to the sword. One of his staff officers conveyed the warning to Major George C. McKee, commanding the redoubt. McKee said, "That means General Ross will murder the prisoners if he is successful." Ross's emissary, a

²⁷³ "Memorial and Biographical History Dallas County, Texas," Lewis Publishing Co., Chicago, 1892, pp. 234-238. You can download this book from www.archive.org.

²⁷⁴ You can download "The Jaybird-Woodpecker War: Reconstruction and redemption in Fort Bend County, Texas, 1869-1889," maters thesis by Leslie Anne Lovett, Rice University, these advisor John B. Boles, <https://scholarship.rice.edu/handle/1911/13861>. You can also read a Texas State History Association (TSHA) entry for the Jaybird-Woodpecker War by Pauline Yelderman to see how white washing the TSHA historical entries are.

young lieutenant, hesitated and then replied, "No, not exactly that; but you know how it will be."

McKee knew exactly. Angered, he refused to receive the oral communication and said he wanted such an ultimatum in writing. Given Ross's threat, McKee countered with his own. He declared that he would kill every man who fell into his hands should Ross be repulsed. Ross then submitted a written demand for surrender and stipulated that if they yielded, they would receive correct treatment. If he had to assault, Ross wrote, "I will try and have them protected if they surrender during the charge; but you may expect much bloodshed." Lieutenant Barron, 3rd Texas, said that "how they would have fared at the hands of an incensed brigade of Texas troops ... was not pleasant to contemplate." The 3rd Colored Cavalry officers and men were acutely aware of those unpleasant consequences. Main knew that "no quarter could be expected." So he and fellow officers told McKee to exclude them from any surrender because they knew what would happen and they preferred to die fighting. However, McKee refused to surrender, and there was no assault and no test of Ross's resolve "to kill and spare not." Confederates decided an all-out attack was not worth the cost. Better, they thought simply to declare victory and leave. So they did just that.²⁷⁵

George N. Aldredge's, "Plantation Life in the Old South," a paper read before the Daughters of the Confederacy in Dallas, Oct. 27, 1898 describes the slave plantations in idyllic terms. The paper has layers of racism. Some quotes:

The truth is the negro always was, is now and always will be a grown-up child. Like a child he has little conception of the value of money, and this makes him a permanent servant, and about the best one in the world. ... He spends it foolishly on any gewgaw that strikes his fancy.

Another extract:

While New England was tearing her hair and wailing over the woes of the negro he was speeding the plow in the tune of "Old Zipp Coon," etc., wholly unaware that anything was hurting him. Compared with his condition in Africa, slavery was a paradise.²⁷⁶

Judge Norman G. Kittrell, 61st Judicial District of Texas, of Houston on Yellowhammer Day spoke at the Texas state fair to the Texas-Alabama Society. Some excerpts:

²⁷⁵ Burkhardt, George S., "Confederate Rage, Yankee Wrath: No Quarter in the Civil War," Southern Illinois University Press, 2007, pp. 95-97.

²⁷⁶ Aldredge, George N., "Plantation Life in the Old South," *Dallas Morning News*, 10/30/1898, page 15. If people in Dallas would read this they would realize what an abomination Arlington Hall is.

New England and the “negro” did not harmonize. The thermometer at zero and a darkey in comfort were irreconcilable and impossible conditions. He instinctively yearned for a land where the summer’s sun crimsoned the persimmon, where the toothsome ‘possum ripened in the frosty autumn and where the succulent potato and luscious watermelon grew in tropical profusion. So the negro came into his own land, and unto a people who received him as a savage, eating snakes and worshipping toads and in less than a century made of an idolator the most demonstrative and fanatical Christian, and if facts make proof, fitted the untutored savage for legislators, congressmen, senators and bishops.

Note the snide comment, “if facts make proof,” implying that African Americans might have been in all these offices, but not necessarily good or competent in these positions. Kittrell also feels that Reconstruction was a great oppression stating:

Misinterpreting and misapplying the maxim that “all men are created free and equal,” those vested with national power placed the control of the state government of Alabama in the hands of ignorant and corrupt. The master was supplanted in the halls of legislation by his former slave. Ignorance usurped the place of intelligence. Vice and venality sate in high place, where honor and integrity had before been enthroned.

Kittrell states that the lesson of Reconstruction and its overthrow is:

... under all circumstances and conditions, whether in the minority or majority, henceforth the blue-veined and white-skinned man will rule.²⁷⁷

Kittrell was the author of a novel titled, “Ned: Nigger an’ Gent’man: A Story of War and Reconstruction Days,” Neale Publishing Co., 1907. Ned is a former faithful slave who takes pride in his former owners and speaks in dialect “Dat is his plantashun down dat valley ter de right,” and “dat is his house jes’ on de p’int ob de hill ter de wes’.” White people in the novel speak standard American English without any accent. Ned explains what his name is as follows:

“Well, boss, dey tells me my sho’-‘nuff name is Edward Marshall; but Marster calls me Ned, an’ I’m Marster’s nigger.” I b’en waitin’ on him fer fifty year, an’ I gwine keep on long as I lib or he lib. He’s de bes’ man an’ de smartes’ man in de worl’.”

And so the novel goes for 257 pages.²⁷⁸ I leave it to the reader to conclude who are the “Neds” of today. The Sanger Brothers offered this book for sale in advertisements in the

²⁷⁷ Kittrell, Norman G., “Yellowhammer Day,” *Dallas Morning News*, 10/10/1899, page 4.

²⁷⁸ Kittrell, Norman G., “Ned: Nigger an’ Gent’man: A Story of War and Reconstruction Days,” Neale Publishing Co., New York, 1907, quotes from pages 12, 13. You can download a PDF of this novel from www.archive.org.

Dallas Morning News in 1907 and 1908.²⁷⁹ It was also adapted into a play, "The Southerner," by Herbert Hall Winslow and performed at the Dallas Opera House in 1908 and had toured many major cities in Texas.²⁸⁰

Texas Governor Charles Allen Culberson was a campaigner against racial equality. In a *Dallas Morning News* article of 1904, titled, "Campaign in Maryland: Senator Culberson Devotes Most of His Address to Race Question and is Lustily Cheered." Culberson then U.S. Senator of Texas, as the article states, "dwelt largely upon the race issue so created by President Roosevelt, and whenever he scored the Chief Executive the audience was most demonstrative."²⁸¹

In a Dallas campaign speech in 1904 U.S. Senator Culberson speaking against the Republicans warns his audience:

But the menace to the South involved in this campaign is still more serious. It involves not only its industrial progress and Constitutional rights, but its very civilization. The Republican party was born of sectionalism and throughout most of its career sectional prejudice has been its inspiration and support. When the Civil War was over, when every new-made grave in the South was a shrine at which Poverty and Desolation sat down in tears, the Republican party was not content. It enfranchised the blacks and disenfranchised the whites. It put above the intelligence and integrity of the whites, the ignorance of the negro and the corruption of the Carpetbagger.

Continuing in his speech Culberson seethes with anger the attempts by the Republican Party to support the civil rights of African Americans.²⁸²

Culberson in 1906 worked to inflame racial tensions over the stationing of African American troops in Brownsville, Texas²⁸³ contributing to one of the more notorious racial injustices in American history.²⁸⁴ In 1907 in an inflammatory racist screed, on the floor of the U.S. Senate, reported in the *Dallas Morning News*, he denounced the African American soldiers in Brownsville and racial equality in general calling "the negro question" the "most dangerous problem that has confronted the American

²⁷⁹ Advertisement, no author, "Sanger Bros. Good Nights for Reading," *Dallas Morning News*, 9/16/1907, page 1.

²⁸⁰ Advertisement, no author, "Amusements Dallas Opera House," *Dallas Morning News*, 11/10/1908, page 5.

²⁸¹ No author, "Campaign in Maryland," *Dallas Morning News*, 10/5/1904, page 2.

²⁸² Culberson, Charles Allen, speech in article, "Speaks at Home," *Dallas Morning News*, 11/8/1904, page XX.

²⁸³ Some online articles on the Brownville affairs are,

<https://dmna.ny.gov/historic/articles/blacksMilitary/BlacksMilitaryBrownville.htm> at the website of the New York State Military Museum. Another good article is

<https://scholarworks.umb.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1022&context=trotter> review. The standard work on the topic is, "The Brownsville Raid," by John D. Weaver, published in 1970, Reveille Books, Texas A&M University Press.

²⁸⁴ "Telegram to Culberson," *Dallas Morning News*, 8/19/1906, page 1. "Will Withdraw Negroes," *Dallas Morning News*, 8/21/1906. For the history of the Brownsville Incident I recommend

people.” Culberson says that “the conditions of the black race, with its ages of slavery, its ignorance, its poverty and its helplessness, excited and now profoundly excites the sympathy of the great body of white people in the South.”

However this sympathy doesn't mean civil rights. Culberson explains that this “problem” involves, “labor, education, suffrage, social order, civil liberty, self-government, and the integrity of the white race.”

Culberson sees only these possibilities in dealing with African Americans:

Southerners think deeply and profoundly of this race problem, and its ultimate solution. Closing their eyes and looking down the ages different vistas arise. Sometimes the black race is deported. Sometimes the races continue to live here together as now, in comparative peace, one subordinate to the other. Sometimes they turn with unspeakable aversion to a blended and corrupted and inferior race. Sometimes there is war between the races – which may God avert – bloody, red-handed, vengeful war, which seeks and can only end in the survival of the fittest.

In the conclusion of the article's quotation of Culberson is the following:

They are opposed to political domination by the ignorant and vicious. They are opposed to social equality with the negro and they are opposed to every tendency which will ultimately be destructive of the purity and integrity of the white race.

Above all this, Mr. President, however, vital they may be, there is in the testimony in this case, and which to a degree underlies this trouble, which impels me to declare, even in this great chamber, that they purpose to protect even with their lives what in their womankind is the immediate jewel of their soul.²⁸⁵

In 1922 Culberson is denouncing the Klan since the Texas establishment is now in an all-out fight against the Klan fearing it. However, his political opponent pro-Klan R.L. Henry mocks Culberson's anti-Klan stance as hypocritical. The article reports.

Mr. Henry recalled to the memory of his hearers the fact that it was no less a personage than Senator Culberson, who, in 1882, while a practicing lawyer at Jefferson, Texas, won a famous victory for the forces of the old klan when he carried the case of *Le Grand vs. the United States* from the District Court at New Orleans on a writ of error, and there secured for the klan forces a reversal of the

²⁸⁵ Speech quoted in “Answers Foraker,” *Dallas Morning News*, 1/4/1907, page 1, 2.

judgement of the lower court through an opinion of Justice Woods of the United States Supreme Court.²⁸⁶

In fact Culberson was proud of this case.²⁸⁷

Col. Charles L. Martin was a member of the Ku Klux Klan during Reconstruction. Martin revealed this in a 1921 article, "K.K.K. Did Not Commit Offenses: No Bodily Harm Done," in the *Dallas Morning News* denouncing the Ku Klux Klan of the 1920s in Dallas. The article claimed that the Reconstruction Klan was sympathetic towards "negroes" and "consequently no violence was ever used towards the negroes." This imaginary and wholly ahistorical Ku Klux Klan is contrasted to the contemporary Klan to condemn it as being lawless.²⁸⁸

Arthur Thomas Watts was famous for fighting Reconstruction and overturning it. In the Texas Bar Association Proceedings there is an Appendix in memoriam to Watts.

It is due to the work of Judge Watts in the legislature that the people were finally rid of the farce militia and state police composed of negroes and carpetbaggers. The lower house was Democratic, while the Senate was about equally divided, the latter sometimes voting Republican and sometimes Democratic. The house had passed a bill to repeal both laws but it could not be engineered through the senate.²⁸⁹

The speeches about how glorious the Confederate soldiers were given by white supremacists who worked through different means from literature to violence to either create or continue a white supremacist Texas. The Confederate monuments were one effort among a variety of efforts to maintain and consolidate white supremacy in Texas.

APPENDIX THREE – Biographical Notes about the White Supremacy of Reagan.

This was originally an essay in rebuttal to an article by a local paper, but it contains the essential points about the white supremacist career of Reagan.

²⁸⁶ Dealey, Ted, "R.L. Henry Assails Culberson on Klan," *Dallas Morning News*, 7/15/1922, page 12.

²⁸⁷ Hughes, Pollyanna, B., Harrison, Elizabeth B., "Charles A. Culberson: Not a Shadow of Hogg," *East Texas Historical Journal*, Vol. 11 Issue 2, Article 9, pp. 41-48, reference to LeGrand, pp. 42.

<https://scholarworks.sfasu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1281&context=ethj>

²⁸⁸ Martin, Charles L., "K.K.K. Did Not Commit Offenses," *Dallas Morning News*, 7/3/1921, page 9, Sunday edition. The article was announced in a *Dallas Morning News* ad on 7/2/1921, page 10 as an "appealing feature."

²⁸⁹ Wilson, Ben F., editor, "Texas Bar Association Proceedings of the Forty-first Annual Session held at Ft. Worth, Texas, July 4th, 5th and 6th, 1922," publ. Texas Bar Association, 1922, Appendix A, Memorials, page 207-210. Also, see the entry for A.T. Watts, pp. 361-362, in "The Bench and Bar of Texas," by James D. Lynch, Nixon-Jones, Printing Co., St. Louis, 1885. This can be downloaded from www.archive.org.

In the January 2018 Oak Cliff edition of the *Advocate*, is an article titled, "The other idolized Reagan: One low-income school in Oak Cliff bears the name of a Confederate leader," by *Advocate* editor Rachel Stone.

Of particular interest in the article is the following somewhat self-contradicting statement:

While imprisoned, he wrote a letter to his fellow Texans imploring them to recognize the authority of the United States, to renounce secession and slavery, and to extend the "elective franchise" to former slaves. If not, he warned, the U.S. would take military action against Texas, and black people would be given the vote.²⁹⁰

So John H. Reagan urged giving black people the vote to avoid giving black people the vote? J.H. Reagan in his memoirs was very clear about his warning stating that he urged:

... that we should give ... give to the negroes the protection of the laws, and at least a qualified right to vote in elections. That by acceding to this we might avoid the establishment of military government and universal negro suffrage.

Reagan admonishes:

They refused to act, and thus involved the State in all the horrors of military government, universal negro suffrage, and the cruel measures of Reconstruction.²⁹¹

Reagan repeatedly refers to African Americans voting as an oppression of the former Confederate states, as part of Reconstruction which is a "horror," "horrid and unspeakable," and a "cruel policy."²⁹²

Reagan was Vice-President and member of the Committee on Resolutions of the Conservative State Convention of 1868 in Houston. These are the first three resolutions.

²⁹⁰ Stone, Rachel, "The other idolized Reagan: One low-income school in Oak Cliff bears the name of a Confederate leader," *Advocate Oak Cliff*, Vol. 11 No. 1, Jan. 2018, pp. 30, illustration, photo portrait of John H. Reagan, pp. 31.

²⁹¹ Reagan, John H. Reagan, "Memoirs: With Special Reference to Secession and the Civil War," The Neale Publishing Co., New York, 1906, Pp. 240-41.

²⁹² Reagan, John H. Reagan, "Memoirs: With Special Reference to Secession and the Civil War," The Neale Publishing Co., New York, 1906, examples, "horror," pp. 102, "cruel" pp. 237, "horrid" pp. 238.

Resolved, 1. That the question of African supremacy arises far above all questions of party, and is vital to the future interests of this State; as subordinate to that, we cheerfully concur with all parties who are opposed to the Africanization of the State.

2. That believing it to be the determination of the Radical party to create a convention, and yet desiring to express our opposition to the Africanization of Texas, we recommend the people of the State entitled to register, to do so and to vote against a convention, and, to guard against the contingency of its being successfully carried, to vote at the same time for the election of delegates to the convention on the basis of creating a constitution without negro suffrage, and asking Congress to accept the same, believing that we should only be recognized as in the Union on a footing of equality with the other States, and that the Northern people will demand no more.

3. That the resolutions of the mass meeting of loyal Union citizens, assembled in this city on the 20th inst, submitted to us for consideration, meet the approval of this convention in their general spirit and desire to defeat the Africanization of this State, and to secure its restoration to civil government in the Union.²⁹³

In his 1906 biography he explains why he supported secession:

But when we were told that we must submit to the violation of the Constitution, the overthrow of the rights of the States and the destruction of three thousand million dollars worth of property in slaves,—property recognized by the Constitution, Federal and State laws, and by the decisions of the Supreme Court of the United States,—I could no longer agree to such a Union, and determined to join in any measure which might defeat it.²⁹⁴

He talks of “unreasoning fanaticism by the enemies of slavery,” who “would not discuss the question of race or its fitness and capacity for civilization and self-government.”²⁹⁵

In 1902 in a *Dallas Morning News* article Reagan gives a biblical defense of slavery in response to the “anti-slavery men had much to say about the sin and wickedness of slavery,” stating:

²⁹³ Winkler, Ernest William, editor, “Platforms of Political Parties in Texas,” in *Bulletin of the University of Texas*, 1916, No. 53, Sept. 20, 1916, pp. 104-107, quote pp. 106.

²⁹⁴ Reagan, John H. Reagan, “Memoirs: With Special Reference to Secession and the Civil War,” The Neale Publishing Co., New York, 1906, pp. 81-82, quote on pp. 82.

²⁹⁵ Reagan, John H. Reagan, “Memoirs: With Special Reference to Secession and the Civil War,” The Neale Publishing Co., New York, 1906,

I may call attention to the fact of the existence of slaves and the slave trade among the ancient Israelites; a people under the immediate guidance of God; and to the repeated injunctions of the Christ our Savior to servants to obey their masters.²⁹⁶

Reagan, in a speech given at the dedication of the Confederate War Memorial in Dallas in 1897, regards as more glorious than the battles of the Civil War the restoration of white supremacy after the Civil War.²⁹⁷

“... The strife of the war is over, peace has been restored. It is true that in this restoration we had to pass through a period of reconstruction worse and more humiliating than war ---“

“But we have the fruits of peace, and it is one of the grandest things connected with the memory of that struggle and of what followed. Our country’s resources were exhausted, our property sacrificed, the bravest and best of our men slain upon the battle fields, denied the privileges of self-government, subjected to military power, **the attempt made to subject us to the control of a servile race.** With all of this, the highest compliment that could be paid our people seems to me, better than all the victories of battle, was that under such circumstances we were able to preserve the organization of society, to re-establish organized government, to restore the industries of the country and to establish constitutional laws which protect and vindicate the rights of a free people.” [Bold face added.]

The restoration of white supremacy, the overthrow of Reconstruction, the maraudings and terror of the Ku Klux Klan, Red Shirts, White League and the Knights of the White Camelia and just general violent white terrorism is according to John H. Reagan is “the highest compliment” that is “better than all the victories of battle” in the Civil War. These are just examples of Reagan’s racism. The fact that any school anywhere is named after J.H. Reagan is abhorrent. The reason the children at that school are “low-income” is because Reagan’s support of white supremacy and the overthrow of Reconstruction a legacy we grapple even unto this day.

What message does it send to African American school children about their worth?

Reagan’s racism is erased from Stone’s article and his stance on African Americans voting is not made clear, perhaps he could be interpreted as being more progressive on it than other white people at the time. Certainly you have no idea what an appalling racist Reagan was and how unacceptable it is to have a school named after him in reading this article.

²⁹⁶ Reagan, John H., “Words of Regan,” *Dallas Morning News*, April 25, 1902, page 3.

²⁹⁷ “Men Who Wore Gray,” *Dallas Morning News*, April 29, 1897, page 1.

This is what white nationalism is built upon. Everyday acts like this which preserve a white nationalist understanding of history and maintain a built environment of streets, monuments, schools, etc. to maintain a racialized white landscape.

Yes, there are fringe individuals which use racial slurs and explicitly express their racism. However, they are largely, if not entirely, not in positions of influence. The worst impact of these racists is that they provide a rationalization for many that they are not racist because they aren't like these extreme racists.

Far more important are articles like Stone's. I don't want to entirely fault Stone on this article, perhaps being a non-historian she relied on the unfortunate Texas State Historical Association Handbook and the usual Civil War books and what is taught in the high schools.